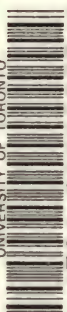


UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO



3 1761 0006687 8



Presented to  
The Library  
of the  
University of Toronto  
by

The Estate of the late  
G. Percival Best, Esq.

HANDBOUND  
AT THE



UNIVERSITY OF  
TORONTO PRESS











(77)

7

8422

THE TUDOR  
TRANSLATIONS

EDITED BY  
W. E. HENLEY

I



## BIBLIOGRAPHICAL NOTE

*The three first editions of Florio's translation of the 'Essais' were published in 1603, 1613, and 1632 respectively. The text of this reprint, with the prefatory matter, is from the edition of 1632; the title which follows from that of 1613.*



THE ESSAYS OF  
**MONTAIGNE**

DONE INTO ENGLISH BY  
**JOHN FLORIO**

ANNO 1603

With an Introduction by  
**GEORGE SAINTSBURY**

---

**THE FIRST BOOK**



**L O N D O N**

Published by **DAVID NUTT**  
**IN THE STRAND**

**1892**

PQ  
1642  
E5F6  
1892  
t.1

606311  
21.4.55



TO  
ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON  
THIS NEW FASHIONING OF AN  
OLD AND FAMOUS BOOK IS  
DEDICATED  
BY ITS CONTRIVERS



## INTRODUCTION



IF the question were asked what translated books have exercised most influence on the English mind (the authorised version of the Bible and other religious books being ruled out of the competition), I do not think that any third could enter, with any chance of success, for the first prize against NORTH's *Plutarch* and FLORIO's *Montaigne*. These two books represented influences parallel, and even to a certain extent identical; for we know from Montaigne himself how great was the action upon him of Plutarch in substance and of AMYOT's *Plutarch* (which NORTH's directly represents) in style. They were both favourite reading with the English people for something like a century in their original forms, and remained popular in revised and slightly altered versions for much longer. Both—the one indisputably, the other to an extent not much affected by the dispute whether a particular copy of Florio was or was not Shakespeare's—influenced the author who, more than any other, has himself influenced Englishmen. The famous passage of *The Tempest* in which Gonzalo sketches his 'plantations of  
Shakespeare

North and  
Florio

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

be supported. Lastly, both, though in different ways, owed not a little of the influence they possessed to a very curious coincidence of what may be called their temperament (for a book has a temperament as well as a man) with the temperament of the English people at the particular time. I have nothing to do here with the Plutarchian part of this thesis; and it is FLORIO'S *Montaigne*, not Montaigne by himself, with whom or which I have to deal. But the sympathy between the book and its readers, and the quality in the one which made it react so powerfully on the other, are matters very germane indeed to the subject, and not to be neglected in any fit discussion of it.

Montaigne an  
Englishman

Almost everybody knows that Montaigne was long held, and indeed no doubt held himself, to have been of English extraction. The notion has been vigorously impugned by recent patriotic scholarship in France, and is now generally given up; though I confess that, having myself examined the evidence very carefully, I do not think it so conclusive as it appears to others. It is, however, a matter of little moment: the point of real importance being that, whether Montaigne had English blood in him or not, he had distinct and, for a Frenchman, unusual affinities to the English character, and especially to English character in a phase which it was just entering in his time, and was to pass through for something like a century afterwards. As there is generally a glimmering of some mistaken truth at the back of the most ludicrous and glaring falsehood, this resemblance probably lies somewhere at the bottom of that Montaigne-Bacon craze, which, though even more demonstrably preposterous than the Shaconian mania, has been held by some. And it is to be noted, for the better correction of

## INTRODUCTION

national pride, that the points of contact between Montaigne and BACON personally, and between the spirit of Montaigne and that of Englishmen generally, in the very late sixteenth and almost the entire seventeenth century, are by no means exclusively or mainly points to be admired. Some of them are very nearly, if not entirely, the same as the points which MACAULAY has brought out, with much of his usual exaggeration, but with all his usual vigour, in his portrait of seventeenth-century, and especially post-Restoration, statesmen in England. They may be also found, in a different order of thought and observation, by comparing the work, at the completion of the period, of three men so different in origin, education, and station as PEPYS, ROGER NORTH, and DEFOE, and noting the veins of similarity which run through them. When, not to multiply illustrations, the excellent Roger expatiates on his brother's good stars which forced him to London during his wife's last illness because, 'when she must expire, and probably in his arms, he might have received great damage in his health,' he writes in exactly the same spirit with reference to another as that which made Montaigne, in a famous letter, point out to the jurats of Bordeaux that for him, their mayor, to go to them in their trouble with the plague would do them no good and expose his worshipful self to danger. A hundred more or less similar instances of meanness, selfishness, candid cynicism, materialist resignation to the comfortable which meet and startle us side by side with the almost fantastic chivalry and idealism otherwise distinguishing the seventeenth century, receive parallel comment and illustration in Montaigne and in Englishmen of the age succeeding his. And the causes were no doubt the same in both cases,

The worst of  
Montaigne

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

though they affected England later than France, and therefore showed their effects later. They were the revulsion and reaction from the early Renaissance enthusiasm for learning, from the vast impulse of discovery which followed COLUMBUS like a secular wave, the bitter satire of the religious wars, the sense of change affecting civil politics, the feeling of personal insecurity, the far-reaching shadow of philosophic doubt. Of the mood or temperament likely to be produced by such causes, Montaigne is almost the Bible, though he is a Bible containing better and nobler things no doubt, and by virtue of his admirable literary quality furnishing much antidote to his own bane. But that much of his popularity when he was presented to Englishmen was due to the diversion, not accomplished but begun, of the national character into a somewhat lower channel than that in which it had run for centuries, I have very little doubt; and that it had (in the infinitesimal way in which such things can have) something to do with increasing the change I do not think impossible. It is time, however, to come to the actual consideration of the book itself, not as Montaigne's, or at any rate not as Montaigne's only, but as Florio's, and as presented by him to an audience of Englishmen in the reign of ELIZABETH and on the eve of the accession of JAMES.

John Florio      The author of this notable English book, whose birth by calculating backward from a date on his portrait is set at 1553, was no doubt an Englishman by place of nativity. He was the son of a Protestant minister of Florentine extraction, who had fled to England, was pastor of an Italian congregation in London, at exactly the middle of the sixteenth century, was under the protection of Cranmer and Sir William Cecil, and was domiciled with the



# INTRODUCTION

latter till imputations were made on his morals. He was also, it would seem, a teacher of Italian and an author. His son John is said to have been educated first abroad, the Marian persecution having driven his father from England. Then he went to Oxford, training others before, at the mature age of twenty-eight, he himself matriculated in 1581, at Magdalen College. Before this he had published *First-Fruits* (English and Italian dialogues), 1578, dedicated to LEICESTER, and a translation of RAMUZIO'S *Navigations* in 1580. After Leicester's death SOUTHAMPTON and PEMBROKE became Florio's patrons, and he appears to have been able to live in London and haunt the society of literary men and literary ladies. The *Montaigne* was licensed in 1599, but not issued till four years later. The reign of James brought him promotion : he was made at once Reader to Queen Anne in Italian, and a year later Gentleman Extraordinary and Groom of the Privy Chamber to the King. Latterly he lived at Fulham, and died there some time in the autumn of 1625. His wife was named Rose, and he had a daughter Aurelia. His books, including manuscript works, he left to the Earl of Pembroke, to be placed either at Wilton or in London, but they are not known to be at the former place. During his lifetime, besides the works noticed above, he published a *Giardino di Recreazione*, 1591 (a collection of Italian proverbs); *Second Fruits*, a continuation of the *First Fruits* with the *Garden* annexed; *A World of Words* (an Italian-English dictionary), reprinted by himself in 1611, and again in 1659, as 'augmented by himself in his life-time with many thousand words and 'Thuscan phrases,' and with an English-Italian part, the work of his editor, GIOVANNI TORRIANO. This *World of Words* (1598), indeed,

His  
Promotion

*A World of  
Words*

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

is one of the most delightful of a delightful but too much neglected class of books—the older dictionaries which supply English at its best, and illustrate it at its quaintest. Something, but not much, is known about Florio personally, and as with all persons who had the fortune or misfortune to be in any way connected with Shakespeare, more is guessed. Sir WILLIAM CORNWALLIS informed a world greedy of personal details that he was ‘less beholding ‘to nature for his fortunes than wit; yet lesser for his face ‘than his fortune’; adding that he looked ‘more like a good ‘fellow than a wise man’; but yet was ‘wise beyond both his ‘fortune and education.’ Daniel, the poet, called him his friend and brother. Florio himself describes himself as ‘Resolute John Florio,’ and the Shakespearian commentator, improving on all this, after his kind, must needs add to it that Resolute John was the original of Holofernes in *Love’s Labour’s Lost*.

Florio’s Style      That Florio must have had an abundant vein of that coxcombry which distinguishes most of the lesser and some of the greater men of the Elizabethan time, a very slight examination of his work will show. The ‘Address to the ‘Reader’ of the second edition is nearly as good in its substance as in its signature, ‘Still Resolute John Florio.’ ‘Enough,’ quoth the Still Resolute One, ‘if not too much, ‘hath been said of this translation,’ and he proceeds to observe that, ‘if the printer’ [of course only the printer, and Resolute John being careless of the matter] ‘hath ‘corrected the faults as he was directed, it is much amended: ‘if not, know that through mine attendance on Her Majesty ‘I [Resolute John] could not intend [superintend] it.’ No sycophancy to readers, gentle or other, here, it will be seen:



## INTRODUCTION

no sinking of Resolute John's important court employments. As for 'the printer,' there may be two opinions. There are of course errata, which are errata merely; but a careful study even of the first few essays will show any reader that, despite the general excellence of the translation, the resolution of John sometimes exceeded his carefulness or his knowledge. In the famous exordium, 'a well-meaning 'book' is certainly not happy for *un livre de bonne foy*. At the end of the first essay, *sang espandable* is very feebly rendered 'remaining blood,' and two essays later, 'to carry 'the keys of the castle upon the deceased of the captain' is marvellous ungainly for *porter les clefs de la place sur le corps du trespasé*. A great number of these little slips are noticeable, and will be noticed in the proper place, and, as it is pretty certain from the general tenour of the translation that they did not come from ignorance, it stands to reason that they can only have come from a certain amount of haste in the original composition, supplemented by the intense devotion of Resolute John to his duties as Gentleman of Her Majesty Anne of Denmark's Chamber.

In all this, however, there is nothing of Holofernes but the pedantry and a certain quickness of temper. Holofernes would most assuredly not have put off his faults upon the printer. He would have argued to the convincing of Sir Nathaniel, the stupefaction and bemusement of Goodman Dull, and the amazed satisfaction of most of the souls feminine in the parish, that all the mistakes were right, that there were no mistakes at all. And to do him justice he would probably have taken the utmost pains to prevent the 'undressed, unpolished, uneducated, untrained, or rather 'unlettered, or ratherest unconfirmed' blundering of the

Florio and  
Love's  
Labour's Lost

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

printer from spoiling the precious things that he had himself delivered upon the mellowing of occasion. On the other hand, though Resolute John certainly had been something like a schoolmaster, there is no evidence that Holofernes ever became anything like a Gentleman of the Queen of Navarre's Chamber—an argument most facete, legitimate, and well suited to the subject. In short, except that both were, as has been said, schoolmasters, and that both were, though in decidedly different kinds, coxcombs, it is difficult to discover the least resemblance between the two. For the last five-and-twenty years of his life it would seem that Florio's ambition was rather in the way of Boyet or Osric than in that of the author of the unlucky entertainment which was so rudely received by its audience. Indeed, if Southampton and Pembroke had not been famous names in the biographies both of Florio and Shakespeare, it may be taken for granted that we should have heard nothing of the matter. Neither of it nor of Florio's personality (which was probably not less nor more coxcombical than assorted with the manners of those scholars of the time whose education was above their breeding) shall any more be heard or said here.

Florio and  
Montaigne

The more carefully comparison of his version is made with his original, the better, I think, will it serve to show that the translation, as a whole, cannot be called unfaithful, despite the liberties and the occasional downright mistakes noted above. But, except from the merely pedagogic-pedantic point of view, such a plea is hardly needed. Save for the purposes of a 'crib,' or of a pure exercise in scholarship, intended to benefit rather the writer than the reader, it is of infinitely less importance that a translation should be done on the *verbum verbo* principle than that it should, as far as is

# INTRODUCTION

His  
Excellences

possible, produce on its reader the effect which the original produces on the reader of that original. And, that it may do this, the certain vital qualities which it must possess consist much more in the spirit and vigour of the phrase, in the gust and character of the version, than in bare faithfulness to the thing translated. In these qualities few translators have surpassed Resolute John when he is at his best. Take, for instance, the short and admirable essay on Fear, the seventeenth of the first book. Here your pedant will boggle at ‘I know not well’ for *ne sçais gueres* in the first line. But would the pedant have thought of anything so good as ‘well’ ‘I wot it is a strange passion’ for *tant y a que?* Would the pedant have given us a sentence like this: ‘At what time the Duke of Bourbon took Rome, an Ancient that kept sentinell in the borough Saint Peter was at the first alarm surprised with such terror that, with his colours in his hand, he suddenly threw himself thorow the hole of a breach out of the citie’? I protest that ‘in the borough Saint Peter’ affects me as ‘*his* noun’ and ‘*his* verb’ did Lamb. And here again: ‘the like happened but not so successfully unto Captaine Julius his ensigne bearer at what time Saint Paul was taken from us by the Earl of Bures.’ And here: ‘at which siege likewise that horror and feare is very memorable which did choake, seize upon, and freeze the heart of a gentleman that having received no hurt at all he fell down starke dead upon the ground before the breach.’ And yet again: ‘The poor, the banished, and seely servants, live often as pleasantly and as carelessly as the other.’ What a relish is there in writing of this sort! What a curious sense of life and art as contradistinguished from vegetation and drudgery!

This savour is mightily assisted by the quaint verse-tags

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

His Tags of translation in which Florio renders (except in a few cases, which seem to shock him) all Montaigne's verse citations, whether from the classics or from modern languages. In the 'Fear' essay just discussed he gives for '*tum pavor sapi-entiam omnem mihi ex animo expectorat*':

'Fear then unbreasts all wit  
That in my mind doth sit,'

a literal following of *expectorat* no less happy in its result than sublime in its audacity. Sometimes, it is true, the quaintness almost reaches the inconceivable oddity of Stanyhurst: and such, perhaps, is the rendering of Petrarch's

*Chi puo dir come gli arde, è in picciol fuoco :*

'He that can say how he doth frie  
In petty-gentle flames doth lie';

while the version into English sapphics of Catullus on the same page is 'thwack-thwack-thirlery bouncing' with a vengeance:

'Tongue-tied as in trance, while a sprightly thin flame  
Floues in all my joynts with a selfe-resounding,  
Both my eares tingle, with a night redoubled  
Both mine eyes are veiled.'

But he is usually happier than this, especially when he gives himself plenty of licence, and calmly renders

*Point ne se faut corroucer aux affaires,  
Il ne leur chaut de toutes noz choleres*

'We ought not angry be at what God dooth,  
For He cares not who beares an angry tooth.'

The attaching quality of this can hardly be over-estimated, especially in an age which, though by no means unlearned,  
xviii

# INTRODUCTION

was still to a very great extent unsophisticated. And he can be very close, too, in his own peculiar way, as for instance here, where even Dryden could not have bettered the thing much, in the Lucretian tag :

*Nam verae voces tum demum pectore ab imo  
Ejiciuntur, et eripitur persona, manet res.*

‘ For then are sent true speeches from the heart ;  
We are ourselves ; we leave to play a part.’

Of his quainter moods a good example is when he turns *omnes eodem cogimur* into

‘ All to one place are driven, of all  
*Shak’t is the Lot-Pot* where-hence shall  
Sooner or later drawne lots fall,  
And to death’s boat for aye enthrall.’

Is it possible to regard with too much affection a man who could write ‘*Shak’t is the lot-pot*,’ even if he borrowed it from somebody else? Sometimes, indeed, Florio is less fortunate :

‘ As we are born we die : the end  
Doth of th’ originall depend,’

cannot be said to be very happy for the

*Nascentes morimur, finisque ab origine pendet*

of Manilius, though the impression, and especially the first impression, of language changes so subtly that Elizabethan ears or eyes may have been led less astray at the first reading than Victorian, supposing that both were ignorant of Latin. About the following there can be no doubt, however. The famous question,

*Cur non ut plenus vitae conviva recedis?*

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

has always been open to the damaging retort, 'But I am  
'not "plenus": I want more.' It becomes more vulnerable  
still in Florio's

'Why like a full-fed guest  
Depart you not to rest?'

because there is the still more fatal *riposte*, 'Yes: but *is* it  
'to rest?'

In the same context there are some other Lucretian  
nuts which John's resolution might have cracked better if it  
had condescended to be sicklied with a little more thought.  
He is, as a rule, most happy at short sentences, something  
in the way of those posies of which the Elizabethans were so  
fond, as here:

*Aditum nocendi perfido praestat fides.*

'Trust in the untrusty may  
To hurt make open way.'

It is, indeed, very probable that the abundance of quota-  
tion in Montaigne, and the sententious fashion in which  
Florio presented these quotations, were among the causes  
which made the book popular with a generation which  
loved such things as well as Dr. Folliott himself.

His  
Compounds

Another charm of Florio's, closely connected with the  
savour and individuality of his phrase, as above noted, and  
indeed to some extent cause of it, is his boldness in com-  
pounding. Like some other Elizabethans, he had undoubt-  
edly studied Du Bartas and the earlier *Pléiade*. Indeed, the  
attempt to emulate classical freedom in this respect was  
common to the Renaissance generally: and perhaps no lan-  
guage offers such temptations to the practice as English,  
which is as naturally well disposed to it as French is ill-



## INTRODUCTION

disposed. 'Lot-pot' itself is almost too humorous an example: but there are plenty of others not exposed to that rebuke, if rebuke it be. 'Plumb-cheeked' for *enjoué* (i. 38) is almost a stroke of genius: and the comparative philologist may go shake his ears if he likes over the evident confusion of *joue* and *jouer*. Florio is so fond of such things that he will gratuitously turn a single into a compound word, so that when Montaigne calls fame a *simple voix* he must needs translate it 'idly-simple.' *Les yeux ouverts* must be 'broad-waking'; *ce lourd grossissement de pourpoints* swells yet further into 'the bumbasting of long peasecod-bellied doubt-lets.' *Si grand peine* appears as 'so great mind-possessing toil.' For this last one can hardly praise him: but it is certain that he understood and hit the taste of his own audience, and thus was a faithful usher to his Lord Michael of Montaigne. But if Florio is thus fond of compounds—(I His Coinages must add one example, that in which *les estroicts baisers de la ieunesse, savoureux gloutons et gluants* becomes 'the close-smacking, sweetness-moving, love-alluring, and greedy-smirking kisses of youth')—and of striking quaintnesses of phrase, he cannot with justice be accused of another piece of preciousness, the selecting or manufacturing of unusual words. In a minute examination of a considerable number of pages, enough to be a fair sample, I find only three such:—*munite* for 'fortify,' 'kicking, winching, and flying' for *ruades et pennades*, and 'bardel' for the French word *bardelle*, a saddle-pad or saddle-cloth. This is no excessive allowance, and I believe it to be not, as a rule, exceeded. 'To petard' 'a gate,' for instance, is merely an example of the right English idiom by which almost any noun can be turned into a verb at pleasure. Florio gives himself, indeed, the licence

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

(which could hardly be refused him by any but a very ferocious purist) of transferring bodily to English those Latin-French words of which Montaigne is so full, in regard to which, as students of the original know, he is responsible for the introduction and naturalisation of more than perhaps any other great French writer, and for which he was much grumbled at by sticklers for authority in his own day. Resolute John boldly writes 'suffragant and subsidiary' for *suffragante et subsidiaire*. For my part, whether he had English examples or not before him, I say, 'What for no?' Provided that a word is properly formed in the language from which it comes, and observes the rules of analogy in transferring itself to the language into which it goes, I have never myself been able to conceive any reason of sound scholarship or good economy which can be alleged against its introduction. Even if it duplicates one already in existence it is sure to be useful: and as a rule it does not duplicate, but supplies a new shade of meaning.

His  
Doubtfuls

Sometimes one is not quite certain whether the translator or the printer is responsible for oddities. 'Ogwardish,' for instance, for *encouardy* looks like a compound of a clerical error and a misprint, and, just below it, 'wretch-stripped and 'robbed,' for *misérable desvalisé*, is still more questionable, for 'wretchstript' in good English could only mean 'stripped 'by a wretch.' It is very likely that Florio meant to cross out 'wretch' and leave only 'soldier.' Perhaps, indeed, he had been practically carrying out the recommendations of the text (which plead for more frequent 'breakfasts, nun-chions, and beavers'), with the result of being 'jolly-quaint. Of his spelling nothing need be said, for the simple reason that here, as elsewhere, there is very little reason to suppose



## INTRODUCTION

that it is in any proper sense his spelling at all. And almost His English as few words will serve for the other beggarly elements of his style—its grammar and arrangement. These usually follow very closely those of the original. He has broken up Montaigne's sentences a good deal; but this, which is little save a matter of punctuation, of itself saves him from the welter of relatives and the corrupt attempts to imitate Latin involutions which frequently disfigure the English prose of his time. Sometimes, but rarely, he allows the thread of construction, which Montaigne himself in his digressions and second thoughts does not always maintain very accurately, to escape him. But for the most part, to use his own charming version, he deserves 'prick and praise' for natural purity and pure elegancy of tongue.' What is especially remarkable is the fact that he has succeeded in combining so much that is idiomatic and racy of the English soil with the ease and polish, occasionally rather destitute of character, natural and almost inevitable in the prose style of men who are familiar with many languages, and who not unfrequently miss the *cachet* of any in obeying the lessons of all.

'Il faict bon,' says Montaigne himself in the longest, the most debated, but certainly the least read of his essays, the *Apologie de Raimond Sebond*, 'traduire les auteurs comme 'celuy-là où il n'y a guères que la matière a representer: mais 'ceux qui ont donné beaucoup à la grace et à l'élégance du 'langage ils sont dangereux à entreprendre nommément pour 'les rapporter à un idiome plus foible.' In the opinion then commonly held, even by true-born Englishmen, of English, Florio might have thought that the last clause of this warning applied to himself: though we certainly should not

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

His  
Achievement

admit it. And if 'grace' and 'elegance' are not exactly the words that would be selected to express the style of Montaigne, its extraordinary variety and vigour—the *diable au corps* which it everywhere exhibits—might have seemed as dangerous to undertake. The foregoing survey may have pointed out, in general and analytically, what the reading of a very few pages of the text will show, no doubt more convincingly, in another way, that the danger, such as it is, has been met and surmounted. For all the occasional inaccuracies, and the slight eccentricities already noted, only the very greatest masters of Elizabethan prose have provided work pleasanter, more stimulating, and less monotonous to the reader. On the other hand, Montaigne certainly comes under the benefit of his own statute in respect of the suitability for translation of writers who are full of matter, whether there is in them something besides matter or not. His own style and manner vary considerably; and perhaps Florio has not been quite so successful in rendering the longer arguments and more weighty discourses of the later books and essays as in giving the lighter jottings of the earlier. A certain weariness of the work often comes on the translator of a long book—a certain half or more than half conscious tendency to hurry and slur. Unless I have myself suffered from some similar affection, I have noticed more pieces of laziness (such as keeping the French word *deffailance* where 'faintness' would perfectly well have done), and of positive leading astray (as where in a not easily quotable passage about Diogenes he transfers *faisant souhait* from the philosopher to the spectators). But in looking to the whole these petty faults vanish: and that whole remains an almost unapproached enlargement of the reading sphere

## INTRODUCTION

of contemporary Englishmen. A great gulf has always re-  
mained fixed between the classics in the original and their  
readers in translations, and, strange as it may seem, a gulf  
lesser but ever widening has been opened between modern  
nations in modern times. Only in a few cases of exceptional  
temperament and education is it possible, despite all our  
travel and all our study of modern languages and litera-  
tures, for an Englishman and a Frenchman, a Frenchman  
and a German, to see eye to eye or think mind to mind.  
Nay, which is more remarkable, the community of language,  
of literature, and even to some extent of customs and insti-  
tutions, has not prevented the appearance of a similar gulf  
between Americans and Englishmen. The same things  
actually present themselves from different angles and are  
seen through a different atmosphere; and positively intelli-  
gent individuals, not merely the average fool, on the two  
sides of the water honestly wonder each how the other can  
possibly hold the opinions and think the thoughts which to  
that other seem the only opinions and thoughts possible to  
a sensible man. In mediæval days there was almost com-  
plete solidarity (to use a word which Resolute John would  
have used without blenching had it come in his way) all over  
Europe in thought, whatever diversity of custom and ver-  
nacular there might be. And the disturbances of the  
Renaissance did not at first affect this: nay, as they were  
common to all nations, they for a moment made it closer  
before causing the final separation.

This, aided by those special coincidences and relationships  
on which I have commented in the earlier pages of this in-  
troduction, and by the intrinsic merits of Florio's version, at  
once domesticated Montaigne with the purely English reader.

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

Montaigne's  
Qualities

What that reader gained by this addition to his household it is not my business to describe at any very great length or in any very great detail here. Let me only remind his living representative, before he begins reading what may possibly be more familiar to him at second than at first hand, that Montaigne's great peculiarity is range over the widest variety of subject combined with the presence of a constant and unvarying attitude of mind. On the first point there is no dispute. Except art—in which, save as regards literature, he seems to have felt an interest rather curiously small for a man of his age and country—there is hardly anything in life that does not enter into the scope and scheme of Montaigne's observation, and form a subject for one or more of those apparent divagations which are really perambulations and quarterings of his subject—life itself. The exact definition of his attitude has been far more keenly—has, indeed, been almost furiously—contested. There would probably have been less dissension if the disputants had learnt, what seems to be one of the hardest of literary lessons, to confine themselves to what their author says, instead of making it a mere sacred text, to be revered and, indeed, praised, but to be practically expounded in accordance with a Gemara and Mishna of things which he does not say, but which they think he would, could, might, or ought to have said. In particular there has been an unauthorised and unhistorical tendency to suppose in him a custom of speaking tongue-in-cheek, after a manner which cannot really be traced higher than Bayle, though from Bayle's time it became almost habitual with a large class of French writers. That pleasant things were unquestionably and indiscriminately good, but to be used with a great deal of questioning

## INTRODUCTION

and discrimination, seems to me to have been, as far as he had one, Montaigne's definite rule of choice in action. That his *que sçais-je ?* expresses an equally deliberate opinion that belief is quite possible, but that it can in no case pass into demonstrated or demonstrable knowledge in things intellectual, I am myself most firmly convinced. I am as certain as I can be about any man's thoughts but my own that his epicureanism, as it is commonly called, did not overpass the limits of the first proposition, and that his pyrrhonism did not pass the limits of the second. Nor do I find the least inclination in myself to quarrel with either, though I think the second too wide. Montaigne's fault, as I take it, was a fault of defect, not of error. He had the French lack, on one and the more common side of the French character, of the romantic, the enthusiastic, the transcendental. It is all very well for him to say fine things about poetry in one place and claim to be 'transpierced and transported' by it: the real man peeps out much more clearly in the remark, when he is talking about women, that poetry is 'un art 'folastre et subtil, desguisé, parlier, tout en plaisir, tout en 'montre, comme elles.' His marvellously abundant fancy scarce ever passes into imagination: there are no brave translunary things in him. But, except for the purpose of His Defects defining, it is always unsatisfactory to me to talk of what a man is not.

What Montaigne is more than half-a-dozen generations have decided without hesitation and without mistake. In his own range and circle—that of the practical man who is at the same time thoroughly imbued with literature, of the moraliser who never merely pays himself or any one else with words, of the intelligent user of life as he finds it,—it may be



## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

doubted whether there has ever been a wiser man than he, and held for certain that there has been no more attractive exponent of this particular kind of wisdom. In one special respect Montaigne must always have had a peculiar attraction for Englishmen. It has been an almost invariable characteristic of our race that we have been either slavish adherents of custom and fashion, or eccentric and rather deliberate contemners of them, or (sometimes) both at once. In contradistinction to this, the determined and yet unostentatious way in which Montaigne displays his intention to *vivre à sa guise*, his reduction of things to unconventional standards without any flying in the face of convention for the mere sake of flapping the wings, must have at once struck us. No one applies the merely practical reason so well as he: no one turns on the dry light so steadily and with so little parade. In our altitudes we may and perhaps should despise him a little: for he is something of a Lord Glenvarloch in the game both of thought and of life, and we are as little disposed to call him a 'great gamester' in either as Sir Mungo was to apply the term in the other case. But it is not very easy to carry on life at altitudes: and yet it has to be carried on. So at the beginning of the stormiest century of our annals Englishmen were presented with this curious reducer of all things to a *que sçais-je?* to a common denominator of the practical reason, to a level where if the great things of optimism are not recognised, and are even decently pooh-poohed, there is not the slightest affectation of believing that this is the worst of all possible worlds. Some of them rejected the lesson with heat, and became Crashaws in literature and Montroses in politics: others took it rather too seriously, and their name, when they

# INTRODUCTION

became eminent, was Temple or Godolphin or (for the influence of Montaigne on the *Spectator* has, I think, been generally too much ignored) Addison. Even here one speaks but figuratively: for all these distinguished persons would no doubt have been themselves, even if there had been no Montaigne in the world. In the vast majority of cases, doubtless what Florio and his follower Cotton did was simply to provide fit pasture for fit persons—to supply, as is the common but not ignoble office of literature, somewhat unorganised and unvocal thought with the ready-made expression of its thinking, far better thought than it could have managed for itself. Like every other writer, Montaigne is after all for moods—moods individual and moods national, moods moral and moods literary. The moods for which he is suited are numerous, and his adaptation to them is remarkable. Those who can will of course always read him in the original: for those who cannot there is certainly no English version, despite its occasional inaccuracies, which can be recommended with half the warmth and sincerity which can be lent to the claims of Florio—Still Resolute after nearly three centuries to achieve his task, and provided by nature and chance with an equipment of parallel language which all Wardour Street, even backed up by the profoundest academic knowledge, cannot furnish now.

The End

GEORGE SAINTSBURY.





*Some copies of the First Book of this Edition of Florio's Montaigne were sent out with an error on the Title-page and on page xxxi. Cancel leaves are sent herewith to replace those pages.*

#### BIBLIOGRAPHICAL NOTE

*The three first editions of Florio's translation of the 'Essais' were published in 1603, 1613, and 1632 respectively. The text of this reprint, with the prefatory matter, is from the edition of 1632; the title which follows from that of 1613.*



# BIBLIOGRAPHICAL NOTE

*The title of the Essays is reprinted  
from the first edition of 1613,  
the prefatory matter and the  
text from the third edition  
of 1632.*

21



# ESSAYES

WRITTEN IN FRENCH BY

MICHAEL,

LORD OF MONTAIGNE

KNIGHT OF THE ORDER OF S. MICHAEL,

GENTLEMAN OF THE FRENCH KINGS CHAMBER:

DONE INTO ENGLISH,

ACCORDING TO THE LAST FRENCH EDITION, BY

IOHN FLORIO

READER OF THE ITALIAN TONGUE

UNTO THE SOVERAIGNE MAIESTIE OF ANNA,

Queene of England, Scotland,

France and Ireland, etc.

AND ONE OF THE GENTLEMEN OF HIR

ROYALL PRIUIE CHAMBER.

---

1613



TO THE MOST ROYAL AND RENOWMED MAIESTIE  
OF THE HIGH-BORNE PRINCESSE  
ANNA OF DENMARKE  
By the Grace of God QUEENE of England,  
Scotland, France, and Ireland, etc.

*Imperiall and Incomparable Majestie,*



SEEING with me, all of me is in your Royall possession, and whatsoever peeces of mine have heretofore, under other Starres passed the publike view, come now of right to be under the predomination of a Power, that both contain's all their perfections, and hath influences of a more sublime nature, I could not but also take in this part (wherof time had worn-out the edition) which the world hath long since had of mine, and lay it at your Sacred feet, as a memoriall of my devoted duty, and to shew that where I am, I must be all I am, and cannot stand dispersed in my observance, being wholly (and therein happy)

Your sacred Maiesties most  
humble and loyall servant,

IOHN FLORIO.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

ALL' AVGVSTA MAESTA DI ANNA

Seren<sup>ma</sup> REGINA d' Inghilterra, di Scotia,  
di Francia, et d' Irlanda, etc.

*Che si può dir di voi, somma REGINA,  
Che non sia detto dell e più lodate  
Di Magnanimità, Virtù, Beltate,  
Incomparabile, Sopra-divina ?  
Anzi, che stile tanto si raffina,  
Che non sia vinto dalla Maestate,  
L' Altezza, la Chiarezza, la Bontate,  
Alla qual' ogni cuor di-cuor s' inchina ?  
La qual di tutti honori 'l specchio mostra,  
La qual' il pregio Soura tutte tiene ;  
ANNA, l' a nello della Gioia nostra.  
La nostra sicurtà, la nostra spene ;  
VIEN DALL' ECCELSE LA GRANDEZZA vostra ;  
Dalla GRANDEZZA vostra 'l nostro bene.*

Il Candido.

## TO THE READER

Enough, if not too much, hath beene said of this Translation. If the faults found even by my selfe in the first impression, be now by the Printer corrected, as he was directed, the worke is much amended : If not, know that through mine attendance on her Majesty, I could not intend it ; and blame not Neptune for thy second shipwracke. Let me conclude with this worthy mans daughter of alliance : *Que t'en semble donc lecteur ?*

Still resolute IOHN FLORIO.



# PREFATORY

To my deare brother and friend M. IOHN FLORIO,  
one of the Gentlemen of her Majesties most

Royall Privie Chamber

*Books, like superfluous humors bred with ease,  
So stuffe the world, as it becomes opprest  
With taking more than it can well digest ;  
And now are turnd to be a great disease.*

*For by this overcharging we confound  
The appetite of skill they had before :  
There be'ng no end of words, nor any bound  
Set to conceit the Ocean without shore.  
As if man laboured with himselfe to be  
As infinite in writing, as intents ;  
And draw his manifold uncertaintie  
In any shape that passion represents :  
That these innumerable images  
And figures of opinion and discourse  
Draw'n out in leaves, may be the witnesses  
Of our defects much rather than our force.  
And this proud frame of our presumption,  
This Babel of our skill, this Towre of wit,  
Seemes only checkt with the confusion  
Of our mistakings that dissolveth it.  
And well may make us of our knowledge doubt,  
Seeing what uncertainties wee build upon,  
To be as weake within booke as without ;  
Or els that truth hath other shapes than one.*

*But yet although wee labour with this store  
And with the presse of writings seeme opprest,  
And have too many bookes, yet want wee more,*

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

*Feeling great dearth and scarcenesse of the best ;  
Which cast in choicer shapes have beene produc'd,  
To give the best proportions to the minde  
Of our confusion, and have introduc'd  
The likeliest images fraillie can finde.  
And wherein most the skill-desiring soule  
Takes her delight, the best of all delight,  
And where her motions evenest come to rowle  
About this doubtfull center of the right.*

*Which to discover this great Potentate,  
This Prince Montaigne (if he be not more)  
Hath more adventur'd of his owne estate  
Than ever man did of himselfe before :  
And hath made such bold sallies out upon  
Custome, the mightie tyrant of the earth,  
In whose Seraglio of subjection  
Wee all seeme bred-up, from our tender birth ;  
As I admire his powres, and out of love,  
Here at his gate doe stand, and glad I stand  
So neere to him whom I doe so much love,  
T' applaud his happy settling in our land :  
And safe transpassage by his studious care  
Who both of him and us doth merit much,  
Having as sumptuously, as he is rare  
Plac'd him in the best lodging of our speech,  
And made him now as free, as if borne here,  
And as well ours as theirs, who may be proud  
That he is theirs, though he be every where  
To have the franchise of his worth allow'd.*

*It being the proportion of a happy Pen,  
Not to b' invassal'd to one Monarchy,  
But dwell with all the better world of men  
Whose spirits all are of one communitie,  
Whom neither Ocean, Desarts, Rockes nor Sands  
Can keepe from th' intertraffique of the minde,*

## PREFATORY

*But that it vents her treasure in all lands,  
And doth a most secure commercement finde.*

*Wrap Excellencie up never so much,  
In Hieroglyphicques, Ciphers, Characters,  
And let her speake never so strange a speech,  
Her Genius yet findes apt discipherers :  
And never was she borne to dye obscure,  
But guided by the Starres of her owne grace,  
Makes her owne fortune, and is ever sure  
In mans best hold, to hold the strongest place.*

*And let the Critick say the worst he can,  
He cannot say but that Montaigne yet  
Yeelds most rich peeces and extracts of man ;  
Though in a troubled frame confus'dly set.  
Which yet h' is blest that he hath ever seene,  
And therefore as a guest in gratefulnesse,  
For the great good the house yeelds him within  
Might spare to tax th' unapt convoyunces.  
But this breath hurts not, for both worke and frame,  
Whilst England English speakes, is of that store  
And that choice stuffe, as that without the same  
The richest librarie can be but poore.  
And they unblest who letters doe professe  
And have him not : whose owne fate beats their want  
With more sound blowes, than Alcibiades  
Did his Pedante that did Homer want.*

By SAM. DANIEL one of the Gentlemen

extraordinarie of her Majesties most

royall privie Chamber.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CONCERNING THE HONOUR OF BOOKES

Since Honour from the Honorer proceeds,  
 How well doe they deserve that memorie  
 And leave in bookes for all posterities  
 The names of worthies, and their vertuous deeds  
 When all their glorie else, like water weeds  
 Without their element, presently dyes,  
 And all their greatnesse quite forgotten lyes :  
 And when, and how they florisht no man heeds  
 How poore remembrances, are statues, Toomes,  
 And other monuments that men erect  
 To Princes, which remaine in closed roomes  
 Where but a few behold them ; in respect  
 Of bookes, that to the universall eye  
 Shew how they liv'd, the other where they lye.

---

### A TABLE OF THE CHAPTERS OF THE FIRST BOOKE

1. By divers meanes men come unto a like end, . . . . .	13
2. Of sadnesse or sorrowe, . . . . .	17
3. Our affections are transported beyond our selves, . . . . .	21
4. How the soule dischargeth her passions upon false objects, when the true faile it, . . . . .	29
5. Whether the Captaine of a place besieged ought to sallie forth to parlie, . . . . .	32
6. That the houre of parlies is dangerous, . . . . .	35
7. That our intention judgeth our actions, . . . . .	37
8. Of idlenesse, . . . . .	39
9. Of lyers, . . . . .	41

# THE TABLE

10. Of readie or slow speech, . . . . .	46
11. Of Prognostications, . . . . .	49
12. Of Constancie, . . . . .	54
13. Of ceremonies in the enterview of Kings, . . . . .	56
14. Men are punished by too-much opiniating themselves in a place without reason, . . . . .	58
15. Of the punishment of cowardise, . . . . .	59
16. A tricke of certaine Ambassadors, . . . . .	61
17. Of feare, . . . . .	65
18. That we should not judge of our happinesse, untill after our death, . . . . .	68
X 19. That to Philosophie, is to learne how to die, . . . . .	71
20. Of the force of Imagination, . . . . .	90
21. The profit of one man is the dammage of another, . . . . .	102
22. Of custome, and how a received law should not easily be changed, . . . . .	103
23. Divers events from one selfe same counsell, . . . . .	122
24. Of Pedantisme, . . . . .	134
X 25. Of the institution and education of Children; to the Ladie Diana of Foix, Countesse of Gurson, . . . . .	148
26. It is follie to referre Truth or Falshood to our sufficiencie, . . . . .	191
27. Of Friendship, . . . . .	196
28. Nine and twentie Sonnets of Steven de la Boetie, to the Lady of Grammont, Countesse of Guissen, . . . . .	211
29. Of Moderation, . . . . .	212
X 30. Of the Caniballes, . . . . .	217
31. That a man ought soberly to meddle with judging of divine lawes, . . . . .	232
32. To avoid voluptuousnesse in regard of life, . . . . .	234
33. That fortune is oftentimes met withall in pursuit of reason, . . . . .	236
34. Of a defect in our policies, . . . . .	240
35. Of the use of Apparell, . . . . .	241
36. Of Cato the younger, . . . . .	245
37. How we weepe and laugh at one selfe-same thing, . . . . .	250
38. Of Solitarinesse, . . . . .	254
39. A consideration upon Cicero, . . . . .	267

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

40. That the taste of goods or evils doth greatly depend on the opinion we have of them, .	273
41. That a man should not communicate his glorie, .	295
42. Of the inequality that is betweene us, .	298
43. Of sumptuarie Lawes, or Lawes for moderating of expences, . . . . .	310
44. Of Sleeping, . . . . .	313
45. Of the battell of Dreux, . . . . .	315
46. Of Names, . . . . .	317
47. Of the uncertaintie of our judgement, . . . . .	323
48. Of Steeds, called in French Destriers, . . . . .	331
49. Of ancient customes, . . . . .	342
50. Of Democritus and Heraclitus, . . . . .	348
51. Of the vanitie of Words, . . . . .	352
52. Of the parcimonie of our Forefathers, . . . . .	356
53. Of a saying of Cæsar, . . . . .	357
54. Of vaine Subtilties, or subtile Devices, . . . . .	359
55. Of Smells and Odors, . . . . .	362
56. Of Praiers and Orisons, . . . . .	365
57. Of Age, . . . . .	376

THE ESSAYES OF MICHAEL  
LORD OF MONTAIGNE  
THE FIRST BOOKE



## THE AUTHOR TO THE READER

READER, loe here a well-meaning Booke. It doth at the first entrance forewarne thee, that in contriving the same, I have proposed unto my selfe no other than a familiar and private end : I have no respect or consideration at all, either to thy service, or to my glory: my forces are not capable of any such desseigne. I have vowed the same to the particular commodity of my kinsfolks and friends: to the end, that losing me (which they are likely to doe ere long) they may therein find some lineaments of my conditions and humours, and by that meanes reserve more whole, and more lively foster the knowledge and acquaintance they have had of me. Had my intention beene to forestal and purchase the worlds opinion and favour, I would surely have adorned my selfe more quaintly, or kept a more grave and solemne march. I desire therein to be delineated in mine owne genuine, simple and ordinarie fashion, without contention, art or study; for it is my selfe I pourtray. My imperfections shall therein be read to the life, and my naturall forme discerned, so farre-forth as publike reverence hath permitted me. For if my fortune had beene to have lived among those nations, which yet are said to live under the sweet liberty of Natures first and uncorrupted lawes, I assure thee, I would most willingly have pourtrayed my selfe fully and naked.

Thus gentle Reader my selfe am the groundworke of my booke: It is then no reason thou shouldst employ thy time about so frivolous and vaine a Subject.

Therefore farewell. From Montaigne,  
the first of March.

1580.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

## THE FIRST CHAPTER

By divers meanes men come unto a like end.



THE most usuall way to appease those minds we have offended (when revenge lies in their hands, and that we stand at their mercy) is, by submission to move them to commiseration and pitty: Neverthelessse, courage, constancie, and resolution (meanes altogether opposite) have sometimes wrought the same effect. Edward the black Prince of Wales (who so long governed our Country of Guienne, a man whose conditions and fortune were accompanied with many notable parts of worth and magnanimitie) having beene grievously offended by the Limosins, though he by maine force tooke and entred their Citie, could by no meanes be appeased, nor by the wailefull out-cries of all sorts of people (as of men, women, and children) be moved to any pitty, they prostrating themselves to the common slaughter, crying for mercy, and humbly submitting themselves at his feet, untill such time as in triumphant manner passing thorow their Citie, he perceived three French Gentlemen, who alone, with an incredible and undaunted boldnesse, gainstood the enraged violence, and made head against the furie of his victorious armie. The consideration and respect of so notable a vertue, did first abate the dint of his wrath, and from those three began to relent, and shew mercy to all the other inhabitants of the said towne. Scanderberg, Prince of Epirus, following one of his souldiers,

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER I  
By divers  
meanes men  
come unto a  
like end

with purpose to kill him, who by all means of humilitie, and submisse entreatie, had first assaied to pacifie him, in such an unavoidable extremitie, resolved at last, resolutely to encounter him with his sword in his hand. This resolution did immediately stay his Captains fury, who seeing him undertake so honourable an attempt, not only forgave, but received him into grace and favour. This example may haply, of such as have not knowne the prodigious force and matchlesse valour of the said Prince, admit another interpretation. The Emperour Conradus, third of that name, having besieged Guelphe, Duke of Bavaria, what vile or base satisfaction soever was offered him, would yeeld to no other milder conditions, but only to suffer such Gentlewomen as were with the Duke in the Citie (their honours safe) to issue out of the Towne afoot, with such things as they could carry about them. They with an unrelenting courage advised and resolved themselves (neglecting all other riches or jewels) to carry their husbands, their children, and the Duke himselfe, on their backs: The Emperour perceiving the quaintnesse of their device, tooke so great pleasure at it, that hee wept for joy, and forthwith converted that former inexorable rage, and mortall hatred he bare the Duke, into so milde a relenting and gentle kindnesse, that thence forward he entreated both him and his with all favour and courtesie. Either of these wayes might easily perswade mee: for I am much inclined to mercie, and affected to mildnesse. So it is, that in mine opinion, I should more naturally stoope unto compassion, than bend to estimation. Yet is pitty held a vicious passion among the Stoicks. They would have us aid the afflicted, but not to faint, and co-suffer with them. These examples seeme fittest for mee, forsomuch as these minds are seene to be assaulted and environed by these two meanes, in undauntedly suffering the one, and stooping under the other. It may peradventure be said, that to yeeld ones heart unto commiseration, is an effect of facility, tendernesse, and meeknesse: whence it proceedeth, that the weakest natures, as of women, children, and the vulgar sort are more subject unto it. But (having contemned teares and wailings) to yeeld unto the onely reverence of the sacred Image of vertue, is the effect of a couragious and imployable minde,

## THE FIRST BOOKE.

holding a masculine and constant vigour, in honour and affection. Notwithstanding, amazement and admiration may in lesse generous minds worke the like effect. Witnesse the Thebanes, who having accused and indited their Captaines, as of a capitall crime, forsomuch as they had continued their charge beyond the time prescribed them, absolved and quit Pelopidas of all punishment, because he submissively yeelded under the burden of such objections, and to save himselfe, employed no other meanes, but suing-requests, and demisse intreaties; where on the contrary, Epaminondas boldly relating the exploits atchieved by him, and with a fierce and arrogant manner upbraiding the people with them, had not the heart so much as to take their lots into his hands, but went his way, and was freely absolved; the assembly much commending the stoutnesse of his courage. Dionysius the elder, after long-lingering and extreme difficulties, having taken the Citie of Reggio, and in it the Captaine Phyton, (a worthy honest man) who had so obstinately defended the same, would needs shew a tragicall example of revenge. First, he told him, how the day before, he had caused his sonne and all his kinsfolkes to be drowned. To whom Phyton, stoutly out-staring him, answered nothing, but that they were more happy than himselfe by the space of one day. Afterward he caused him to be stripped, and by his executioners to be taken and dragged thorow the Citie most ignominiously, and cruelly whipping him, charging him besides with outrageous and contumelious speeches. All which notwithstanding, as one no whit dismayed, he ever shewed a constant and resolute heart; and with a cheerefull and bold countenance went on still, loudly recounting the honourable and glorious cause of his death, which was, that he would never consent to yeeld his Country into the hands of a cruell tyrant, menacing him with an imminent punishment of the Gods. Dionysius plainly reading in his Souldiers lookes, that in lieu of animating them with braving his conquered enemy, they in contempt of him, and scorne of his triumph, seemed by the astonishment of so rare a vertue, to be moved with compassion, and inclined to mutinie, yea, and to free Phyton from out the hands of his Sergeants or Guard, caused his torture to cease, and secretly sent him

CHAPTER  
I  
By divers  
meanes men  
come unto a  
like end

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER to be drowned in the sea. Surely, man is a wonderfull,  
I vaine, divers, and wavering subject: it is very hard to  
By diverse ground any directly-constant and uniforme judgement upon  
meanes men him. Behold Pompey, who freely pardoned all the Citie of  
come unto a the Mamertines, (against which he was grievously enraged)  
like end for the love of the magnanimitie, and consideration of the  
exceeding vertue of Zeno, one of their fellow-citizens, who  
tooke the publike fault wholly upon himselfe, and desired no  
other favour, but alone to beare the punishment thereof;  
whereas Syllaes host having used the like vertue in the Citie  
of Perugia, obtained nothing, neither for himselfe, nor for  
others. And directly against my first example, the hardiest  
amongst men, and so gracious to the vanquished, Alexander  
the great, after many strange difficulties, forcing the Citie  
of Gaza, encountred by chance with Betis, that commanded  
therein, of whose valour (during the siege) he had felt won-  
derfull and strange exploits, being then alone, forsaken of  
all his followers, his armes all-broken, all-besmeared with  
bloud and wounds, fighting amongst a number of Mace-  
donians, who pell-mell laid still upon him; provoked by so  
deare a victorie, (for among other mishaps he had newly  
received two hurts in his body) said thus unto him; 'Betis,  
'thou shalt not die as thou wouldest: for make account thou  
'must indure all the torments may possibly bee devised or in-  
'flicted upon a caitife wretch, as thou art.' But he, for all  
his enemies threats, without speaking one word, returned  
only an assured, sterne, and disdainefull countenance upon  
him; which silent obstinacie Alexander noting, said thus  
unto himselfe: 'What? would hee not bend his knee? could  
'he not utter one suppliant voyce? I will assuredly vanquish  
'his silence, and if I cannot wrest a word from him, I will at  
'least make him to sob or groane.' And converting his  
anger into rage, commanded his heeles to bee through-  
pierced, and so all alive with a cord through them, to be  
torne, mangled, and dismembred at a carts-taile. May it  
be, the force of his courage, was so naturall and peculiar  
unto him, that because he would no-whit admire him, he re-  
spected him the lesse? or deemed he it so proper unto him-  
selfe, that in his height, he could not without the spight of  
envious passion, endure to see it in an other? or was the



# THE FIRST BOOKE

naturall violence of his rage incapable of any opposition? CHAPTER  
surely, had it received any restraint, it may be supposed, I  
that in the ransacking and desolation of the Citie of Thebes, By diverse  
it should have felt the same; in seeing so many Worthies meanes men  
lost, and valiant men put to the sword, as having no meanes come unto a  
of publike defence; for above six thousand were slaine and like end  
massacred, of which not one was seene, either to run away,  
or beg for grace. But on the contrary, some here and there  
seeking to affront, and endeavouring to check their victorious  
enemies, urging and provoking them to force them die an  
honourable death. Not one was seene to yeeld, and that  
to his last gaspe did not attempt to revenge himselfe, and  
with all weapons of dispaire, with the death of some enemy,  
comfort and sweeten his owne miserie. Yet could not the  
affliction of their vertue find any ruth or pitie, nor might  
one day suffice to glut or assuage his revengefull wrath.  
This butcherous slaughter continued unto the last drop of  
any remaining blood; where none were spared but the un-  
armed and naked, the aged and unpotent, the women  
and children; that so from amongst them, they  
might get thirtie thousand slaves.

## THE SECOND CHAPTER

### Of Sadnesse or Sorrowe.



O man is more free from this passion than I, for I neither love nor regard it: albeit the world hath undertaken, as it were upon covenant, to grace it with a particular favour. Therewith they adorne age, vertue, and conscience. Oh foolish and base ornament! The Italians have more properly with its name entitled malignitie: for, it is a qualitie ever hurtfull, ever sottish; and as ever base and coward, the Stoickes inhibit their Elders and Sages to be therewith tainted, or have any feeling of it. But the Storie saith; that Psamneticus king of Ægypt, having been defeated and taken by Cambises king of Persia,

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER II Of Sadnesse or Sorrowe

seeing his owne daughter passe before him in base and vile array, being sent to draw water from a well, his friends weeping and wailing about him (he with his eyes fixed on the ground, could not be moved to utter one word), and shortly after beholding his sonne led to execution, held still the same undaunted countenance: but perceiving a familiar friend of his haled amongst the captives, he began to beat his head, and burst forth into extreame sorrow. This might well be compared to that which one of our Princes was lately seene to doe, who being at Trent, and receiving newes of his elder brothers death; but such a brother as on him lay all the burthen and honour of his house; and shortly after tidings of his yonger brothers decease, who was his second hope; and having with an unmatched countenance and exemplar constancie endured these two affronts; it fortun'd not long after, that one of his servants dying, he by this latter accident suffered himselfe to be so far transported, that quitting and forgetting his former resolution, he so abandoned himselfe to all manner of sorrow and griefe, that some argued, only this last mischance had toucht him to the quicke: but verily the reason was, that being otherwise full, and over-plunged in sorrow, the least surcharge brake the bounds and barres of patience. The like might (I say) be judged of our storie, were it not it followeth, that Cambises inquiring of Psamneticus, why he was nothing distempered at the misfortune of his sonne and daughter, he did so patiently beare the disaster of his friend: 'It is,' answered he, 'because this last displeasure may be manifested by weeping, whereas the two former exceed by much, 'all meanes and compasse to bee expressed by teares.' The invention of that ancient Painter might happily fit this purpose, who in the sacrifice of Iphigenia, being to represent the griefe of the by-standers, according to the qualitie and interest each one bare for the death of so faire, so young and innocent a Lady, having ransacked the utmost skill and effects of his art, when he came to the Virgins father, as if no countenance were able to represent that degree of sorrow, he drew him with a vaile over his face. And that is the reason why our Poets faine miserable Niobe, who first having lost seven sonnes, and immediately as many daughters, as



# THE FIRST BOOKE

one over-burthened with their losses, to have been transformed into a stone; CHAPTER II

*Diriguisse malis:*

And grew as hard as stone,  
By miserie and moane.

Of Sadnesse  
or Sorrowe

OVID. *Metam.*  
vi. 303.

Thereby to expresse this mournfull silent stupiditie, which so doth pierce us, when accidents surpassing our strength orewhelme us. Verily the violence of a griefe, being extreme, must needs astonie the mind, and hinder the liberty of her actions. As it hapneth at the sudden alarum of some bad tidings, when we shall feele our selves surprised, benumbed, and as it were deprived of all motion, so that the soule bursting afterward forth into teares and complaints, seemeth at more ease and libertie, to loose, to cleare and dilate it selfe.

*Et via vix tandem voci laxata dolore est:*

And scarce at last for speach,  
By griefe was made a breach.

VIRG. *Aen.* xi.  
151.

In the warres which king Ferdinando made against the widow of John king of Hungaria, about Buda; a man at armes was particularly noted of all men, forsomuch as in a certaine skirmish he had shewed exceeding prowesse of his body, and though unknowne, being slaine, was highly commended and much bemoaned of all; but yet of none so greatly as of a Germane Lord, called Raisciac, as he that was amased at so rare vertue: his body being covered and had off, this Lord, led by a common curiositie, drew neere unto it, to see who it might be, and having caused him to be disarmed, perceived him to be his owne sonne; which knowne, did greatly augment the compassion of all the camp: he only without framing word, or closing his eyes, but earnestly viewing the dead body of his sonne, stood still upright, till the vehemencie of his sad sorrow, having suppressed and choaked his vitall spirits, fell'd him starke dead to the ground.

*Chi puo dir com' egli arde è in picciol fuoco:*

He that can say how he doth frie  
In pettie-gentle flames doth lie,

PET. *p.* i.  
*Son.* 140.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER say those Lovers that would lively represent an intolerable  
II passion.

Of Sadnesse  
or Sorrowe

CATUL. *Epig.*  
xlviii. 5.

*misero quod omnes  
Eripit sensus mihi ; Nam simul te  
Lesbia aspexi, nihil est super mi  
Quod loquar amens.  
Lingua sed torpet, tenuis sub artus  
Flamma dimanat, sonitu suopte  
Tinniunt aures, gemina teguntur  
Lumina nocte.*

miserably from me  
This bereaves all sense : for I can no sooner  
Eie thee my sweet heart, but I wot not one word to speak amazed.  
Tongue-tide as in trance, while a sprightly thin flame  
Flowes in all my joynts, with a selfe-resounding  
Both my eares tingle, with a night redoubled  
Both mine eies are veild.

Nor is it in the liveliest, and most ardent heat of the fit  
that wee are able to display our complaints and perswasions,  
the soule being then aggravated with heavie thoughts, and  
the body suppressed and languishing for love. And thence  
is sometimes engendered that casuall faintnes, which so  
unseasonably surpriseth passionate Lovers, and that chil-  
nesse, which by the power of an extreame heat doth close on  
them in the verie midst of their joy and enjoying. All  
passions that may be tasted and digested, are but mean and  
slight.

SEN. *Hip.* Act.  
ii. Scena 2.

*Curæ leves loquuntur, ingentes stupent.*  
Light cares can freely speak,  
Great cares heart rather breake.

The surprize of an unexpected pleasure astonieth us alike.

VIRG. *Ænead.*  
iii. 306.

*Ut me conspexit venientem, et Troja circum  
Arma amens vidit, magnis exterrita monstis,  
Dirigit visu in medio, calor ossa reliquit,  
Labitur, et longo vix tandem tempore futur.*

When she beheld me come, and round about  
Senselesse saw Trojan armes, she stood afraid  
Stone-still at so strange sights : life heat flew out :  
She faints : at last, with long pause thus she said.

Besides the Roman Ladie, that died for joy to see her  
sonne returne alive from the battell of Cannæ, Sophocles and

# THE FIRST BOOKE

Dionysius the Tyrant, who deceased through over-gladnes : and Talva, who died in Corsica, reading the newes of the honours the Roman Senate had conferred upon him : It is reported that in our age, Pope Leo the tenth having received advertisement of the taking of the Citie of Millane, which he had so exceedingly desired, entred into such excesse of joy, that he fell into an ague, whereof he shortly died. And for a more authentically testimonie of humane imbecillitie, it is noted by our Ancients, that Diodorus the Logician, being surprized with an extreme passion or apprehension of shame, fell downe starke dead, because neither in his Schoole, nor in publike, he had beene able to resolve an argument propounded unto him. I am little subject to these violent passions. I have naturally a hard apprehension, which by discourse I daily harden more and more.

CHAPTER  
II  
Of Sadnesse  
or Sorrowe

## THE THIRD CHAPTER

Our Affections are transported beyond our selves.



THOSE which still accuse men for ever gaping after future things, and go about to teach us, to take hold of present fortunes, and settle our selves upon them, as having no hold of that which is to come; yea much lesse than we have of that which is already past, touch and are ever harping upon the commonest humane error, if they dare call that an error, to which Nature her selfe, for the service of the continuation of her worke, doth addresse us, imprinting (as it doth many others) this false imagination in us, as more jealous of our actions, than of our knowledge. We are never in our selves, but beyond. Feare, desire, and hope, draw us ever towards that which is to come, and remove our sense and consideration from that which is, to amuse us on that which shall be, yea when we shall be no more. *Calamitosus est animus futuri anxius.* ‘A minde in  
‘suspense what is to come, is in a pittifull case.’

SEN. *Epist.* 98.

This notable precept is often alleaged in Plato. ‘Follow

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER III

Our affections  
are transport-  
ed beyond our  
selves

‘thy businesse and know thy selfe.’ Each of these two members, doth generally imply all our duty; and likewise enfold his companion. He that should doe his businesse, might perceive that his first lesson is, to know what he is, and what is convenient for him. And he that knoweth himselfe, takes no more anothers matters for his owne, but above all other things, loveth and correcteth himselfe, rejecteth superfluous occupations, idle imaginations, and unprofitable propositions. As if you grant follie what it desireth, it will no-whit be satisfied; so is wisdom content with that which is present, and never displeased with it selfe. Epicurus doth dispense with his age touching the foresight and care of what shall insue. Amongst the lawes that regard the deceased, that which ties the actions of Princes to be examined when they are dead, seemes to me verie solid. They are companions, if not masters of the lawes: That which justice could not worke on their heads, it is reason it effect upon their reputation, and goods of their successors: things wee many times preferre before our lives. It is a custome brings many singular commodities unto nations that observe it, and to be desired of all good Princes: who have cause to complaine that the memorie of the wicked is used as theirs. Wee owe a like obedience and subjection to all Kings; for it respects their office: but estimation and affection, we owe it only to their vertue. If they be unworthy, wee are to endure them patiently, to conceale their vices, and to aid their indifferent actions with our commendations, as long as their authoritie hath need of our assistance, and that ought to be ascribed unto politike order. But our commerce with them being ended, there is no reason we should refuse the unfolding of our felt wrongs unto justice and our libertie. And specially to refuse good subjects, the glory to have reverently and faithfully served a master, whose imperfections were so well knowne unto them: exempting posteritie from so profitable an example. And such as for the respect of some private benefit or interest, doe wickedly embrace the memorie of an unworthy Prince, doe particular justice at the charge of publike justice. Titus Livius speaketh truly, where he saith, that the speech of men brought up under a royaltie is ever full of vaine ostentations, and false witnesses; every man



# THE FIRST BOOKE

indifferently extolling the King, to the furthest straine of valour and soveraigne greatnesse. The magnanimitie of those two Souldiers may be reprovèd, one of which being demanded of Nero, why he hated him, answered him to his teeth; I loved thee whilst thou wast worthy of love, but since thou becamest a parricide, a fire-brand, a Juglar, a Player, and a Coach-man, I hate thee, as thou deservest. The other being asked, wherefore he sought to kill him, answered, Because I finde no other course to hinder thy uncessant outrages and impious deeds. But can any man, that hath his senses about him, justly reprove the publike and generall testimonies that since his death have beene given, and so shall be for ever, both against him and all such like reprobates, of his tyrannicall and wicked demeanours? I am sorrie that in so sacred a policie as the Lacedemonian was, so fained and fond a ceremonie at the death of their Kings was ever devised and brought in use. All their confederates and neighbours, all the slave-Heotes, men and women pell-mell, for a testimonie of their griefe and sorrow, did mangle and gash their foreheads, and in their out-cries and lamentations exclaimed, that their deceased King, howsoever he had lived, was and had beene the best Prince that ever they had, ascribing in order the commendations due unto desert, and to the last and latter ranke, what belongs unto the first merit. Aristotle that hath an oare in every water, and medleth with all things, makes a question about Solons speech, who saith, that no man can truly be counted happy before his death, Whether he that lived and died according to his wish, may be named happy, whether his renowne be good or ill, and whether his posteritie be miserable or no. Whilst wee stirre and remove, wee transport our selves by preoccupation wheresoever wee list: but no sooner are wee out of being, but wee have no communication at all with that which is. And it were better to tell Solon, that never man is happy then, since he never is so, but when he is no more.

CHAPTER  
III  
Our affections  
are transport  
ed beyond our  
selves

—*Quisquam*

*Vix radicitus è vita se tollit, et ejicit:  
Sed facit esse sui quiddam super inscius ipse,  
Nec removet satis à projecto corpore sese, et  
Vindicat.—*

LUCRET. *Rer.*  
*nat.* iii. 912.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER

### III

Our affections  
are transport-  
ed beyond our  
selves

Scarce any rids himselfe of life so cleere,  
But leaves unwitting some part of him heere :  
Nor frees or quits himselfe sufficiently  
From that his body which forlorne doth lie.

Bertrand of Gelsquin died at the siege of the castle of Rancon, neere unto Puy in Avergne, the besieged yeelding afterward, were forced to carry the keies of the Castle, upon the deceased of the Captaine. Bartholomew of Alviano, Generall of the Venetian forces, dying in their service and wars about Brescia, and his bodie being to be transported to Venice, through the territory of Verona, which then was enemy unto them, the greatest part of the army thought it expedient to demand a safe conduct for their passage of those of Verona, to which Theodoro Trivulcio stoutly opposed himselfe, and chose rather to passe it by maine force, and to hazard the day, saying it was not convenient, that he who in his life time had never apprehended feare of his enemies should now, being dead, seeme to feare them. Verily in like matters, by the lawes of Greece, hee that required a dead body of his enemies, with intent to bury the same, renounced the victory, and might no more erect any trophy of it: and he who was so required, purchased the title of honour and gaine. So did Nicias lose the advantage hee had clearely gained of the Corinthians; and contrariwise, Agesilaus assured that, hee doubtfully had gotten of the Bœotians. These actions might bee deemed strange, if in all ages it were not a common-received opinion, not only to extend the care of our selves, beyond this life, but also to beleieve, that heavenly favours doe often accompany us unto our grave, and continue in our posterity. Whereof there are so many examples (leaving our moderne a part) that I need not wade farre into it.

Edward the first King of England, in the long wars he had with Robert King of Scotland, having by triall found how greatly his presence advantaged the successe of his affaires, and how he was ever victorious in any enterprise he undertooke in his owne person; when hee died, bound his sonne by solemne oath, that being dead he should cause his body to be boyled, untill the flesh fell from the bones, which he should cause to be interred, and carefully keeping the bones, ever carry them

# THE FIRST BOOKE

about him, whensoever hee should happen to have wars with the Scots : As if destiny had fatally annexed the victory unto his limmes. Iohn Zisca, who for the defence of Wickliff's opinions so much troubled the state of Bohemia, commanded that after his death his body should be flead, and a drum made of his skin, to be carried and sounded in all the wars against his enemies : deeming the sound of it would be a meanes to continue the advantages, which in his former warres hee had obtained of them. Certaine Indians did likewise carry the bones of one of their Captaines in the skirmishes they had with the Spaniards, in regard of the good successe hee had, whilst hee lived, against them : And other nations of that new-found world, doe likewise carry the bodies of such worthy and fortunate men with them, as have died in their battels, to serve them in stead of good fortune and encouragement. The first examples reserve nothing else in their tombes, but the reputation acquired by their former atchievements : but these will also adjoyne unto it the power of working. The act of Captaine Bayart is of better composition, who perceiving himselfe deadly wounded by a shot received in his body, being by his men perswaded to come off and retire himselfe from out the throng, answered, he would not now, so neere his end, begin to turne his face from his enemy : and having stoutly foughten so long as he could stand, feeling himselfe to faint and stagger from his horse, commanded his steward to lay him against a tree, but in such sort, that he might die with his face toward the enemy ; as indeed hee did. I may not omit this other example, as remarkable for this consideration, as any of the precedent. The Emperour Maximilian, great grand-father to Philip now King of Spaine, was a Prince highly endowed with many noble qualities, and amongst others with a well-nigh matchlesse beauty and comelinesse of body ; but with other customes of his, hee had this one much contrarie to other Princes, who to dispatch their weightiest affaires make often their close stoole, their regall Throne or Councel-chamber, which was, that hee would not permit any groome of his chamber (were hee never so neere about him) to see him in his inner chamber, who if he had occasion but to make water, would as nicely and as religiously with-draw himselfe

CHAPTER  
III  
Our affections  
are transport-  
ed beyond our  
selves



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
III  
Our affections  
are transport-  
ed beyond our  
selves

as any maiden, and never suffer so much as a Physitian, much lesse any other whatsoever, to see those privie parts that all in modestie seeke to keepe secret and unseene. My selfe, that am so broad-mouthed and lavish in speeches, am notwithstanding naturally touched with that bashfulnesse. And unlesse it bee by the motion of necessity or of voluptuousnesse, I never willingly imparted those actions and parts (which custome willetth to bee concealed) to the view of any creature. I endure more compulsion, than I deeme befitting a man, especially of my profession. But hee grew to such superstition, that by expresse words in his last will and Testament, hee commanded, that being dead, hee should have linnen-flops put about them. Hee should by codicile have annexed unto it, that hee who should put them on, might have his eies hood-winckt. The instruction which Cyrus giveth his children, that neither they nor any other should either see or touch his body, after the breath were once out of it; I ascribe it unto some motive of devotion in him. For both his historian and himselfe, amongst many other notable qualities they are endued with, have throughout all the course of their life seemed to have a singular respect and awfull reverence unto religion. That story displeased mee very much, which a noble-man told me of a kinsman of mine (a man very famous and well known both in peace and warre) which is, that dying very aged in his court, being much tormented with extreme pangs of the stone, hee with an earnest and unwearied care, employed all his last houres, to dispose the honour and ceremony of his funerals, and summoned all the nobilitie that came to visit him, to give him assured promise to be as assistants, and to convey him to his last resting place. To the very same Prince, who was with him at his last gasp, he made very earnest suit, he would command all his houshold to wait upon him at his interment, inforcing many reasons, and alleaging divers examples, to prove that it was a thing very convenient, and fitting a man of his qualitie: which assured promise when he had obtained, and had at his pleasure marshalled the order how they should march, he seemed quietly and contentedly to yeeld up the ghost. I have seldome seene a vanitie continue so long. This other curi-

# THE FIRST BOOKE

ositie meere opposite unto it (which to prove I need not labour for home-examples) seemeth in my opinion cosen-german to this, that is, when one is ever ready to breathe his last, carefully and passionately to endeavour how to reduce the convoy of his obsequies unto some particular and unwonted parcimonie, to one servant and to one lanterne. I heare the humour and appointment of Marcus Æmilius Lepidus commended, who expresly forbade his heires to use those ceremonies about his interment, which in such cases were formerly accustomed. Is it temperance and frugalitie, to avoid charge and voluptuousnesse, the use and knowledge of which is imperceptable unto us? Loe here an easie reformation, and of small cost. Were it requisite to appoint any, I would be of opinion, that as well in that, as in all other actions of mans life, every man should referre the rule of it to the qualitie of his fortune. And the Philosopher Lycon did wisely appoint his friends to place his body where they should thinke it fittest and for the best: and for his obsequies, they should neither be superfluous and over-costly, nor base and sparing. For my part, I would wholly relie on custome, which should dispose this ceremonie, and would yeeld my selfe to the discretion of the first or next into whose hands I might chance to fall. *Totus hic locus est contemnendus in nobis, non negligendus in nostris:* ‘All this matter should be ‘despised of us, but not neglected of ours.’ And religiously said a holy man; *Curatio funeris, conditio sepulturæ, pompa exequiarum, magis sunt vivorum solatia, quàm subsidia mortuorum.* ‘The procuration of funerals, the maner of buriall, ‘the pomp of obsequies, are rather comforts to the living, than ‘helps to the dead.’ Therefore Socrates answered Criton, who at the houre of his death asked him how he would be buried: ‘Even as you please,’ said he. Were I to meddle further with this subject, I would deeme it more gallant to imitate those who yet living and breathing, undertake to enjoy the order and honour of their sepulchres, and that please themselves to behold their dead countenance in Marble. Happy they that can rejoyce and gratifie their senses with insensibilitie, and live by their death! A little thing would make me conceive an inexpressible hatred against all popular domination; although it seeme most naturall and just unto me;

## CHAPTER

### III

Our affections  
are transported  
beyond our  
selves

AUG. *Civ. Dei*,  
i. 12, verb.  
apost. scr. 32.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
III  
Our affections  
are transport-  
ed beyond our  
selves

when I call to minde that inhumane injustice of the Athenians, who without further triall or remission, yea without suffering them so much as to reply or answer for themselves, condemned those noble and worthy Captaines, that returned victoriously from the sea-battell, which they (neere the Iles Arginusæ) had gained of the Lacedemonians ; the most contested, bloodie and greatest fight the Grecians ever obtained by sea with their owne forces : forsomuch as after the victory, they had rather followed those occasions, which the law of warre presented unto them, for their availe, than to their prejudice staid to gather and bury their dead men. And the successe of Diomedon makes their ruthlesse execution more hatefull, who being a man of notable and exemplar vertue, both military and politike, and of them so cruelly condemned ; after he had heard the bloody sentence, advancing himselfe forward to speake, having fit opportunitie and plausible audience ; he, I say, in stead of excusing himselfe, or endeavouring to justifie his cause, or to exasperate the evident iniquity of so cruell a doome, expressed but a care of the Judges preservation, earnestly beseeching the Gods to turne that judgement to their good, praying that for want of not satisfying the vowes which hee and his companions had vowed in acknowledgement and thanksgiving for so famous a victory, and honourable fortune, they might not draw the wrath and revenge of the Gods upon them, declaring what their vowes were. And without more words, or urging further reasons, couragiously addressed himselfe to his execution. But fortune some yeares after punished him alike, and made him taste of the verie same sauce. For Chabrias, Captaine Generall of their sea-fleet, having afterward obtained a famous victory of Pollis, Admirall of Sparta, in the Ile of Naxos, lost absolutely the benefit of it, and onely contented with the day (a matter of great consequence for their affaires) fearing to incurre the mischief of this example, and to save a few dead carcasses of his friends, that floated up and downe the sea, gave leasure to an infinite number of his living enemies, whom he might easily have surprized to saile away in safety, who afterward made them to purchase their importunate superstition, at a deere-deere rate.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

SEN. *Troas.* *Quæris, quo jaceas, post obitum, loco?*  
chor. ii. 30. *Quo non nata jacent.*

Where shall you lie when you are dead?  
Where they lye that were never bred:

This other restores the sense of rest unto a body without a soule.

*Neque sepulchrum, quo recipiat, habeat portum corporis.*  
*Vbi, remissa humana vita, corpus requiescat à malis.*

To turne in as a hav'n, have he no grave,  
Where life left, from all grieve he rest may have.

## CHAPTER

### III

Our affections  
are transport-  
ed beyond our  
selves

CIC. *Tusc. Qu.*  
i. Enni.

Even as Nature makes us to see, that many dead things have yet certaine secret relations unto life. Wine doth alter and change in sellers, according to the changes and alterations of the seasons of its vineyard. And the flesh of wilde beasts and venison doth change qualitie and taste in the powdering-tubs, according to the nature of living flesh, as some say that have observed it.

## THE FOURTH CHAPTER

How the soule dischargeth her passions upon  
false objects, when the true faile it.



**A**GENTLEMAN of ours exceedingly subject to the gowt, being instantly solicited by his Physitions, to leave all manner of salt-meats, was wont to answer pleasantly, that when the fits or pangs of the disease tooke him, hee would have some body to quarell with; and that crying and cursing, now against Bolonie-sausage, and sometimes by railing against salt neats-tongues, and gammons of bakon, he found some ease. But in good earnest even as the arme being lifted up to strike, if the stroke hit not, but fall void, wee feele some paine in it, and many times strike it out of joynt; and that to yeeld our sight pleasant, it must not be lost and dispierced in the vast ayre, but ought rather to have a limited bound to sustaine it by a reasonable distance.



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER IV LUCAN, iii 362.

How the soule  
dischargeth  
her passions  
upon false ob-  
jects, when the  
true faile it

*Ventus ut amittit vires, nisi robore densæ  
Occurrant silvæ, spatio diffusus inani.*

As windes in emptie ayre diffus'd, strength lose,  
Unlesse thick-old-growne woods of their strength oppose.

So seemes it that the soule moved and tossed, if she have not some hold to take, loseth it selfe in it selfe, and must ever be stored with some object, on which it may light and worke. Plutarch saith fitly of those who affectionate themselves to Monkies and little Dogges, that the loving part which is in us, for want of a lawfull hold, rather than it will be idle, doth forge a false and frivolous hold unto it selfe. And wee see that the soule in her passions doth rather deceive it selfe, by framing a false and fantasticall subject unto it selfe, yea against her owne conceit, than not to worke upon something. So doth their owne rage transport beasts, to set upon the stone or weapon that hath hurt them; yea and sometimes with irefull teeth to revenge themselves against themselves, for the hurt or smart they feele.

## LUCAN, vi. 220.

*Pannonis haud aliter post ictum sævior ursa  
Cui jaculum parva Lybis amentavit habena,  
Se rotat in vulnus, telumque irata receptum  
Impedit, & secum fugientem circuit hastam.*

Even so the wound-enraged Austrian beare,  
On whom a Moore hath thir'd his slinged speare,  
Wheeles on her wound, and raging bites the dart,  
Circling that flies with her, and cannot part.

What causes doe wee not invent, for the crosses that happen unto us? bee it right, or wrong: what take we not hold of, to have something to strive withall? It is not the golden locks thou tearest, nor the whitenesse of the breast, which thou through vexation so cruelly dost smite, that have by meanes of an unluckie bullet, lost thy deere-beloved brother: on something else shouldest thou wreake thy selfe. Livius speaking of the Romane army in Spaine, after the losse of two great Captaines that were brethren. *Flere omnes repenti, et offensare capita*: 'They all wept and often 'beat their heades.' It is an ordinarie custome: And the Philosopher Byon was very pleasant with the king, that for grieve tore his haire, when he said, 'Doth this man thinke, 'that baldnesse will asswage his grieve? who hath not seene

## LIV. dec. iii. lib. 5.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

‘some to chew and swallow cardes, and wel-nigh choake themselves with bales of dice, only to be revenged for the losse of ‘some money?’ Xerxes whipped the Sea, and writ a cartell of defiance to the hill Athos: And Cyrus for many daies together amused his whole armie to be revenged of the river Gyndus, for the feare he tooke passing over the same: And Caligula caused a verie faire house to be defaced, for the pleasure his mother had received in the same. When I was young, my countrimen were wont to say, That one of our neighbour-Kings, having received a blow at Gods hand, sware to be revenged on him, and ordained, that for ten yeares space no man should pray unto him, nor speak of him, nor (so long as he were in authority,) beleve in him. By which report, they doe not so much publish the sottishnesse, as the ambitious glorie, peculiar unto that nation of whom it was spoken. They are vices that ever goe together: But in truth such actions encline rather unto selfe-conceit, than to fondnes. Augustus Cæsar having beene beaten by a tempest on the sea, defied the God Neptune, and in the celebration of the Circensian games, that so he might be avenged on him, he caused his image to be removed from out the place, where it stood amongst the other Gods; wherein he is also lesse excusable, than the former, and lesse than hee was afterward, when having lost a battell, under Quintilius Varus in Germanie, all in a rage and desperate, he went up and downe beating his head against the walls, mainly crying out: Oh! Varus, restore me my Souldiers againe: For, those exceed, all follie, (forsomuch as impietie is joyned unto it) that will wreake themselves against God, or fortune, as if she had eares subject to our batterie: In imitation of the Thracians, who when it lightens or thunders, begin with a Titanian revenge to shoot against heaven, thinking by shooting of arrowes to draw God to some reason. Now, as saith that ancient Poet in Plutarch,

*Point ne se faut corroucer aux affaires,  
Il ne leur chaut de toutes noz choleres.*

CHAPTER  
IV  
How the soule  
dischargeth  
her passions  
upon false ob-  
jects, when the  
true faile it

PLUTAR.

We ought not angry be at what God dooth,  
For he cares not who beares an angry tooth.

But we shall never raile enough against the disorder and  
unrulinesse of our minde.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## THE FIFTH CHAPTER

Whether the Captaine of a place besieged  
ought to sallie forth to parlie.



NECIUS MARCIUS Legate of the Romans, in the warre against Perseus King of Macedon, desirous to get so much time, as he wanted to prepare his army, gave out some motives of accord, wherewith the King inveagled, yeelded unto a truce for certaine daies: by which meanes he furnished his enemie with opportunitie and leasure to arme himselfe: wherof proceeded the Kings last ruine and over-throw. Yet is it, that the elders of the Senate, mindfull of their fore-fathers customes, condemned this practice as an enemie to their ancient proceedings, which was, said they, to fight with vertue, and not with craft, nor by surprises, or stratagems by night, nor by set-flights, and unlookt-for approches, never undertaking a warre, but after it was proclaimed, yea many times after the appointed houre and place of the battell. With this conscience did they send backe to Pirrhus his traitorous Physitian, and to the Phalisci their disloyall schoole-master. These were true Romane proceedings, and not Grecian policies, nor Punike wiles, with whom to vanquish by force is lesse glorious than to conquer by treacherie. To deceive may serve for the instant, but hee only is judged to be overcome, that knowes he was not vanquished by craft or deceit, nor by fortune or chance, but by meere valour, betweene troupe and troupe, in an overt and just warre. It appeareth manifestly by the speech of these good men, they had not yet received this sentence.

VIRG. *Æn.* ii.  
390.

*Dolus, an virtus, quis in hoste requirat?*

Deceit, or vertue, either, in foes, it skill's not whether.

The Achajans, saith Polibius, detested all manner of deceit in their warres, deeming that no victorie, where their enemies courages were not quelled. *Eam vir sanctus, et*

# THE FIRST BOOKE

*sapiens sciat esse victoriam veram, quæ salva fide, et integra dignitate parabitur.* ‘A wise and religious man will know that is victorie indeed, which shall be attained with credit ‘unimpeached, and dignitie untainted,’ saith another.

*Vos ne velit, an me regnare hera, quid-ve ferat fors,  
Virtute experiamur.*

If fortune will have you to raigne, or me,  
And what chance bring’s, let vertues triall be.

CHAPTER  
V

Whether the  
Captaine of a  
place besieged  
ought to sallie  
forth to  
parlie.

CIC. *Offic.* i. ex  
Enn. de Pyrrh.

In the Kingdome of Ternates, among those nations, which wee so full-mouthed, call Barbarous, the custome beareth, that they never undertake a warre, before the same be denounced; thereunto adding an ample declaration of the meanes they have to employ therein, what manner, and how many men, what munition, and what Armes either offensive or defensive: which done, they also establish as a law, that without reproach or imputation, it shall be lawfull for any man, in their warres, to use what advantage soever, may in any sort further or helpe them to vanquish. The ancient Florentines were so far from desiring any advantage of their enemies by sudden surprises, that a moneth before they could bring their Armie into the field, they would give them warning, by the continuall sound of their common bell, which they called Martinella. As for us, who are lesse superstitious, and deeme him to have the honour of the warre, that hath the profit of it, and according to Lisander, say, that Where the Lions-skinne will not suffice, wee must adde a scantling of the Foxes; the most ordinarie occasions of surprises are drawne from this practice, and as wee say, there is no time, wherein a Captaine ought to be more warie and circumspect to looke about him, than that of parlies, and treaties of accord: And therefore is it a common rule in the mouth of all our modern men of warre, that the Governour or Commaunder of a besieged place, ought never to sallie forth himselfe to parlie. In the time of our forefathers, the same was cast in the teeth, (as a reproach) unto the Lord of Montmord and Assigni, who defended Mouson, against the Earle of Nanseaw. Yet in this case it were excusable in him, that should so sallie out, that the assurance and advantage, might still be on his side. As did the Earle Guido



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER V  
Whether the  
Captaine of a  
place besieged  
ought to sallie  
forth to  
parlie.

Rangoni in the Citie of Reggio (if credit may be given to Bellay; for Guicciardin affirmeth, that it was himselfe) when as the Lord of Escute, comming to parlie made his approaches unto it; for he did so little forsake his fort, that whilst they were in parlie, a commotion being raised, the Lord of Escute and the troupes which came with him, in that tumult found himselfe to be the weakest, so that Alexander Trivultio was there slaine, and hee deeming it the safest way, was forced to follow the Earle, and on his word to yeeld himselfe to the mercie and shelter of blowes, into the Citie. Eumenes in the Citie of Nera, being urged by Antigonus, that besieged him, to sallie forth to parlie, alleaging that there was reason he should come to him, sith he was the better man, and the stronger: after he had made this noble answer, I will never thinke any man better than my selfe, so long as I can hold or rule my sword; nor did he ever yeeld untill Antigonus had delivered him Ptolomey, his owne nephew for a pledge, whom he required. Yet shall wee see some to have prospered well in sallying foorth of their holdes to parlie, upon the word and honor of the assailant; witnes Henrie of Vaultx, a knight of Champaigne, who being beleagred by the English-men in the Castle of Commerce, and Bartholmew of Bones, who at that siege commaunded as Chiefe having caused the greatest part of the Castle to be undermined, so that there wanted nothing but the giving of fire, utterly to subvert the same, under the ruines of it, summoned the said Henrie to issue out, and for his owne good to parlie with him, which he did, accompanied but with three more, who manifestly seeing the evident ruine, wherein he was undoubtedly like to fall, acknowledged himselfe infinitely beholding to his enemy, unto whose discretion, after he had yeelded together with his troupe, and that fire was given to the Mine, the maine props of the Castle failing, it was utterly overthrowne and carried away. I am easily perswaded to yeeld to other mens words and faith, but hardly would I doe it, when I should give other men cause to imagine, that I had rather done it through despaire and want of courage, than of a free and voluntary choise, and confidence in his honestie and well-meaning.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

## THE SIXTH CHAPTER

That the houre of parlies is dangerous.



NOTWITHSTANDING I saw lately, that those of Musidan, a place not farre from mee, who with others of their partie, were by our forces compelled to dislodge thence, exclaimed, they were betraid, because during the speech of accord, and the treatie yet continuing, they had beene surprized and defeated; which thing might haply in other ages have had some apparence of truth; but, as I say, our manner of proceeding in such cases, is altogether differing from these rules, and no man ought to expect performance of promise from an enemy, except the last seale of bond be fully annexed thereunto, wherein notwithstanding is then much care and vigilancie required, and much adoe shall be found. And it was ever a dangerous counsell to trust the performance of word or oath given unto a Citie, that yeelds unto gentle and favourable composition, and in that furie to give the needie, bloudthirstie, and prey-greedy Souldier free entrance into it, unto the free choise and licence of a victorious armie. Lucius Æmilius Regillus a Romane Prætor, having lost his time in attempting by force to take the Citie of the Phocens by reason of the singular prowess, which the inhabitants shewed, in stoutly defending themselves, covenanted to receive them as friends unto the people of Rome, and to enter their Citie as a place confederate, removing all feare of hostile-action from them. But to the end hee might appeare more glorious and dreadfull, having caused his armie to enter with him, doe what he might, he could not bridle the rage of his Souldiers; and with his owne eies saw most part of the Citie ransacked and spoiled: the rights of covetousnesse and revenge supplanting those of his authoritie and militarie discipline. (Cleomenes was wont to say, that ‘What hurt soever a man might doe ‘his enemies in time of warre, was beyond justice, and not ‘subject unto it, as well towards the Gods as towards men’: who for seven dayes having made truce with those of Argos,

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER VI  
 That the  
 houre of par-  
 lies is danger-  
 ous

the third night, whilst they were all asleepe mistrusting no harme, hee charged and overthrew them, alleaging for his excuse, that in the truce no mention had beene made of nights.) But the Gods left not his perfidious policie unreuenged: For during their enter-parlie and businesse about taking hostages, the Citie of Casilinum was by surprise taken from him: which happened in the times of the iustest Captaines, and of the most perfect Romane discipline: For it is not said, that time and place serving, wee must not make use and take advantage of our enemies foolish oversight, as we doe of their cowardise. And verily warre hath naturally many reasonable privileges to the prejudice of reason. And here failes the rule; *Neminem id agere, ut ex alterius prædetur inscitia*: 'That no man should endeavour to 'prey upon another mans ignorance.' But I wonder of the scope that Xenophon allowes them, both by his discourse, and by diuers exploits of his perfect Emperour: an Author of wonderfull consequence in such things, as a great Captaine and a Philosopher, and one of Socrates chiefest Disciples, nor doe I altogether yeeld unto the measure of his dispensation. The Lord of Aubigny besieging Capua, after he had given it a furious batterie, the Lord Fabritius Colonna, Captaine of the towne, having from under a bastion or skonce begunne to parlie, and his men growing negligent and carelesse in their offices and guard, our men did suddenly take the advantage offered them, entered the towne, over-ranne it, and put all to the sword. But to come to later examples, yea in our memorie, the Lord Iulio Romero at Yvoy, having committed this oversight to issue out of his holde, to parlie with the Constable of France, at his returne found the Towne taken, and himselfe jack-out-of-doores. But that wee may not passe unreuenged, the Marques of Pescara beleaguering Genova, where Duke Octavian Fregoso commanded under our protection, and an accord between them having so long been treated, and earnestly solicited, that it was held as ratified, and upon the point of conclusion, the Spanjards being entred the Towne, and seeing themselves the stronger, tooke their opportunitie, and used it as a full and compleate victorie: and since at Lygny in Barroe, where the Earle of Brienne commanded, the Emperour having be-

# THE FIRST BOOKE

sieged him in person, and Bartholemey Lieutenant to the saide Earle being come forth of his hold to parlie, was no sooner out, whilst they were disputing, but the Towne was surprised, and he excluded, They say,

*Fu il vincer sempre mai laudabil cosa,  
Vincasi per fortuna ò per ingegno.*

To be victorious, evermore was glorious,  
Be we by fortune or by wit victorious.

But the Philosopher Chrysippus would not have beene of that opinion ; nor I neither, for he was wont to say, ‘ That those who run for the masterie may well employ all their strength to make speed, but it is not lawfull for them to lay hands on their adversaries, to stay him, or to crosse leggs, to make him trip or fall.’ And more generously answered Alexander the great, at what time Polypercon perswaded him to use the benefit of the advantage which the darkness of the night afforded him, to charge Darius ; ‘ No, no,’ said hee, ‘ it fits not mee to hunt after night-stolne victories.’ *Malo me fortunæ pæniteat, quam victoria pudeat.* ‘ I had rather repent me of my fortune, than be ashamed of my victorie.’

*Atque idem fugientem haud est dignatus Orodem  
Sternere, nec jacta cæcum dare cuspide vulnus :  
Obvius adversoque occurrit, seque viro vir  
Contulit, haud furto meliôr, sed fortibus armis.*

VIRG. *Æn.* x.  
732. Mezent.

He deign’d not to strike downe Orodes flying,  
Or with his throwne-launce blindly-wound him running:  
But man to man afront himselfe applying,  
Met him, as more esteem’d for strength than cunning.

## THE SEVENTH CHAPTER

That our intention judgeth our actions.



THE common saying is, that Death acquits us of all our bonds. I know some that have taken it in another sence. Henry the seventh, King of England, made a composition with Philip son to Maximilian the Emperour or (to give him a more honorable title) father to the Emperour Charles



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
VII  
That our in-  
tention judg-  
eth our  
actions

the fifth, that the said Philip should deliver into his hands, the Duke of Suffolke, his mortall enemy, who was fled out of England, and saved him selfe in the Low countries, alwayes provided the King should attempt nothing against the Dukes life; which promise notwithstanding, being neere his end, he expresly by will and testament commanded his succeeding-sonne, that immediately after his decease, he should cause him to be put to death. In the late tragedie, which the Duke of Alva presented us withall at Brussels, on the Earles of Horne and Egmond, were many remarkable things, and worthy to be noted: and amongst others, that the said Count Egmond upon whose faithfull word and assurance, the Earle of Horne was come in and yeelded himselfe to the Duke of Alva, required very instantly to be first put to death, to the end his death might acquit and free him of the word and bond, which he ought and was engaged for, to the said Earle of Horne. It seemeth that death hath no whit discharged the former of his word given, and that the second, without dying, was quit of it. We cannot be tied beyond our strength and meanes. The reason is, because the effects and executions are not any way in our power, and except our will, nothing is truly in our power: on it onely are all the rules of man's dutie grounded and established by necessitie. And therefore Count Egmond, deeming his minde and will indebted to his promise, howbeit the power to effect it, lay not in his hands, was no doubt cleerely absolved of his debt and dutie, although he had survived the Count Horne. But the King of England failing of his word by his intention, cannot be excused, though hee delaide the execution of his disloyaltie untill after his death. No more than Herodotus his Mason who during his naturall life, having faithfully kept the secret of his Master the King of Egypts treasure, when he died discovered the same unto his children. I have in my dayes seene many convicted by their owne conscience, for detaining other mens goods, yet by their last will and testament to dispose themselves, after their decease to make satisfaction. This is nothing to the purpose. Neither to take time for a matter so urgent, nor with so small interest or shew of feeling, to goe about to establish an injurie. They are indebted somewhat


# THE FIRST BOOKE

more. And by how much more they pay incommodiously and chargeably, so much the more just and meritorious is their satisfaction. Penitence ought to charge, yet doe they worse, who reserve the revealing of some heinous conceit or affection towards their neighbour, to their last will and affection, having whilst they lived ever kept it secret. And seeme to have little regard of their owne honour, by provoking the partie offended against their owne memory, and lesse of their conscience, since they could never for the respect of death cancell their ill-grudging affection, and in extending life beyond theirs. Oh wicked and ungodly judges, which referre the judgement of a cause to such time as they have no more knowledge of causes! I will as neere as I can prevent, that my death reveale or utter any thing, my life hath not first publickly spoken.

CHAPTER  
VII  
That our in-  
tention judg-  
eth our  
actions

## THE EIGHTH CHAPTER

### Of Idlenesse.

 S we see some idle-fallow grounds, if they  
' be fat and fertile, to bring forth store  
' and sundrie roots of wilde and unprofit-  
' able weeds, and that to keepe them in  
' ure we must subject and imploy them  
' with certaine seeds for our use and  
' service. And as wee see some women,  
' though single and alone, often to bring  
' forth lumps of shapelesse flesh, whereas to produce a per-  
' fect and naturall generation, they must be manured with  
' another kinde of seed: So is it of mindes, which except  
' they be busied about some subject, that may bridle and  
' keepe them under, they will here and there wildly scatter  
' themselves through the vaste field of imaginations.'

*Sicut aquæ tremulum labris ubi lumen ahenis  
Sole repperçussum, aut radiantis imagine Lunæ,  
Omnia pervolitat latè loca, jámq̃ue sub auras  
Erigitur, summique ferit laquearia tecti.*

VIRG. *Æn.*  
viii. 22.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER VIII Of Idlenesse

As trembling light reflected from the Sunne,  
Or radiant Moone on water-fild brasse lavers,  
Flies over all, in aire unpraised soone,  
Strikes house-top beames, betwixt both strangely wavers.

And there is no folly, or extravagant raving, they produce  
not in that agitation.

HOR. *Art.*  
*Poet.* vii.

— *veluti ægri somnia, vanæ*  
*Finguntur species.*  
Like sicke mens dreames, that feigne  
Imaginations vaine.

The minde that hath no fixed bound, will easily loose it  
selfe: For, as we say, 'To be everie where, is to be no  
where.'

MART. vii.  
*Epig.* 72, 6.

*Quisquis ubique habitat, Maxime, nusquam habitat.*  
Good sir, he that dwels every where,  
No where can say, that he dwells there.

It is not long since I retired my selfe unto mine owne  
house, with full purpose, as much as lay in me, not to trouble  
my selfe with any businesse, but solitarily and quietly to  
weare out the remainder of my well-nigh-spent life; where  
me thought I could doe my spirit no greater favour, than to  
give him the full scope of idlenesse, and entertaine him as he  
best pleased, and withall, to settle him-selfe as he best liked:  
which I hoped he might now, being by time become more  
setled and ripe, accomplish very easily: but I finde,

LUCAN, iv.  
704.

*Variam semper dant otia mentem.*  
Evermore idlenesse,  
Doth wavering mindes addresse.

That contrariwise playing the skittish and loose-broken  
jade, he takes a hundred times more cariere and libertie unto  
himselfe, than hee did for others; and begets in me so many  
extravagant Chimeraes, and fantastick monsters, so order-  
lesse, and without any reason, one hudling upon an other,  
that at leasure to view the foolishnesse and monstrous  
strangenesse of them, I have begun to keepe a register  
of them, hoping, if I live, one day to make him  
ashamed, and blush at himselfe.



# THE FIRST BOOKE

## THE NINTH CHAPTER

### Of Lyers



THERE is no man living, whom it may lesse besee me to speake of memorie, than my selfe, for to say truth, I have none at all: and am fully perswaded that no mans can be so weake and forgetfull as mine. All other parts are in me common and vile, but touching memorie, I thinke to carrie the prise from all other, that have it weakest, nay and to gaine the reputation of it, besides the naturall want I endure (for truly considering the necessitie of it, Plato hath reason to name it 'A great and mighty Goddess'). In my countrie, if a man will imply that one hath no sense, he will say, such a one hath no memorie: and when I complaine of mine, they reprove me, and will not beleeve me, as if I accused my selfe to be mad and senselesse. They make no difference betweene memorie and wit; which is an empairing of my market: But they doe me wrong, for contrariwise it is commonly scene by experience, that excellent memories do rather accompany weake judgements. Moreover they wrong me in this (who can do nothing so well as to be a perfect friend) that the same words which accuse my infirmitie, represent ingratitude. From my affection they take hold of my memorie, and of a naturall defect, they infer a want of judgement or conscience. Some will say, he hath forgotten this entreaty or request, or that promise, he is not mindfull of his old friends, he never remembered to say, or doe, or conceale this or that, for my sake. Verily I may easily forget, but to neglect the charge my friend hath committed to my trust, I never do it. Let them beare with my infirmitie, and not conclude it to be a kind of malice; which is so contrarie an enemy to my humor. Yet am I somewhat comforted. First, because it is an evill, from which I have chieflie drawne the reason to correct a worse mischiefe, that would easily have growen upon me, that is to say, ambition; which defect is intolerable in them that meddle with worldly negotiations. For as divers like examples of natures pro-

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER IX Of Lyers

gresse, say, she hath happily strenghtned other faculties in me, according as it hath growne weaker and weaker in me, and I should easily lay downe and wire-draw my minde and judgement, upon other mens traces, without exercising their proper forces, if by the benefit of memorie, forren inventions and strange opinions were present with me. That my speech is thereby shorter: For the Magazin of Memorie is peradventure more stored with matter, than is the store-house of Invention. Had it held out with me, I had ere this wearied all my friends with prating: the subjects rousing the meane facultie I have to manage and imploy them, strengthening and wresting my discourses. It is pitie; I have assayed by the trial of some of my private friends: according as their memory hath ministred them a whole and perfect matter, who recoil their narration so farre-backe, and stuff-it with so many vaine circumstances, that if the story bee good, they smother the goodnesse of it: if bad, you must needs either curse the good fortune of their memorie, or blame the misfortune of their judgement. And it is no easie matter, being in the midst of the carriere of a discourse, to stop cunningly, to make a sudden period, and to cut it off. And there is nothing whereby the cleane strength of a horse is more knowne, than to make a readie and cleane stop. Among the skilfull I see some, that strive, but cannot stay their race. Whilst they labour to finde the point to stop their course, they stagger and falter, as men that faint through weaknesse. Above all, old men are dangerous, who have onely the memorie of things past left them, and have lost the remembrance of their repetitions. I have heard some very pleasant reports become most irkesome and tedious in the mouth of a certaine Lord, forsomuch as all the by-standers had many times beene cloyed with them. Secondly, (as said an ancient Writer) that, I doe not so much remember injuries received. I had need have a prompter as Darius had, who not to forget the wrong he had received of the Athenians, whensoever he sate downe at his table, caused a page to sing unto him, 'Sir, remember the Athenians,' and that the places or bookes which I read-over, do ever smile upon me, with some new noveltie. It is not without reason, men say, that 'he who 'hath not a good and readie memorie, should never meddle

# THE FIRST BOOKE

CHAPTER  
IX  
Of Lyers

‘with telling of lies, and feare to become a liar.’ I am not ignorant how the Grammarians make a difference betweene speaking untrue and lying; and say that to speake untruly, is to speake that which is false, but was reputed true; and that the definition of the Latin word, *mentiri*, whence the French word, *mentir*, is derived, which in English is to lie, implieth and meaneth to goe against ones conscience: and by consequence it concerneth onely those, who speake contrary to that which they know, of whom I speake. Now, these, either invent, seale, stampe and all, or else they disguise and change a true ground. When they disguise or change, if they be often put to the repetition of one thing, it is hard for them to keepe still in one path, and very strange if they lose not themselves: because the thing, as it is, having first taken up her stand in the memory, and there by the way of knowledge and witting, imprinted it-selfe, it were hard it should not represent it selfe to the imagination, displacing and supplanting falshood, which therein can have no such footing, or setled fastnesse: and that the circumstances of the first learning, still diving into the minde, should not cause it to disperse the remembrance of all false or bastardizing parts gotten together. Where they altogether invent, forsomuch as there is no certaine impression, to front their falshood, they seeme to have so much the lesser feare to mistake or forget themselves, which also notwithstanding being an airie bodie, and without hold-fast, may easily escape the memorie, except it be well assured: whereof I have often (to my no small pleasure) scene the experience, at the cost of those, who professe never to frame their speech, but as best shall fit the affaires they negotiate, and as best shall please the great men they speake unto. For the circumstances to which they will subject their credit and conscience, being subject to many changes, their speech must likewise diversifie and change with them, whence it followeth that of one selfesame subject they speak diversly, as now yellow, now gray, to one man thus, and thus to another. And if peradventure these kind of men hoard-up their so contrarie instructions, what becomes of this goodly art? Who besides, often most foolishly forget themselves, and run at random: For, what memorie shall suffice them, to remember so many different

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER IX Of Lyers

formes they have framed to one same subject? I have in my dayes seene divers that have envied the reputation of this worthy kind of wisdom, who perceive not, that if there be a reputation, there can be no effect. ‘Verily, lying is an ill and detestible vice. Nothing makes us men, and no other meanes keeps us bound one to another, but our word; knew we but the horror and waight of it, we would with fire and sword pursue and hate the same, and more justly than any other crime.’ I see all men generally busied (and that verie improperly) to punish certaine innocent errors in children, which have neither impression nor consequence, and chastice and vex them for rash and fond actions. Onely lying, and stubbornnesse somewhat more, are the faults whose birth and progresse I would have severely punished and cut off; for they grow and increase with them: and if the tongue have once gotten this ill habit, good Lord how hard, nay how impossible it is to make her leave it? whereby it ensueth, that we see many very honest men in other matters, to bee subject and enthralled to that fault. I have a good lad to my tailour, whom I never heard speak a truth; no not when it might stand him in stead of profit. If a lie had no more faces but one, as truth hath, we should be in farre better termes than we are: For, whatsoever a lier should say, we would take it in a contrarie sense. But the opposite of truth hath many-many shapes, and an indefinite field. The Pythagoreans make good to be certaine and finite, and evill to bee infinite and uncertaine. A thousand by-ways misse the marke, one onely hits the same. Surely I can never assure my selfe to come to a good end, to warrant an extreme and evident danger, by a shamelesse and solemne lie.

An ancient Father saith, ‘We are better in the companie of a knowne dogge, than in a mans societie, whose speech is unknowne to us.’ *Vt externus alieno non sit hominis vice.* ‘A stranger to a stranger is not like a man.’ And how much is a false speech lesse sociable than silence? King Francis the first, vaunted himselfe to have by this meanes brought Francis Taverna, Ambassador to Francis Sforza, Duke of Millane, to a non-plus; a man very famous for his rare eloquence, and facilitie in speech, who had beene dispatched to excuse his master, toward his Majestie, of a matter of

PLIN. *Nat.*  
*Hist.* vii. 1.



# THE FIRST BOOKE

great importance, which was this. The King to keepe ever some intelligence in Italy, whence he had lately beene expelled, but especially in the Dukedome of Millane, thought it expedient to entertaine a Gentleman of his about the Duke, in effect as his Ambassador, but in apparance as a private man; who should make shew to reside there about his particular affaires, forsomuch as the Duke, who depended much more of the Emperour (chiefely then that he was treating a mariage with his niece, daughter of the King of Denmarke, who is at this day Dowager of Loraine) could not without great prejudice unto himselfe discover to have any correspondencie and conference with us. For which commission and purpose a Gentleman of Millane, named Merveille, then serving the King in place of one of the Quiers of his Querie, was deemed fit. This man being dispatched with secret letters of credence, and instructions of an Ambassador, together with other letters of commendation to the Duke in favour of his particular affaires, as a maske and pretence of his proceedings, continued so long about the Duke, that the Emperour began to have some suspicion of him; which as we suppose was cause of what ensued, which was, that under colour of a murther committed, the Duke one night caused the said Merveille to be beheaded, having ended his processe in two dayes. Master Francis being come to the Court, fraught with a long counterfet deduction of this storie (for the King had addressed himselfe to all the Princes of Christendome, yea and to the Duke himselfe for justice, for such an outrage committed upon his servant) had one morning audience in the Kings councill-chamber: who for the foundation of his cause having established and to that end projected many goodly and colourable apparences of the fact: namely, that the Duke his Master had never taken Merveille for other than a private gentleman, and his owne subject, and who was come thither about his private busines, where he had never lived under other name, protesting he had never knowne him to be one of the Kings houshold, nor never heard of him, much lesse taken him for his Majesties Agent. But the King urging him with divers objections and demands, and charging him on every side, prest him so farre with the execution done by

CHAPTER  
IX  
Of Lyers

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER IX Of Lyers

night, and as it were by stealth, that the seely man, being much entangled and suddenly surprised, as if he would set an innocent face on the matter, answered, that for the love and respect of his Majestie, the Duke his Master would have beene very loth that such an execution should have beene done by day. Heere every man may guesse whether he were taken short or no, having tripped before so goodly a nose, as was that of our King Francis the first. Pope Iulius the second, having sent an Ambassador to the King of England to animate him against our foresaid King: the Ambassador having had audience touching his charge, and the King in his answer urging and insisting upon the difficultie he found and foresaw in levying such convenient forces, as should be required to withstand so mightie, and set upon so puisant a King, and alleaging certaine pertinent reasons: The Ambassador fondly and unfitly replied, that himselfe had long before maturely considered them, and had told the Pope of them. By which answer so farre from his proposition (which was with all speed, and without more circumstances to undertake and undergoe a dangerous warre) the King of England tooke hold of the first argument which in effect he afterward found true, which was, that the said Ambassador, in his owne particular intent, was more affected to the French side, whereof advertising his Master, his goods were all confiscate, himselfe disgraced, and he very hardly escaped with life.

## THE TENTH CHAPTER

Of readie or slow speech.

*Onc ne furen à tous toutes graces donnees.*

‘All Gods good graces are not gone

‘To all, or of all any one.’



SO doe we see that in the gift of eloquence, some have such a facility and promptitude, and that which we call utterance, so easie and at command, that at all assaies, and upon everie occasion, they are ready and provided; and others more slow, never speake any thing except much

# THE FIRST BOOKE

laboured and premeditated. As Ladies and daintie Dames are taught rules to take recreations and bodily exercises, according to the advantage of what they have fairest about them. If I were to give the like counsel, in those two different advantages of eloquence wherof Preachers and pleading-lawiers of our age seeme to make profession; the slow speaker in mine opinion should be the better preacher, and the other the better lawier. Forsomuch as charge of the first allowes him as much leisure as he pleaseth to prepare himselfe; moreover his carriere continueth still in one kinde without interruption: whereas the Lawyers occasions urging him still upon any accident to be ready to enter the lists: and the unexpected replies and answers of his adverse partie, do often divert him from his purpose, wher he is enforced to take a new course. Yet is it, that at the last enterview which was at Marsailles betweene Pope Clement the seventh, and Francis the first, our King, it hapned cleane contrarie, where Monsieur Poyet, a man of chiefe reputation, and all dayes of his life brought up to plead at the bar, whose charge being to make an Oration before the Pope, and having long time before premeditated and con'd the same by roat, yea, and as some report, brought it with him ready penned from Paris; the very same day it should have beene pronounced; the Pope suspecting he might haply speake something, might offend the other Princes Ambassadors, that were about him, sent the argument, which he at that time & place thought fittest to be treated of, to the King, but by fortune cleane contrarie to that which Poyet, had so much studied for: So that his Oration was altogether frustrate, and he must presently frame another. But he perceiving himselfe unable for it, the Cardinall Bellay was faine to supply his place and take that charge upon him. The Lawyers charge is much harder than the Preachers: (yet in mine opinion) shall we find more passable Lawyers than commendable Preachers, at least in France. It seemeth to be more proper to the mind, to have her operation ready and sudden, and more incident to the judgement, to have it slow and considerate. But who remaineth mute, if he have no leisure to prepare himselfe, and he likewise to whom leisure giveth no advantage to say

CHAPTER  
X  
Of readie or  
slow speech



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER

X

Of readie or  
slow speech

better, are both in one selfe degree of strangenesse. It is reported that Severus Cassius spake better extempore, and without premeditation. That he was more beholding to fortune, than to his diligence; that to be interrupted in his speech redounded to his profit: and that his adversaries feared to urge him, lest his sudden anger should redouble his eloquence. I know this condition of nature by experience, which cannot abide a vehement and laborious premeditation: except it hold a free, a voluntarie, and selfe pleasing course, it can never come to a good end. We commonly say of some compositions, that they smell of the oile, and of the lampe, by reason of a certaine harshnesse, and rudenesse, which long plodding labour imprints in them that be much elaborated. But besides the care of well-doing, and the contention of the minde, overstretched to her enterprise, doth breake and impeach the same; even as it hapneth unto water, which being closely pent in, through it's owne violence and abundance, can not finde issue at an open gullet. In this condition of nature, whereof I now speake, this also is joyned unto it, that it desireth not to be pricked forward by these strong passions, as the anger of Cassius (for that motion would be over-rude) it ought not to be violently shaken, but yeeldingly solicited: it desireth to be rouzed and prickt forward by strange occasions, both present and casuall. If it goe all alone, it doth but languish and loyter behinde: agitation is her life and grace. I cannot well containe my selfe in mine own possession and disposition, chance hath more interest in it than my selfe; occasion, company, yea the change of my voice, drawes more from my minde than I can finde therein, when by my selfe I second and endeavor to employ the same. My words likewise are better than my writings, if choice may be had in so worthlesse things. This also hapneth unto me, that where I seeke my selfe, I finde not my selfe: and I finde my selfe more by chance, than by the search of mine owne judgement. I shall perhaps have cast foorth some suttletie in writing, haply dull and harsh for another, but smooth and curious for my selfe. Let us leave all these complements and quaintnesse. That is spoken by everie man, according to his owne strength. I have so lost it, that I wot not what I would have said, and strangers

# THE FIRST BOOKE

have sometimes found it before me. Had I alwayes a razor CHAPTER  
about me, where that hapneth, I should cleane raze my selfe X  
out. Fortune may at some other time make the light Of readie or  
thereof appeare brighter unto me, than that of mid- slow speech  
day, and will make mee wonder at mine owne  
faltring or sticking in the myre.

## THE ELEVENTH CHAPTER

### Of Prognostications.



touching Oracles it is very certaine, that  
long-before the comming of our Saviour  
Jesus Christ, they had begun to lose their  
credit: for we see that Cicero laboureth  
to finde the cause of their declination:  
and these be his words: *Cur isto modo* Cic. *Divin.* ii.  
*jam oracula Delphis non eduntur non modo*  
*nostra ætate, sed jamdiu, ut nihil possit*  
*esse contemptius?* ‘Why in like sort are not Oracles now  
‘uttered, not onely in our times, but a good while since, so as  
‘now nothing can be more contemptible?’ But as for other  
Prognostikes, that were drawne from the anatomie of beasts in  
sacrifice, to which Plato doth in some sort ascribe the naturall  
constitution of the internall members of them, of the scraping  
of chickins, of the flight of birds, *Aves quasdam rerum* Id. *Nat. Deor.*  
*augurandarum causa natas esse putamus.* ‘We are of  
‘opinion, certain birds were even bred to prognosticate some  
‘things; of thunders, of turnings and backe-recourse of rivers.’  
*Multa cernunt aruspices: multa augures provident: multa* Id. *Ib.* ii.  
*oraculis declarantur: multa vaticinationibus: multa somnijs:*  
*multa portentis.* ‘Soothsayers see much: bird-prophets fore-  
‘see as much: much is foretold by Oracles; much by pro-  
‘phesies; much by portentuous signes,’ and others upon  
which antiquitie grounded most of their enterprises, as well  
publike as private: our religion hath abolished them. And  
albeit there remaine yet amongst us some meanes of divina-  
tion in the starres, in spirits, in shapes of the body, in  
dreames, and elsewhere a notable example of the mad and  
fond curiositie of our nature, ammusing it selfe to preoccupate

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XI  
Of Prognostications

future things, as if it had not enough to doe to digest the present.

—*cur hanc tibi rector Olympi*

LUCAN, ii. 4.

*Sollicitis visum mortalibus addere curam,  
Noscant venturas ut dira per omnia clades ?  
Sit subitum quodcunque paras, sit cæca futuri  
Mens hominum fati, liceat sperare timenti.*

Why pleas'd it thee, thou ruler of the spheares,  
To adde this care to mortals care-clog'd minde,  
That they their miserie know ere it appeares ?  
Let thy drifts sudden come ; let men be blinde  
T'wards future fate : oh let him hope that feares.

CIC. *Nat.  
Deor.* iii.

*Ne utile quidem est scire quid futurum sit : Miserum est enim nihil proficientem angere.* 'It is not so much as profitable  
' for us, to know what is to come, for it is a miserable thing,  
' a man should fret and be vexed, and do no good.' Yet is  
it of much lesse authoritie, loe here wherefore the example of  
Francis Marquis of Saluzzo, hath seemed remarkable unto  
me : who being Lievtenant General unto Francis our King,  
and over all his forces, which he then had beyond the Moun-  
taines in Italie, a man highly favoured in al our court, and  
otherwise infinitly beholding to the King for that very  
Marquisate, which his brother had forfeited : and having no  
occasion to doe it, yea and his minde and affections contra-  
dicting the same, suffered himselfe to be frighted and deluded  
(as it hath since been manifestly prooved) by the fond prog-  
nostications, which then throughout all Europe were given  
out to the advantage of the Emperor Charles the fift, and to  
our prejudice and disadvantage (but specially in Italy, where  
these foolish prædictions had so much possessed the Italians,  
that in Rome were laid great wagers, and much money given  
out upon the exchange, that we should utterly be overthrowne)  
that after he had much condoled, yea and complained with  
his secret friends, the unavoidable miseries which he foresaw  
prepared by the fates against the Crowne of France, and the  
many friends he had there, he unkindly revolted, and became  
a turne-cote on the Emperors side, to his intolerable losse  
and destruction, notwithstanding all the constellations then  
reigning. But was drawne unto it as a man encompassed and  
beset by divers passions ; for having both strong castles, and  
all maner of munition and strength in his owne hands, the

# THE FIRST BOOKE

enemies armie under Antonio Leva about three paces from him, and we nothing mistrusting him, it was in his power to do worse than he did. For notwithstanding his treason, we lost neither man nor towne, except Fossan, which long after was by us stoutly contested and defended.

CHAPTER  
XI  
Of Prognostications

*Prudens futuri temporis exitum  
Caliginosâ nocte premit Deus,  
Ridétque, si mortalis ultra  
Fas trepidat.*

HOR. iii. *Od.*  
xxix. 29.

Our wise God hides in pitch-darke night  
Of future time th' event decreed,  
And laughes at man, if man (affright)  
Feare more than he to feare hath need.

*Ille potens sui  
Lætusque deget, cui licet in diem  
Dixisse, vixi, cras vel atrâ  
Nube polum pater occupato,  
Vel sole puro.*

41.

He of himselfe lives merily,  
Who each day, I have liv'd, can say,  
Tomorrow let God charge the skie  
With darke clouds, or faire sun-shine-ray.

*Lætus in præsens animus, quod ultra est,  
Oderit curare.*

IB. ii. *Od.* xvi.  
25.

For present time a mery mind  
Hates to respect what is behind.

And those which take this word in a contrary sense are in the wrong. *Ista sic reciprocantur, ut et si divinatio sit, dii sint, et si dii sint, sit divinatio.* 'This consequence is so reciprocal, as if there be any divination, there are Gods: and if there be Gods, there is divination.' Much more wisely Pacuvius.

*Nam istis qui linguam avium intelligunt,  
Plusque ex alieno jecore sapiunt, quàm ex suo,  
Magis audiendum, quàm auscultandum censeo.*

*Ib. f. Pac.*

Who understand what language birds expresse,  
By their owne, than beasts-livers knowing lesse,  
They may be heard, not hearkned to, I guesse.

This so famous art of divination of the Tuskanes grew thus. A husband-man digging very deepe into the ground, with his plough-share, saw Tages, a demy-God appeare out of



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XI Of Prognostications

it, with an infantine face, yet fraught with an aged-like wisdom. All men ran to see him, and both his words and knowledge were for many ages after remembred, and collected, containing the principles and meanes of this art. An of-spring sutable to her progresse. I would rather direct affaires by the chance of dice, than by such frivolous dreames. And truly in all common-wealths, men have ever ascribed much authoritie unto lot. Plato in the policie which he imagineth by discretion, ascribeth the deciding of many important effects unto it, and amongst other things would have marriages betweene the good to bee contrived by lot. And giveth so large privileges unto this casuall election, that he appoints the children proceeding from them to bee brought up in the countrie ; and those borne of the bad to be banished and sent abroad. Notwithstanding if any of those so exiled shall by fortune happen, whilst he is growing, to show some good hope of him-selfe, that he may be revoked and sent-for backe, and such amongst the first as shall in their youth give small hope of future good to be banished. I see some that studie, plod, and glosse their Almanackes, and in all accidents alleage their authoritie. A man were as good to say, they must needs speake truth and lies. *Quis est enim qui totum diem jaculans, non aliquando conlineet ?* ‘For who is he that, shooting all day, sometimes hits not the white ?’ I thinke not the better of them, though what they say proove sometimes true. It were more certaine, if there were either a rule or a truth to lie ever. Seeing no man recordeth their fables, because they are ordinarie and infinit; and their predictions are made to be of credit, because they are rare, incredible and prodigious. So answered Diagoras surnamed the Atheist (being in Samothrace) to him, who in shewing him divers vowes and offrings hanging in the Temple, brought thither by such as had escaped shipwracke, said thus unto him: ‘You that thinke the Gods to have no care of humane things, what say you by so many men saved by their grace and helpe ?’ ‘Thus is it done,’ answered he: ‘Those which were drowned farre exceeding their number, are not here set-forth.’ Cicero saith, ‘That among all other Philosophers that have avowed and acknowledged the Gods, onely Xenophanes the Colophonian hath gone about to root out all maner of divination.’

# THE FIRST BOOKE

CHAPTER  
XI  
Of Prognostications

It is so much the lesse to be wondred at, if at any time we have seene some of our Princes mindes to their great damage, relie upon such like vanities. I would to God, I had with mine owne eyes seene those two wonders, mentioned in the booke of Joachin the Abbat of Calabria, who foretold all the Popes that should ensue, together with their names and shapes : And that of Leo the Emperor, who fore-spake all the Emperors and Patriarkes of Greece. This have I seene with mine owne eyes, that in publike confusions, men amazed at their owne fortune, give themselves head-long, as it were to all maner of superstition, to search in heaven the causes and ancient threats of their ill-lucke ; and in my time are so strangely successfull therein, as they have perswaded me, that it is an ammusung of sharpe and idle wits, that such as are inured to this subtiltie, by folding and unfolding them, may in all other writings be capable to finde out what they seeke-after. But above all, their dark, ambiguous, fantasticall, and propheticall gibrish, mends the matter much, to which their authors never give a plaine sense, that posterity may apply what meaning and construction it shall please unto it. The *Dæmon* of Socrates was peradventure a certaine impulsion or will, which without the advice of his discourse presented it selfe unto him. In a minde so well purified, and by continuall exercise of wisdom and vertue so wel prepared, as his was, it is likely, his inclinations (though rash and inconsiderate) were ever of great moment, and worthie to be followed. Every man feeleth in himselfe some image of such agitations, of a prompt, vehement, and casuall opinion. It is in me to give them some authoritie, that affoord so little to our wisdom. And I have had some, equally weake in reason, and violent in perswasion and disswasion (which was more ordinarie to Socrates) by which I have so happily and profitably suffered my selfe to be transported, as they might perhaps be thought to containe some matter of divine inspiration.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## THE TWELFTH CHAPTER

### Of Constancie.



THE law of resolution and constancie implieth not, we should not, as much as lieth in our power shelter our selves from the mischiefes and inconveniences that threaten us, nor by consequence feare, they should surprise us. Contrariwise, all honest meanes for a man to warrant himselfe from evils are not onely tolerable, but commendable. And the part of constancie is chiefly acted, in firmly bearing the inconveniences, against which no remedie is to be found. So that, there is no nimblenesse of bodie, nor wealding of hand-weapons, that we will reject, if it may in any sort defend us from the blow, meant at us. Many most warlike nations in their conflicts and fights, used retreating and flight as a principall advantage, and shewed their backs to their enemy much more dangerously than their faces. The Turkes at this day retaine something of that humour. And Socrates in Plato doth mocke at Laches, because he had defined fortitude, to keepe herselfe steadie in her rancke against her enemies; 'What,' saith hee, 'were it ' then cowardise to beat them in giving them place?' And alleageth Homer against him, who commendeth in Æneas his skill in flying and giving ground. And because Laches being better advised, avoweth that custome to be amongst the Scythians, and generally amongst all horsemen, he alleageth further unto him the example of the Lacedemonian footmen (a nation above all other used to fight on foot) who in the battell of Plateæ, unable to open and to put to rowt the Persian Phalanx, advised themselves to scatter and put themselves backe, that so by the opinion of their flight, they might if they should pursue them, rush in upon them, and put that so combined-masse to rout. By which meanes they gained the victorie. Touching the Scythians, it is reported, that when Darius went to subdue them, he sent their King many reprochfull speeches, for so much as hee ever saw him retire and give ground before him, and to avoid the maine



# THE FIRST BOOKE

battell. To whom Indathirseze (for so was his name) answered, CHAPTER  
that, ‘They did it not for feare of him, nor any other man XII  
‘living, but that it was the fashion of his nation to march Of Constance  
‘thus: as having neither cities, nor houses, nor manured land  
‘to defend, or to feare their enemies should reape any com-  
‘moditie by them.’ But if hee had so great a desire to feed on  
them, he might draw neerer to view the place of their ancient  
Sepulchers, and there hee should meet with whom to speake  
his belly-full. Notwithstanding when a man is once within  
reach of cannon-shot, and as it were point-blanke before  
them, as the fortune of warre doth diverse times bring men  
unto, it ill beseemeth a resolute minde to start-aside, or be  
daunted at the threat of a shot, because by the violence and  
suddenness thereof wee deeme it inevitable: and there are  
some, who by lifting up of a hand, or stooping their head,  
have sometimes given their fellowes cause of laughter: yet  
have we seene, that in the voyage, the Emperour Charles the  
fifth made against us in Provence, the Marquis of Guasto,  
being gone out to survey the citie of Arles, and shewne him-  
selfe out of a winde-mill, under colour of which he was come  
somewhat neere the Towne, he was discovered by the Lord of  
Bonevall, and the Seneshall of Agenois, who were walking  
upon the Theatre Aux arenes (so called in French because it  
is full of sand) who shewing him to the Lord of Villiers,  
Commissarie of the Artillerie, hee mounted a culverin so  
levell, that had not the Marquis perceived the fire, and so  
started aside, it was constantly affirmed, hee had beene shot  
through the body. Likewise not many yeeres before, Lorence  
of Medicis, Duke of Vrbino, and father to the Queene-mother  
of France, besieging Mondolphe, a place in Italie, in the  
province name Vicariate, seeing fire given to a piece that  
stood upright upon him, stooped his head, and well befell  
him that he plaide the ducke, for otherwise the bullet, which  
went right over, and within a little of his head, had doubt-  
lesse shot him through the paunch. But to say truth, I will  
never thinke these motions were made with discourse, for  
what judgement can you give of an aime, either high or low  
in a matter so sudden? It may rather be thought that for-  
tune favoured their feare: and which an other time might as  
well bee a meane to make them fall into the cannons-mouth,

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XII  
Of Constancie

as to avoid the same. I cannot chuse, if the cracke of a musket doe suddenly streeke mine eares, in a place where I least looke for it, but I must needs start at-it ; which I have seene happen to men of better sort than my selfe. Nor doe the Stoickes meane, that the Soule of their wisest man in any sort resist the first visions and sudden fantasies, that surprise the same : but rather consent that, as it were unto a naturall subjection, he yeelds and shrinks unto the loud clattering and roare of heaven, or of some violent downefall ; for example-sake, unto palenesse, and contraction. So likewise in other passions, alwayes provided, his opinion remaines safe and whole, and the situation of his reason, admit no tainting or alteration whatsoever : and hee no whit consent to his fright and sufferance. Touching the first part ; the same hapneth to him, that is not wise, but farre otherwise concerning the second. For the impression of passions doth not remaine superficiall in him : but rather penetrates even into the secret of reason, infecting and corrupting the same. He judgeth according to them, and conformeth himselfe to them. Consider precisely the state of the wise Stoicke :

VIRG. *Æn.* iv.  
449.

*Mens immota manet, lachrymæ voluntur inanes.*  
His minde doth firme remaine,  
Teares are distill'd in vaine.

The wise Peripatetike doth not exempt himselfe from perturbations of the mind, but doth moderate them.

## THE THIRTEENTH CHAPTER

### Of Ceremonies in the enterview of Kings



HERE is no subject so vaine, that deserveth not a place in this rapsodie. It were a notable discourtesie unto our common rules, both towards an equall, but more toward a great person, not to meete with you in your house, if he have once warned you that he will come: And Margaret Quecene of Navarre, was wont to say to this purpose, 'That 'it was a kinde of incivilitie in a gentleman, to depart 'from his house, as the fashion is, to meet with him that

# THE FIRST BOOKE

‘is comming to him, how worthy soever he be: and that  
‘it more agreeth with civilitie and respect, to stay for him  
‘at home, and there to entertaine him: except it were  
‘for feare the stranger should misse his way: and that it  
‘sufficeth to companie and wait upon him, when he is going  
‘away againe.’ As for me, I oftentimes forget both these  
vaine offices; as one that endevoureth to abolish all maner  
of ceremonies in my house. Some will be offended at it,  
what can I doe withall? I had rather offend a stranger once,  
then myeselfe everie day; for it were a continuall subjection.  
To what end doe men avoid the servitude of Courts, and  
entertaine the same in their owne houses? Moreover it is a  
common rule in all assemblies, that hee who is the meaner  
man, commeth first to the place appointed, forsomuch as it  
belongs to the better man to be staid-for, and waited upon  
by the other. Neverthelesse we saw that at the interview,  
prepared at Merceilles betweene Pope Clement the seventh,  
and Francis the first, King of France, the King having  
appointed all necessarie preparations, went him-selfe out of  
the Towne, and gave the Pope two or three dayes leasure, to  
make his entrie into it, and to refresh himselfe, before he  
would come to meet him there. Likewise at the meeting of  
the said Pope with the Emperour at Bologna, the Emperour  
gave the Pope advantage and leasure to be first there, and  
afterward came himselfe. It is (say they) an ordinarie cere-  
monie at enterparlies betweene such Princes, that the better  
man should ever come first to the place appointed; yea  
before him in whose countrey the assembly is: and they take  
it in this sence, that it is, because this complement should  
testifie, he is the better man, whom the meaner goeth to  
seeke, and that hee sueth unto him. Not onely each coun-  
trei, but every Citie, yea and every vocation hath his owne  
particular decorum. I have very carefully beene brought up  
in mine infancie, and have lived in verie good company, be-  
cause I would not bee ignorant of the good maners of our  
countrey of France, and I am perswaded I might keepe a  
schoole of them. I love to follow them, but not so cowardly,  
as my life remaine thereby in subjection. They have some  
painfull formes in them, which if a man forget by discretion,  
and not by errour, hee shall nowhit bee disgraced. I have

CHAPTER  
XIII  
Of Ceremo-  
nies in the  
enterview of  
Kings

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XIII  
Of Ceremo-  
nies in the  
enterview of  
Kings

often seene men proove unmanerly by too much maners, and importunate by over-much curtesie. The knowledge of entertainment is otherwise a profitable knowledge. It is, as grace and beautie are, the reconciler of the first accoastings of society and familiarity: and by consequence, it openeth the entrance to instruct us by the example of others, and to exploit and produce our example, if it have any instructing or communicable thing in it.

## THE FOURTEENTH CHAPTER

Men are punished by too-much opiniating themselves in a place without reason



VALOUR hath his limits, as other vertues have: which if a man out-go, hee shall find himselfe in the traine of vice: in such sort, that unlesse a man know their right bounds, which in truth are not on a sudden, easily hit upon, he may fall into rashnesse, obstinacie, and folly. For this consideration grew the custome wee hold in warres, to punish, and that with death, those who wilfully opinate themselves to defend a place, which by the rules of warre, cannot be kept. Otherwise upon hope of impunitie, there should bee no cottage, that might not entertaine an Armie. The Lord Constable Momorancie at the siege of Pavia, having beene appointed to passe over the river Tesine, and to quarter himselfe in the suburbs of Saint Antonie, being impeached by a tower, that stood at the end of the bridge, and which obstinately would needs hold out, yea and to be battered, caused all those that were with-in it, to be hanged. The same man afterward, accompanying my Lord the Dolphin of France in his journey beyond the Alpes, having by force taken the Castle of Villanc, and all those that were within the same, having by the furie of the Souldiers bin put to the sword, except the Captaine, and his Ancient, for the same reason, caused them both to be hanged and strangled: As did also, Captaine Martin du Bellay, the Governour of Turin, in the same countrey, the Captaine of



# THE FIRST BOOKE

Saint Bony: all the rest of his men having beene massacred at the taking of the place. But for somuch as the judgement of the strength or weakenesse of the place, is taken by the estimate and counterpoise of the forces that assaile it (for som man might justly opinionate himselfe against two culverins, that wold play the mad-man to expect thirtie cannons) where also the greatnesse of the Prince conquering must be considered, his reputation, and the respect that is due unto him: there is danger a man should somewhat bend the ballance on that side. By which termes it hapneth, that some have so great an opinion of themselves, and their meanes, and deeming it unreasonable, any thing should be worthie to make head against them, that so long as their fortune continueth, they overpasse what hill or difficultie soever they finde to withstand or resist them: As is seene by the formes of sommonings and challenges, that the Princes of the East, and their successors yet remaining have in use, so fierce, so haughtie, and so full of a barbarous kinde of commandement. And in those places where the Portugales abated the pride of the Indians, they found some states observing this universall and inviolable law, that what enemie soever he be, that is overcome by the King in person, or by his Lieutenant, is exempted from all composition of ransome or mercie. So above all, a man who is able should take heed, lest he fall into the hands of an enemie-judge, that is victorious and armed.

CHAPTER  
XIV

Men are punished by too much opiniating themselves in a place without reason

## THE FIFTEENTH CHAPTER

### Of the punishment of cowardise



HAVE heretofore heard a Prince, who was a very great Captaine, hold opinion, that a souldier might not for cowardise of heart be condemned to death: who sitting at his table heard report of the Lord of Vervins sentence, who for yeelding up of Bolleyn, was doomed to lose his head. Verily there is reason a man should make

a difference between faults proceeding from our weaknesse,

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XV  
Of the punish-  
ment of cow-  
ardise

and those that grow from our malice. For in the latter we are directly banded against the rules of reason, which nature hath imprinted in us; and in the former it seemeth, we may call the same nature, as a warrant, because it hath left us in such imperfection and defect. So as divers nations have judged, that no man should blame us for any thing we doe against our conscience. And the opinion of those which condemne heretikes and miscreants unto capitall punishments, is partly grounded upon this rule: and the same which establisheth, that a Judge or an advocate may not bee called to account for any man committed in their charge through oversight or ignorance. But touching cowardise, it is certain, the common fashion is, to punish the same with ignominie and shame. And some hold that this rule was first put in practice by the Law-giver Charondas, and that before him the lawes of Greece were wont to punish those with death, who for feare did run away from a Battell: where hee onely ordained, that for three dayes together, clad in womens attire, they should be made to sit in the marketplace: hoping yet to have some service at their hands, and by meanes of this reproch, they might recover their courage againe. *Suffundere malis hominis sanguinem quàm effundere*: 'Rather move a mans blood to blush in his face, than remove it by bleeding from his body.'

It appeareth also that the Roman lawes did in former times punish such as had run away, by death. For Ammianus Marcellinus reporteth, that Iulian the Emperor condemned ten of his Souldiers, who in a charge against the Parthians, had but turned their backs from it; first to be degraded, and then to suffer death, as he saith, according to the ancient lawes, who neverthelesse, condemneth others for a like fault, under the ensigne of bag and baggage, to be kept amongst the common prisoners. The sharp punishment of the Romans against those Souldiers that escaped from Cannæ: and in the same warre against those that accompanied Cn. Fulvius in his defeat, reached not unto death, yet may a man feare, such open shame may make them despaire, and not only prove faint and cold friends, but cruell and sharpe enemies. In the time of our forefathers, the Lord of Franget, Whilom Lieutenant of the Marshall of Chastillions



# THE FIRST BOOKE

company, having by the Marshall of Chabanes beene placed Governor of Fontarabie, in stead of the Earle of Lude, and having yeelded the same unto the Spaniards, was condemned to be degraded of all Nobilitie, and not onely himselfe, but all his succeeding posteritie declared villains and clownes, taxable and incapable to beare armes; which severe sentence was put in execution at Lyons. The like punishment did afterward all the Gentlemen suffer, that were within Guise, when the Earle of Nansaw entred the towne: and others since. Neverthelesse if there were so grosse an ignorance, and so apparant cowardize, as that it should exceed all ordinary, it were reason it should be taken for a sufficient proofe of inexcusable treacherie, and knaverie, and for such to be punished.

CHAPTER  
XV  
Of the punishment of cowardise

## THE SIXTEENTH CHAPTER

A tricke of certaine Ambassadors.



N all my travels I did ever observe this custome, that is, alwaies to learne something by the communication of others (which is one of the best schooles that may be) to reduce those I confer withall, to speake of that wherein they are most conversant and skilfull.

*Basti al nochiero ragionare de' venti,  
Al bifolco de' tori, e le sue piaghe  
Conti il guerrier, conti il pastor gl' armenti.*

Sailers of windes plow-men of beasts take keepe,  
Let Souldiers count their wounds, shepherds their sheepe.

Idem PROPERT.  
ii. El. i. 43.

For commonly we see the contrary, that many chuse rather to discourse of any other trade than their owne; supposing it to be so much new reputation gotten: witnes the quip Archidamus gave Periander, saying that he fosooke the credit of a good Physitian, to become a paltry Poet. Note but how Cæsar displaieth his invention at large, when he would have us conceive his inventions how to build bridges,

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XVI  
A tricke of  
certaine Ambassadors

and devices, how to frame other war-like engins; and in respect of that how close and succinct he writes, when he speaketh of the offices belonging to his profession, of his valour, and of the conduct of his war-fare. His exploits prove him a most excellent Captaine, but he would be known for a skilfull Ingenier, a quality somewhat strange in him. Dionysius the elder was a very great chieftaine and Leader in warre, as a thing best fitting his fortune: but he greatly laboured by meanes of Poetry, to assume high commendation unto himselfe, howbeit he had but little skill in it. A certaine Lawier was not long since brought to see a study, stored with all manner of bookes, both of his owne, and of all other faculties, wherein he found no occasion to entertaine himselfe withall, but like a fond cunning clarke earnestly busied himselfe to glosse and censure a fence or barricado, placed over the screw of the study, which a hundred Captaines and Souldiers see everie day, without observing or taking offence at them.

HOR. i. *Epist.*  
xiv. 43.

*Optat ephippia bos piger, optat arare caballus.*

The Oxe would trappings weare,  
The Horse, ploughs-yoake would beare.

By this course you never come to perfection, or bring any thing to good passe. Thus must a man endeavour to induce the Architect, the Painter, the Shoomaker to speake of their owne trade, and so of the rest, every man in his vocation. And to this purpose am I wont, in reading of histories (which is the subject of most men) to consider who are the writers: If they be such as professe nothing but bare learning, the chiefe thing I learne in them, is their style and language: if Physitians, I beleeeve them in whatsoever they shall report concerning the temperatenesse of the aire, the health and complexion of Princes, or of hurts and infirmities: If Lawiers, we should observe the controversies of rights, titles, and pretenses of lawes and customes, the establishments of policies, and such like things: If Divines, we may note the affaires of the Church, the Ecclesiasticall censures, dispensations, cases of conscience, and marriages: If Courtiers, manners, complements, ceremonies, and entertainments: If Warriors, what belongs unto their charge, but

# THE FIRST BOOKE

chiefly the managing and conduct of the atchievements or exploits wherein they have been themselves in person: If Ambassadors, the negotiations, intelligences, practices, policies, and manner how to direct, complot, and conduct them. And therefore what in another Writer I should peradventure have cursorie passed over, I have with some advisednesse considered and marked the same in the historie of the Lord of Langey, a man most expert and intelligent in such matters: which is, that after he had exactly set downe and declared those glorious, and farre-fetcht remonstrances of the Emperor Charles the fifth made in the consistorie of Rome, in the presence of the Bishop of Mascon, and the Lord of Velly, our Ambassadors; wherein he entermixed many bitter and outrageous words against us; and amongst others, that if his Captaines and Souldiers were not of much more faithfulnessse and sufficiencie in the art of warre than our Kings, he would forthwith tie a rope about his necke, and goe aske him mercy: whereof he seemed to beleieve something: for afterward whilest he lived, he chanced twice or thrice to utter the verie same words. Moreover, that he had challenged the King to fight with him, man to man in his shirt, with Rapier and Dagger in a boat. The said Lord of Langey, following his storie, addeth that the said Ambassadors making a dispatch of what had passed unto the king, dissembled the chieftest part unto him, yea and concealed the two precedent articles from him. Now me thought it very strange, that it should lie in the power of an Ambassador to dispencc with any point, concerning the advertizements he should give unto his Master, namely of such consequence, comming from such a person, and spoken in so great an assembly, whereas me seemed it should have beene the office of a trustie servant, truly and exactly to set downe things as they were, and in what manner they had succeeded: to the end the libertie of disposing, judging and chusing, might wholly lie in the master. For to alter and conceale the truth from him, for feare he should conster and take it otherwise than he ought, and lest that might provoke him to some bad resolution; and in the meanwhile to suffer him to be ignorant of his owne affaires, mee thought should rather have appertained to him that giveth the law, than to

CHAPTER  
XVI  
A tricke of  
certaine Am-  
bassadors

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XVI  
A tricke of  
certaine Am-  
bassadors

him that receiveth the same; to the Master or over-seer of the schoole, and not to him who should thinke himselfe inferior, as well in authority, as in wisdome and good counsell. Howsoever it were, I would be loth be so used in mine owne small and particular businesse, we doe so willingly upon every slight occasion and pretence neglect and forgoe commandement, and are so farre from obeying, that we rather usurp a kinde of masterie, and free power: every man doth so naturally aspire unto liberty and authoritie, that no profit ought to be so deare unto a superiour, proceeding from those that serve him as their simple and naturall obedience. Whosoever obeyeth by discretion, and not by subjection, corrupteth and abuseth the office of commanding. And P. Crassus he whom the Romans deemed five times happy, when he was Consull in Asia, having sent a Græcian Inginer, to bring the greatest of two ship-masts before him, which he had seene in Athens, therewith to frame an engine of batterie: This man under colour of his skill, presumed to doe otherwise than he was bidden, and brought the lesser of the two masts which according to his arts reason hee deemed the fittest. Crassus having patiently heard his reasons and allegations, caused him to be well whipped; preferring the interest of true discipline, before that of the worke. On the other side a man might also consider, that this so strict obedience belongs but to precise and prefixed commandements. Ambassadors have a more scopefull and free charge, which in many points dependeth chiefly of their disposition. They doe not meerey execute, but frame and direct by their owne advice and counsell, the will of their Master. I have in my dayes seene some persons of commandement, checked and found fault withall, because they had rather obeyed the literall sense, and bare words of the Kings letters, than the occasions of the affaires they had in hand. Men of understanding and experience doe yet at this day condemne the custome of the Kings of Persia, which was to mince the instructions given to their Agents, and Lieutenants so small, that in the least accident they might have recourse to their directions and ordinances: This delay, in so farre reaching a scope of domination, having often brought great prejudice, and notable dammage unto their affaires. And Crassus



# THE FIRST BOOKE

writing unto a man of that profession, and advertizing him of the use whereto he purposed the foresaid mast; seemeth he not to enter into conference with him concerning his determination, and wish him to interpose his censure or advice of it.

CHAPTER  
XVI  
A tricke of  
certaine Am-  
bassadors

## THE SEVENTEENTH CHAPTER

### Of feare.

*Obstupui, steteruntque comæ, et vox faucibus hæsit.*

VIRG. *Æn.* ii.  
774.

I stood agast, my haire on end,  
My jaw-tide tongue no speech would lend.



AM no good Naturalist (as they say) and I know not well by what springs feare doth worke in us: but well I wot it is a strange passion: and as Physitians say, there is none doth sooner transport our judgement out of his due seat. Verily I have seene divers become mad and senselesse for feare: yea and in him, who is most settled and best resolved, it is certaine that whilest his fit continueth, it begetteth many strange dazelings, and terrible amazements in him. I omit to speake of the vulgar sort, to whom it sometimes representeth strange apparitions, as their fathers and grandfathers ghosts, risen out of their graves, and in their winding sheets: and to others it somtimes sheweth Larves, Hobgoblins, Robbin-good-fellowes, and such other Bug-beares and Chimeræ. But even amongst Souldiers, with whom it ought to have no credit at all, how often hath she changed a flocke of sheep into a troupe of armed men? Bushes and shrubs into men-at-armes and Lancers? our friends into our enemies? and a red crosse into a white? At what time the Duke of Bourbon tooke Rome, an Ancient that kept sentinell, in the borough Saint Peter, was at the first alarum surprised with such terror, that with his colours in his hand, he suddenly threw himselfe thorow the hole of a breach out of the Citie, and fell just in the midst of his enemies, supposing the way to goe straight in the

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XVII Of feare

heart of the Citie: but in the end he no sooner perceived the Duke of Burbons troupes, advancing to withstand him, imagining it to bee some sallie the Citizens made that way, hee better bethinking himselfe, turned head, and the very same way, he came out, he went into the towne againe, which was more than three hundred paces distance towards the fields. The like happened, but not so succesfully unto Capitaine Iulius his ensigne-bearer at what time Saint Paul was taken from us by the Earle of Bures, and the Lord of Reu, who was so frighted with feare, that going about to cast himselfe over the towne wals, with his Ancient in his hand, or to creepe thorow a spike-hole, he was cut in peeces by the assailants. At which siege likewise, that horror and feare is very memorable, which so did choake, seize upon, and freeze the heart of a gentleman, that having received no hurt at all, he fell downe starke dead upon the ground before the breach. The like passion rage doth sometimes possesse a whole multitude. In one of the encounters that Germanicus had with the Germanes, two mightie troupes were at one instant so frighted with feare, that both betooke themselves to their heeles, and ran away two contrary wayes, the one right to that place whence the other fled. It sometimes addeth wings unto our heeles, as unto the first named, and other times it takes the use of feet from us: as we may reade of Theophilus the Emperor, who in a battell hee lost against the Agarens, was so amazed and astonied, that he could not resolve to scape away by flight: *adèd pavor etiam auxilia formidat*: 'Feare is so afraid even of that should help.' Untill such time as Manuel, one of the chiefe leaders in his armie, having rouzed and shaken him, as it were out of a dead sleepe, said unto him, 'Sir, if you will not presently follow me, I will surely kill you, for better were it you should lose your life, than being taken prisoner, lose your Empire and all.' Then doth she shew the utmost of her power, when for her owne service, she casts us off unto valour, which it hath exacted from our duty and honor. In the first set battell, the Romans lost against Hanibal, under the Consul Sempronius, a troupe of wel-nigh ten thousand footmen, was so surprised with feare, that seeing no other way to take, nor by what other course to give their basenes



# THE FIRST BOOKE

## CHAPTER XVII Of feare

free passage, they headlong bent their flight toward the thickest and strongest squadron of their enemies, which with such furie it rowted and brake through, as it disranked, and slew a great number of the Carthaginians: purchasing a reproachfull and disgracefull flight, at the same rate it might have gained a most glorious victorie. It is feare I stand most in feare of. For, in sharpnesse it surmounteth all other accidents. What affection can be more violent and just than that of Pompeyes friends, who in his owne ship were spectators of that horrible massacre? yet is it, that the feare of the Ægyptian sailes, which began to approach them, did in such sort daunt and skare them, that some have noted, they only busied themselves to hasten the marriners, to make what speed they could, and by maine strength of oares to save themselves, untill such time, as being arrived at Tyre, and that they were free from feare, they had leasure to bethinke themselves of their late losse, and give their complaints and teares free passage, which this other stronger passion had suspended and hindred.

*Tum pavor sapientiam omnem mihi ex animo expectorat.*

Feare then unbreasts all wit,  
That in my minde did sit.

CIC. *Tusc.*  
*Qu.* iv. 8, ex  
Enn.; *De*  
*Orat.* iii.

Those who in any skirmish or sudden bickering of warre have been thoroughly skared, sore-hurt, wounded, and gored as they be, are many times the next day after, brought to charge againe. But such as have conceived a true feare of their enemies, it is hard for you to make them looke them in the face againe. Such as are in continuall feare to lose their goods, to be banished, or to be subdued, live in uncessant agonie and languor; and thereby often lose both their drinking, their eating, and their rest. Whereas the poore, the banished, and seely servants, live often as carelesly and as pleasantly as the other. And so many men, who by the impatience and urging of feare, have hanged, drowned, and headlong tumbled downe from some rocke, have plainly taught us, that feare is more importunate and intolerable than death. The Græcians acknowledge another kinde of it, which is beyond the error of our discourse: proceeding, as they say, without any apparent cause, and from an

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XVII Of feare

heavenly impulsion. Whole Nations and Armies are often seene surprised with it. Such was that, which brought so wonderfull a desolation to Carthage, where nothing was heard but lamentable out-cries, and frightfull exclamations: the inhabitants were seene desperately to runne out of their houses, as to a sudden alarum, and furiously to charge, hurt, and enter-kill one another, as if they had beene enemies come to usurpe and possesse their Citie. All things were there in a disordered confusion, and in a confused furie, untill such time as by praiers and sacrifices they had appeased the wrath of their Gods. They call it to this day, the Panike terror.

ERAS. *Chil.* ii.  
cent. x. ad. 19;  
*Chil.* iii. cent.  
vii. ad. 3.

## THE EIGHTEENTH CHAPTER

That we should not judge of our happi-  
nesse, untill after our death

OVID. *Met.*  
iii. 135.

—*scilicet ultima semper*  
*Expectanda dies homini est, dicique beatus*  
*Ante obitum nemo, supremaque funera debet.*

We must expect of man the latest day,  
Nor ere he die, he's happie, can we say.



THE very children are acquainted with the storie of Cræsus to this purpose: who being taken by Cyrus, and by him condemned to die, upon the point of his execution, cried out aloud: 'Oh Solon, 'Solon!' which words of his, being reported to Cyrus, who inquiring what he meant by them, told him, hee now at his owne cost verified the advertisement Solon had before times given him: which was, 'that no man, what cheerefull and 'blandishing countenance soever fortune shewed them, may 'rightly deeme himselfe happie, till such time as he have 'passed the last day of his life, by reason of the uncertaintie 'and vicissitude of humane things, which by a very light 'motive, and slight occasion, are often changed from one to 'another cleane contrary state and degree.' And therefore

# THE FIRST BOOKE

Agesilaus answered one that counted the King of Persia happy, because being very young, he had gotten the garland of so mightie and great a dominion: yea but said he, Priam at the same age was not unhappy. Of the Kings of Macedon, that succeeded Alexander the great, some were afterward seene to become Joyners and Scriveners at Rome: and of Tyrants of Sicilie, Schoolemasters at Corinth: One that had conquered halfe the world, and been Emperour over so many Armies, became an humble, and miserable suter to the raskally officers of a king of Ægypt: At so high a rate did that great Pompey purchase the irkesome prolonging of his life but for five or six moneths. And in our fathers daies, Lodowicke Sforze, tenth Duke of Millane, under whom the state of Italie had so long beene turmoiled and shaken, was seene to die a wretched prisoner at Loches in France, but not till he had lived and lingered ten yeares in thraldome, which was the worst of his bargaine. The fairest Queene, wife to the greatest King of Christendome, was she not lately seene to die by the hands of an executioner? Oh unworthie and barbarous crueltie! And a thousand such examples. For, it seemeth that as the sea-billowes and surging waves, rage and storme against the surly pride and stubborne height of our buildings; So are there above, certaine spirits that envie the rising prosperities and greatnesse heere below.

*Vsque adeò res humanas res abdita quædam  
Obterit, et pulchros fasces sævæque secures  
Proculcare, ac ludibrio sibi habere videtur.*

A hidden power so mens states hath out-worne  
Faire swords, fierce scepters, signes of honours borne,  
It seemes to trample and deride in scorne.

And it seemeth Fortune doth sometimes narrowly watch the last day of our life, thereby to shew her power, and in one moment to overthrow what for many yeares together she had beene erecting, and makes us crie after Laberius, *Nimirum hac die una plus vixi, mihi quam vivendum fuit.* Thus it is, 'I have lived longer by this one day, than I should.' So may that good advice of Solon be taken with reason. But forsomuch as hee is a Philosopher, with whom the favours or disfavours of fortune, and good or ill lucke have no place, and are not regarded by him; and puissances and

CHAPTER  
XVIII  
That we  
should not  
judge of our  
happinesse,  
untill after  
our death

LUCRET. v.  
1243.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XVIII

That we  
should not  
judge of our  
happinesse,  
untill after  
our death

greatnesses, and accidents of qualitie, are well nigh indif-  
ferent: I deeme it very likely he had a further reach, and  
meant that the same good fortune of our life, which de-  
pendeth of the tranquillitie and contentment of a welborne  
minde, and of the resolution and assurance of a well ordered  
soule, should never be ascribed unto man, untill he have  
beene seene play the last act of his comedie, and without  
doubt the hardest. In all the rest there may be some maske:  
either these sophisticall discourses of Philosophie are not in  
us but by countenance, or accidents that never touch us to  
the quick, give us alwaies leasure to keep our countenance  
setled. But when that last part of death, and of our selves  
comes to be acted, then no dissembling will availe, then is it  
high time to speake plaine English, and put off all vizards:  
then whatsoever the pot containeth must be shewne, be it  
good or bad, foule or cleane, wine or water.

LUCRET. iii.  
57.

*Nam veræ voces tum demum pectore ab imo  
Ejiciuntur, et eripitur persona, manet res.*

For then are sent true speeches from the heart,  
We are our selves, we leave to play a part.

Loe heere, why at this last cast, all our lives other actions  
must be tride and touched. It is the master-day, the day  
that judgeth all others: it is the day, saith an auncient  
Writer, that must judge of all my forepassed yeares. To  
death doe I referre the essay of my studies fruit. There  
shall wee see whether my discourse proceed from my heart,  
or from my mouth. I have seene divers, by their death,  
either in good or evill, give reputation to all their forepassed  
life. Scipio, father in law to Pompey, in well dying, repaired  
the ill opinion which untill that houre men had ever held of  
him. Epaminondas being demanded, which of the three he  
esteemed most, either Chabrias, or Iphicrates, or himselfe;  
'It is necessary,' said he, 'that we be seene to die, before your  
'question may well be resolved.' Verily we should steale  
much from him, if he should be weighed without the honour  
and greatnesse of his end. God hath willed it, as he pleased:  
but in my time three of the most execrable persons, that ever  
I knew in all abomination of life, and the most infamous,  
have beene seen to die very orderly and quietly, and in every



# THE FIRST BOOKE

circumstance composed even unto perfection. There are some brave and fortunate deaths. I have seene her cut the twine of some mans life, with a progresse of wonderful advancement, and with so worthie an end, even in the flowre of his growth, and spring of his youth, that in mine opinion, his ambitious and haughtie couragious designes, thought nothing so high, as might interrupt them: who without going to the place where he pretended, arived there more gloriously and worthily, than either his desire or hope aimed at. And by his fall fore-went the power and name, whither by his course he aspired. When I judge of other mens lives, I ever respect, how they have behaved themselves in their end; and my chieftest study is, I may well demeane my selfe at my last gaspe, that is to say, quietly, and constantly.

## CHAPTER XVIII

That we should not judge of our happinesse, untill after our death

## THE NINETEENTH CHAPTER

That to Philosophie, is to learne how to die



ICERO saith, that to 'Philosophie is no 'other thing, than for a man to prepare 'himselfe to death': which is the reason, that studie and contemplation doth in some sort withdraw our soule from us, and severally employ it from the body, which is a kind of apprenticeship and resemblance of death; or else it is, that all the wisdom and discourse of the world, doth in the end resolve upon this point, to teach us, not to feare to die. Truly either reason mockes us, or it only aimeth at our contentment, and in fine, bends all her travell to make us live well, and as the holy Scripture saith, 'at our ease.' All the opinions of the world conclude, that pleasure is our end, howbeit they take divers meanes unto, and for it, else would men reject them at their first comming. For, who would give care unto him, that for it's end would establish our paine and disturbance? The dissensions of philosophicall sects in this case, are verball: *Transcurramus solertissimas*

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XIX

That to Philosophie, is to learne how to die

*nugas*: 'Let us run over such over-fine fooleries, and subtile 'trifles.' There is more wilfulnesse and wrangling among them, than pertaines to a sacred profession. But what person a man undertakes to act, he doth ever therewithall personate his owne. Although they say, that in vertue it selfe, the last scope of our aime is voluptuousnes. It pleaseth me to importune their eares still with this word, which so much offends their hearing: And if it imply any chiefe pleasure or exceeding contentments, it is rather due to the assistance of vertue, than to any other supply, voluptuousnes being more strong, sinnowie, sturdie, and manly, is but more seriously voluptuous. And we should give it the name of pleasure, more favorable, sweeter, and more naturall; and not terme it vigor, from which it hath his denomination. Should this baser sensuality deserve this faire name, it should be by competencie, and not by privilege. I finde it lesse void of incommodities and crosses, than vertue. And besides that, her taste is more fleeting, momentarie, and fading, she hath her fasts, her eves, and her travels, and both sweat and blood. Furthermore she hath particularly so many wounding passions, and of so severall sorts, and so filthie and loathsome a societie waiting upon her, that shee is equivalent to penitencie. Wee are in the wrong, to thinke her incommodities serve her as a provocation, and seasoning to her sweetnes, as in nature one contrarie is vivified by another contrarie: and to say, when we come to vertue, that like successes and difficulties over-whelme it, and yeeld it austere and inaccessible. Whereas much more properly then unto voluptuousnes, they ennobled, sharpen, animate, and raise that divine and perfect pleasure, which it meditates and procureth us. Truly he is verie unworthie her acquaintance, that counter-ballanceth her cost to his fruit, and knowes neither the graces nor use of it. Those who go about to instruct us, how her pursuit is very hard and laborious, and her jovisance well pleasing and delightfull: what else tell they us, but that shee is ever unpleasant and irksome? For, what humane meane did ever attaine unto an absolute enjoying of it? The perfectest have beene content but to aspire and approach her, without ever possessing her. But they are deceived; seeing that of all the pleasures we know, the pursute of them is pleasant. The



# THE FIRST BOOKE

enterprise is perceived by the qualitie of the thing, which it hath regard unto: for it is a good portion of the effect, and consubstantiall. That happines and felicitie, which shineth in vertue, replenisheth her approaches and appurtenances, even unto the first entrance and utmost barre. Now of all the benefits of vertue, the contempt of death is the chieftest, a meane that furnisheth our life with an ease-full tranquillitie, and gives us a pure and amiable taste of it: without which every other voluptuousnes is extinguished. Loe, here the reasons why all rules encounter and agree with this article. And albeit they all leade us with a common accord to despise grieffe, povertie, and other accidentall crosses, to which mans life is subject, it is not with an equall care: as well because accidents are not of such a necessitie, for most men passe their whole life without feeling any want or povertie, and other-some without feeling any grieffe or sicknes, as Xenophilus the Musitian, who lived an hundred and six yeares in perfect and continuall health: as also if the worst happen, death may at all times, and whensoever it shall please us, cut off all other inconveniences and crosses. But as for death, it is inevitable.

*Omnes eodem cogimur, omnium  
Versatur urna, serius, ocyus  
Sors exitura, et nos in æternum  
Exilium impositura cymbæ.*

HOR. ii. *Od.*  
iii. 25.

All to one place are driv'n, of all  
Shak't is the lot-pot, where-hence shall  
Sooner or later drawne lots fall,  
And to deaths boat for aye enthrall.

And by consequence, if she make us affeard, it is a continual subject of torment, and which can no way be eased. There is no starting-hole will hide us from her, she will finde us wheresoever we are, we may as in a suspected countrie start and turne here and there: *quæ quasi saxum Tantalos* Cic. *De Fin.* i. *semper impendit*: 'Which evermore hangs like the stone over 'the head of Tantalus': Our lawes doe often condemne and send malefactors to be executed in the same place where the crime was committed: to which whilest they are going, leade them along the fairest houses, or entertaine them with the best cheere you can,

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XIX

That to Philosophie, is to  
learne how  
to die

*non Siculæ dapes  
Dulcem elaborabunt saporem :  
Non avium, citharæque cantus  
Somnum reducent.*

HOR. iii. *Od.*  
i. 18.

Not all King Denys daintie fare,  
Can pleasing taste for them prepare :  
No song of birds, no musikes sound  
Can lullabie to sleepe profound.

Doe you thinke they can take any pleasure in it? or be any thing delighted? and that the finall intent of their voiage being still before their eies, hath not altered and altogether distracted their taste from all these commodities and allurements?

CLAUD. *in*  
*Ruff.* ii. 137.

*Audit iter, numeratque dies, spatioque viarum  
Metitur vitam, torquetur peste futura.*

He heares his journey, counts his daies, so measures he  
His life by his waies length, vext with the ill shall be.

The end of our carriere is death, it is the necessarie object of our aime: if it affright us, how is it possible we should step one foot further without an ague? The remedie of the vulgar sort is, not to thinke on it. But from what brutall stupiditie may so grosse a blindness come upon him? he must be made to bridle his Asse by the taile,

LUCRET. iv.  
474.

*Qui capite ipse suo instituit vestigia retro.*

Who doth a course contrarie runne  
With his head to his course begunne.

It is no marvell if he be so often taken tripping; some doe no sooner heare the name of death spoken of, but they are afraid, yea the most part will crosse themselves, as if they heard the Devill named. And because mention is made of it in mens wils and testaments, I warrant you there is none will set his hand to them, til the Physitian have given his last doome, and utterly forsaken him. And God knowes, being then betweene such paine and feare, with what sound judgement they endure him. For so much as this syllable sounded so unpleasantly in their eares, and this voice seemed so ill-boding and unluckie, the Romans had learned to allay and dilate the same by a Periphrasis. In liew of saying, he is dead, or he hath ended his daies, they would say, he hath

# THE FIRST BOOKE

lived. So it be life, be it past or no, they are comforted : CHAPTER  
 from whom we have borrowed our phrases *quondam, alias*, or XIX  
 ‘late such a one.’ It may haply be, as the common saying is, That to Phi-  
 the time we live, is worth the mony we pay for it. I was losophie, is to  
 borne betweene eleven of the clocke and noone, the last of learne how  
 Februarie 1533, according to our computation, the yeare to die  
 beginning the first of Januarie. It is but a fortnight since  
 I was 39 yeares old. I want at least as much more. If in  
 the meane time I should trouble my thoughts with a matter  
 so farre from me, it were but folly. But what? we see both  
 young and old to leave their life after one selfe-same condi-  
 tion. No man departs otherwise from it, than if he but now  
 came to it, seeing there is no man so crazed, bedrell, or  
 decrepit, so long as he remembers Methusalem, but thinkes  
 he may yet live twentie yeares. Moreover, seely creature as  
 thou art, who hath limited the end of thy daies? Happily  
 thou presumest upon Physitians reports. Rather consider  
 the effect and experience. By the common course of things,  
 long since thou livest by extraordinarie favour. Thou hast  
 already over-past the ordinarie tearmes of common life :  
 And to prove it, remember but thy acquaintances and tell  
 me how many more of them have died before they came to  
 thy age, than have either attained or outgone the same : yea  
 and of those that through renoune have ennobled their life,  
 if thou but register them, I will lay a wager, I will finde  
 more that have died before they came to five and thirty  
 yeares, than after. It is consonant with reason and pietie,  
 to take example by the humanity of Iesus Christ, who ended  
 his humane life at three and thirtie yeares. The greatest  
 man that ever was being no more than a man, I meane  
 Alexander the great, ended his dayes, and died also of that  
 age. How many severall meanes and waies hath death to  
 surprise us !

*Quid quisque vitet, nunquam homini satis  
 Cautum est in horas.*

HOR. ii. *Od.*  
 xiii. 13.

A man can never take good heed,  
 Houerly what he may shun and speed.

I omit to speake of agues and pleurisies ; who would ever  
 have imagined, that a Duke of Brittanic should have beene

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XIX  
That to Phi-  
losophie, is to  
learne how  
to die

stified to death in a throng of people, as whilome was a neighbour of mine at Lyons, when Pope Clement made his entrance there? Hast thou not seene one of our late Kings slaine in the midst of his sports? and one of his ancestors die miserably by the chocke of an hog? Eschilus forethreatned by the fall of an house, when he stood most upon his guard, stricken dead by the fall of a Tortoise shell, which fell out of the tallants of an Eagle flying in the aire? and another choaked with the kernell of a grape? And an Emperour die by the scratch of a combe, whilest he was combing his head: And Æmylius Lepidus with hitting his foot against a doore-seele? And Aufidius with stumbling against the Consull-Chamber doore as he was going in thereat? And Cornelius Gallus the Prætor, Tigillinus Capitaine of the Romane watch, Lodowike sonne of Guido Gonzaga, Marquis of Mantua, end their daies betweene womens thighs? And of a farre worse example Speusippus the Plantonian Philosopher and one of our Popes? Poore Bebius a Judge whilest he demurreth the sute of a plaintife but for eight daies, behold his last expired; And Caius Iulius a Physitian, whilest he was annointing the eies of one of his patients, to have his owne sight closed for ever by death. And if amongst these examples, I may adde one of a brother of mine, called Capitaine Saint Martin, a man of three and twentie yeares of age, who had alreadie given good testimonie of his worth and forward valour, playing at tennis, received a blow with a ball, that hit him a little above the right eare, without apparance of any contusion, bruse, or hurt, and never sitting or resting upon it, died within six houres after of an Apoplexie, which the blow of the ball caused in him. These so frequent and ordinary examples, hapning, and being still before our eies, how is it possible for man to forgo or forget the remembrance of death? and why should it not continually seeme unto us, that shee is still ready at hand to take us by the throat? What matter is it, will you say unto me, how and in what manner it is, so long as a man doe not trouble and vex himselfe therewith? I am of this opinion, that howsoever a man may shrowd or hide himselfe from her dart, yea were it under an ox-hide, I am not the man would shrinke backe: it sufficeth me to



# THE FIRST BOOKE

live at my ease ; and the best recreation I can have, that doe I ever take ; in other matters, as little vainglorious, and exemplare as you list.

—*prætulerim delirus inersque videri,  
Dum mea delectent mala me, vel denique fallant,  
Quam sapere et ringi.*

HOR. ii. *Epi.*  
ii. 126.

CHAPTER  
XIX  
That to Philosophie, is to  
learne how  
to die

A dotard I had rather seeme, and dull,  
Sooner my faults may please make me a gull,  
Than to be wise, and beat my vexed scull.

But it is folly to thinke that way to come unto it. They come, they goe, they trot, they daunce : but no speech of death. All that is good sport. But if she be once come, and on a sudden and openly surprise, either them, their wives, their children, or their friends, what torments, what out-cries, what rage, and what despaire doth then overwhelme them ? saw you ever any thing so drooping, so changed, and so distracted ? A man must looke to it, and in better times fore-see it. And might that brutish carelesnesse lodge in the minde of a man of understanding (which I find altogether impossible) she sels us her ware at an over-deere rate : were she an enemy by mans wit to be avoided, I would advise men to borrow the weapons of cowardlinesse : but since it may not be, and that be you either a coward or a runaway, an honest or valiant man, she overtakes you,

*Nempe et fugacem persequitur virum,  
Nec parcat imbellis juvenatæ  
Poplitibus, timidoque tergo.*

ID. iii. *Od.* ii.  
14.

Shee persecutes the man that flies,  
Shee spares not weake youth to surprise,  
But on their hammes and backe turn'd plies.

And that no temper of cuirace may shield or defend you,

*Ille licet ferro cautus se condat et ære,  
Mors tamen inclusum protrahet inde caput.*

PROPERT. iii.  
*El.* xviii. 25.

Though he with yron and brasse his head empale,  
Yet death his head enclosed thence will hale.

Let us learne to stand, and combat her with a resolute minde. And being to take the greatest advantage she hath upon us from her, let us take a cleane contrary way from the common, let us remove her strangenesse from her, let us



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XIX

That to Philosophie, is to learne how to die

converse, frequent, and acquaint our selves with her, let us have nothing so much in minde as death, let us at all times and seasons, and in the ugliest manner that may be, yea with all faces shapen and represent the same unto our imagination. At the stumbling of a horse, at the fall of a stone, at the least prick with a pinne, let us presently ruminare and say with our selves, what if it were death it selfe? and thereupon let us take heart of grace, and call our wits together to confront her. Amiddest our bankets, feasts, and pleasures, let us ever have this restraint or object before us, that is, the remembrance of our condition, and let not pleasure so much mislead or transport us, that we altogether neglect or forget, how many waies, our joyes, or our feastings, be subject unto death, and by how many hold-fasts shee threatens us and them. So did the Ægyptians, who in the midst of their banquetings, and in the full of their greatest cheere, caused the anatomie of a dead man to be brought before them, as a memorandum and warning to their guests.

HOR. i. *Epi.*  
iv. 13.

*Omnem crede diem tibi diluxisse supremum,  
Grata superveniet, quæ non sperabitur hora.*

Thinke every day shines on thee as thy last,  
Welcome it will come, whereof hope was past.

It is uncertaine where death looks for us; let us expect her everie where: the premeditation of death, is a fore-thinking of libertie. He who hath learned to die, hath unlearned to serve. There is no evill in life, for him that hath well conceived, how the privation of life is no evill. To know how to die, doth free us from all subjection and constraint. Paulus Æmilius answered one, whom that miserable king of Macedon his prisoner sent to entreat him, he would not lead him in triumph, let him make that request unto him selfe. Verily, if Nature afford not some helpe, in all things, it is very hard that art and industrie should goe farre before. Of my selfe, I am not much given to melancholy, but rather to dreaming and sluggishnes. There is nothing wherewith I have ever more entertained my selfe, than with the imaginations of death, yea in the most licentious times of my age.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

*Lucundum, cum ætas florida ver ageret.*

When my age flourishing  
Did spend it's pleasant spring.

CATUL. *Eleg.*  
iv. 16.

CHAPTER  
XIX

That to Philosophie, is to  
learne how  
to die

Being amongst faire Ladies, and in earnest play, some have thought me busied, or musing with my selfe, how to digest some jealousie, or meditating on the uncertaintie of some conceived hope, when God he knowes, I was entertaining my selfe with the remembrance of some one or other, that but few daies before was taken with a burning fever, and of his sodaine end, comming from such a feast or meeting where I was my selfe, and with his head full of idle conceits, of love, and merry glee; supposing the same, either sicknes or end, to be as neere me as him.

*Iam fuerit, nec post, unquam revocare licebit.*

Now time would be, no more  
You can this time restore.

LUCR. iii. 947.

I did no more trouble my selfe or frowne at such a conceit, than at any other. It is impossible, we should not apprehend or feele some motions or startings at such imaginations at the first, and comming sodainely upon us: but doubtlesse, he that shall manage and meditate upon them with an impartiall eye, they will assuredly, in tract of time, become familiar to him: Otherwise for my part, I should be in continuall feare and agonie; for no man did ever more distrust his life, nor make lesse account of his continuance: Neither can health, which hitherto I have so long enjoied, and which so seldome hath beene crazed, lengthen my hopes, nor any sicknesse shorten them of it. At every minute me thinks I make an escape. And I uncessantly record unto my selfe, that whatsoever may be done another day, may be effected this day. Truly hazards and dangers doe little or nothing approach us at our end: And if we consider, how many more there remaine, besides this accident, which in number more than millions seeme to threaten us, and hang over us; we shall find, that be we sound or sicke, lustie or weake, at sea or at land, abroad or at home, fighting or at rest, in the midst of a battell or in our beds, she is ever alike neere unto us. *Nemo altero fragilior est, nemo in crastinum sui certior.* 'No man is weaker then other; none surer of him-

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XIX  
That to Philosophie, is to learne how to die

‘selfe (to live) till to morrow.’ Whatsoever I have to doe before death, all leasure to end the same, seemeth short unto me, yea were it but of one houre. Some body, not long since turning over my writing tables, found by chance a memoriall of something I would have done after my death : I told him (as indeed it was true,) that being but a mile from my house, and in perfect health and lustie, I had made haste to write it, because I could not assure my self I should ever come home in safety ; As one that am ever hatching of mine owne thoughts, and place them in my selfe : I am ever prepared about that which I may be : nor can death (come when she please) put me in mind of any new thing. A man should ever, as much as in him lieth, be ready bootied to take his journey, and above all things, looke he have then nothing to doe but with himselfe.

HOR. ii. *Od.*  
xvi.

*Quid brevi fortes jaculamur ævo  
Multa ?*

To aime why are we ever bold,  
At many things in so short hold ?

For then we shall have worke sufficient, without any more accrease. Some man complaineth more that death doth hinder him from the assured course of an hoped for victorie, than of death it selfe ; another cries out, he should give place to her, before he have married his daughter, or directed the course of his childrens bringing up ; another bewaileth he must forgoe his wives company : another moaneth the losse of his children the chiefest commodities of his being. I am now by meanes of the mercy of God in such a taking, that without regret or grieving at any worldly matter, I am prepared to dislodge, whensoever he shall please to call me : I am every where free : my farewell is soone taken of all my friends, except of my selfe. No man did ever prepare himselfe to quit the world more simply and fully, or more generally spake of all thoughts of it, than I am fully assured I shall doe. The deadeest deaths are the best.

LUCR. iii. 942.

—*Miser, ô miser (aiunt) omnia ademit.  
Vna dies infesta mihi tot præmia vitæ :*

O wretch, O wretch, (friends cry) one day,  
All joyes of life hath tane away :

# THE FIRST BOOKE

And the builder,

—*manent (saith he) opera interrupta, minæque,  
Murorum ingentes.*

VIRG. *Æn.*  
iv. 88.

The workes unfinisht lie,  
And walls that threatned hie.

A man should designe nothing so long afore-hand, or at least with such an intent, as to passionate himselfe to see the end of it; we are all borne to be doing.

*Cùm moriar, medium solvar et inter opus.*

When dying I my selfe shall spend,  
Ere halfe my businesse come to end.

## CHAPTER XIX

That to Philosophie, is to learne how to die

OVID. *Am.*  
ii. El. x. 36.

I would have a man to be doing, and to prolong his lives offices, as much as lieth in him, and let death seize upon me, whilst I am setting my cabiges, carelesse of her dart, but more of my unperfect garden. I saw one die, who being at his last gaspe, uncessantly complained against his destinie, and that death should so unkindly cut him off in the midst of an historie which he had in hand, and was now come to the fiftenth or sixteenth of our Kings.

*Illud in his rebus non addunt, nec tibi earum,  
Iam desiderium rerum super insidet una.*

LUCR. iii. 944.

Friends adde not that in this case, now no more  
Shalt thou desire, or want things wisht before.

A man should rid himselfe of these vulgar and hurtfull humours. Even as Church-yards were first placed adjoyning unto churches, and in the most frequented places of the City, to enure (as Lycurgus said) the common people, women and children, not to be skared at the sight of a dead man, and to the end that continuall spectacle of bones, sculs, tombes, graves and burials, should forewarne us of our condition, and fatall end.

*Quin etiam exhilarare viris convivia cæde  
Mos olim, et miscere epulis spectacula dira.  
Certantum ferro, sæpe et super ipsa cadentum  
Pocula, respersis non parco sanguine mensis.*

SYL. *Ital.* xi.  
51.

Nay more, the manner was to welcome guests,  
And with dire shewes of slaughter to mix feasts.  
Of them that fought at sharpe, and with bords tainted  
Of them with much bloud, who o'er full cups fainted.



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER

### XIX

That to Philosophie, is to learne how to die

And even as the Ægyptians after their feastings and carousings, caused a great image of death to be brought in and shewed to the guests and by-standers, by one that cried aloud, 'Drinke and be mery, for such shalt thou be when thou art dead : ' So have I learned this custome or lesson, to have alwaies death, not only in my imagination, but continually in my mouth. And there is nothing I desire more to be informed of, than of the death of men : that is to say, what words, what countenance, and what face they shew at their death ; and in reading of histories, which I so attentively observe. It appeareth by the shuffling and hudling up of my examples, I affect no subject so particularly as this. Were I a composer of books, I would keepe a register, commented of the divers deaths, which in teaching men to die, should after teach them to live. Dicearcus made one of that title, but of another and lesse profitable end. Some man will say to mee, the effect exceeds the thought so farre, that there is no fence so sure, or cunning so certaine, but a man shall either lose or forget, if he come once to that point ; let them say what they list : to premeditate on it, giveth no doubt a great advantage : and it is nothing, at the least to goe so farre without dismay or alteration, or without an ague ? There belongs more to it : Nature her selfe lends her hand, and gives us courage. If it be a short and violent death, wee have no leisure to feare it ; if otherwise, I perceive that according as I engage my selfe in sicknesse, I doe naturally fall into some disdaine and contempt of life. I finde that I have more adoe to digest this resolution, that I shall die when I am in health, than I have when I am troubled with a fever : forsomuch as I have no more such fast hold on the commodities of life, whereof I begin to lose the use and pleasure, and view death in the face with a lesse undanted looke, which makes me hope, that the further I goe from that, and the nearer I approach to this, so much more easily doe I enter in composition for their exchange. Even as I have tried in many other occurrences, which Cæsar affirmed, that often somethings seeme greater, being farre from us, than if they bee neere at hand : I have found that being in perfect health, I have much more beene frightened with sicknesse, than when I have felt it. The jollitie wherein



# THE FIRST BOOKE

I live, the pleasure and the strength make the other seeme so disproportionable from that, that by imagination I amplify these commodities by one moitie, and apprehended them much more heavie and burthensome, than I feele them when I have them upon my shoulders. The same I hope will happen to me of death. Consider we by the ordinary mutations, and daily declinations which we suffer, how Nature deprives us of the night of our losse and empairing: what hath an aged man left him of his youths vigor, and of his forepast life?

*Heu senibus vitæ portio quanta manet!*

Alas to men in yeares how small

A part of life is left in all?

CHAPTER  
XIX  
That to Philosophie, is to  
learne how  
to die

COR. Gal. i.  
16.

Cæsar to a tired and crazed Souldier of his guard, who in the open street came to him, to beg leave, he might cause himselfe to be put to death; viewing his decrepit behaviour, answerd pleasantly: ‘Doest thou thinke to be alive then?’ Were man all at once to fall into it, I doe not thinke we should be able to beare such a change, but being faire and gently led on by her hand, in a slow, and as it were unperceived descent, by little and little, and step by step, she rouses us into that miserable state, and day by day seekes to acquaint us with it. So that when youth failes in us, we feele, nay we perceive no shaking or transchange at all in our selves: which in essence and veritie is a harder death, than that of a languishing and irkesome life, or that of age. Forsomuch as the leape from an ill being, unto a not being, is not so dangerous or steepie; as it is from a delightfull and flourishing being, unto a painfull and sorrowfull condition. A weake bending, and faint stopping bodie hath lesse strength to beare and undergoe a heavie burden: So hath our soule. She must bee roused and raised against the violence and force of this adversarie. For as it is impossible, she should take any rest whilst she feareth: whereof if she be assured (which is a thing exceeding humane condition) she may boast that it is impossible, unquietnesse, torment, and feare, much lesse the least displeasure should lodge in her.

*Non vultus instantis tyranni  
Mente quatit solida, neque Auster,*

HOR. iii. Od.  
iii.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XIX

That to Philosophie, is to learne how to die

*Dux inquieti turbidus Adriæ,  
Nec fulminantis magna Jovis manus.*

No urging tyrants threatning face,  
Where minde is sound can it displace,  
No troublous wind the rough seas Master,  
Nor Ioves great hand the thunder-caster.

She is made Mistris of her passions and concupiscence, Lady of indulgence, of shame of povertie, and of all fortunes injuries. Let him that can, attaine to this advantage: Herein consists the true and soveraigne liberty, that affords us meanes wherewith to jeast and make a scorne of force and injustice, and to deride imprisonment, gives, or fetters.

HOR. i. *Epi.*  
xvi. 76.

—*in manicis, et  
Compeditibus, sævo te sub custode tenebo.  
Ipse Deus simul atque volam, me solvet: opinor,  
Hoc sentit moriar, mors ultima linea rerum est.*

In gyves and fetters I will hamper thee,  
Under a Jayler that shall cruell be:  
Yet, when I will, God me deliver shall,  
He thinks, I shall die: death is end of all.

Our religion hath had no surer humane foundation, than the contempt of life. Discourse of reason doth not only call and summon us unto it. For why should we feare to lose a thing, which being lost, cannot be moaned? but also, since we are threatned by so many kinds of death, there is no more inconvenience to feare them all, than to endure one: what matter is it when it commeth, since it is unavoidable? Socrates answered one that told him, The thirty Tyrants have condemned thee to death; 'And Nature them,' said he. What fondnesse is it to carke and care so much, at that instant and passage from all exemption of paine and care? As our birth brought us the birth of all things, so shall our death the end of all things. Therefore is it as great follie to weepe, we shall not live a hundred yeeres hence, as to waile we lived not a hundred yeeres agoe. 'Death is the beginning of another life.' So wept we, and so much did it cost us to enter into this life; and so did we spoile us of our ancient vaile in entering into it. Nothing can be grievous that is but once. Is it reason so long to feare a thing of so short time? Long life or short life is made all one by death. For long or short

# THE FIRST BOOKE

is not in things that are no more. Aristotle saith, there are certaine litle beasts amongst the river Hispanis, that live but one day; she which dies at 8 a clocke in the morning, dies in her youth, and she that dies at 5 in the afternoon, dies in her decrepitude, who of us doth not laugh, when we shall see this short moment of continuance to be had in consideration of good or ill fortune? The most and the least in ours, if we compare it with eternitie, or equall it to the lasting of mountaines, rivers, stars, and trees, or any other living creature, is no lesse ridiculous. But nature compels us to it. ‘Depart (saith she,) out of this world, even as you came into it. The same way you came from death to life, returne without passion or amazement, from life to death: your death is but a peece of the worlds order, and but a parcell of the worlds life.’

—*inter se mortales mutua vivunt,  
Et quasi cursores vitae lampada tradunt.*

Mortall men live by mutuall entercourse :  
And yeeld their life-torch, as men in a course.

CHAPTER  
XIX  
That to Philosophie, is to  
learne how  
to die

LUCR. ii. 74,  
77.

Shal I not change this goodly contexture of things for you? It is the condition of your creation: death is a part of your selves: you flie from your selves. The being you enjoy, is equally shared betweene life and death. The first day of your birth doth as wel addresse you to die, as to live.

*Prima quæ vitam dedit, hora, carpsit.*

The first houre, that to men  
Gave life, strait, cropt it then.

*Nascentes morimur, finisque ab origine pendet :*

As we are borne we die; the end  
Doth of th’ originall depend.

SEN. *Her. Sur.*  
chor. iii.

MANIL. *Ast.*  
iv.

All the time you live, you steale it from death: it is at her charge. The continuall worke of your life, is to contrive death; you are in death, during the time you continue in life: for, you are after death, when you are no longer living. Or if you had rather have it so, you are dead after life: but during life, you are still dying: and death doth more rudely touch the dying, than the dead, and more lively and essentially. If you have profited by life, you have also beene fed thereby, depart then satisfied.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XIX

That to Philosophie, is to learne how to die

LUCR. iii. 982. *Cur non ut plenus vitæ conviva recedis?*

Why like a full-fed guest,  
Depart you not to rest?

If you have not knowne how to make use of it: if it were unprofitable to you, what need you care to have lost it? to what end would you enjoy it longer?

985.

—*cur amplius addere quæris*  
*Rursum quod pereat male, et ingratum occidat omne?*

Why seeke you more to gaine, what must againe  
All perish ill, and passe with grieve or paine?

Life in it selfe is neither good nor evill: it is the place of good or evill, according as you prepare it for them. And if you have lived one day, you have seene all: one day is equal to all other daies: There is no other light, there is no other night. This Sunne, this Moone, these Starres, and this disposition, is the very same, which your forefathers enjoyed, and which shall also entertaine your posteritie.

*Non alium videre patres, aliumve nepotes*  
*Aspicient.*

No other saw our Sires of old,  
No other shall their sonnes behold.

And if the worst happen, the distribution and varietie of all the acts of my comedie, is performed in one yeare. If you have observed the course of my foure seasons; they containe the infancie, the youth, the virilitie, and the old age of the world. He hath plaied his part: he knowes no other wili-nesse belonging to it, but to begin againe, it will ever be the same, and no other.

123.

—*Versamur ibidem, atque insumus usque.*

We still in one place turne about,  
Still there we are, now in, now out.

VIRG. *Georg.*  
ii. 403.

*Atque in se sua per vestigia volvitur annus.*

The yeare into it selfe is cast  
By those same steps, that it hath past.

I am not purposed to devise you other new sports.

LUCR. iii. 978.

*Nam tibi præterea quod machiner, inveniamque*  
*Quod placeat, nihil est, eadem sunt omnia semper.*



# THE FIRST BOOKE

Else nothing, that I can devise or frame,  
Can please thee, for all things are still the same.

CHAPTER  
XIX

That to Philosophie, is to  
learne how  
to die

Make roome for others, as others have done for you.  
'Equalitie is the chiefe ground-worke of equitie, who can  
'complaine to be comprehended where all are contained?'  
So may you live long enough, you shall never diminish any  
thing from the time you have to die : it is bootlesse ; so long  
shall you continue in that state, which you feare, as if you  
had died being in your swathing-clothes, and when you were  
sucking.

—*licet, quot vis, vivendo vincere secla,  
Mors æterna tamen, nihilominus illa manebit.*

LUCR. ii. 1126.

Though yeares you live, as many as you will,  
Death is eternall, death remaineth still.

And I will so please you, that you shall have no discontent.

*In vera nescis nullum fore morte alium te,  
Qui possit vivus tibi te lugere peremptum,  
Stansque jacentem.*

ID. iii. 9.

Thou know'st not there shall be not other thou,  
When thou art dead indeed, that can tell how  
Alive to waile thee dying,  
Standing to waile thee lying.

Nor shall you wish for life, which you so much desire.

*Nec sibi enim quisquam tum se vitamque requirit,  
Nec desiderium nostri nos afficit ullum.*

963.  
966.

For then none for himselfe himselfe or life requires :  
Nor are we of our selves affected with desires.

Death is lesse to be feared than nothing, if there were any-  
thing lesse than nothing.

—*multo mortem minus ad nos esse putandum,  
Si minus esse potest quam quod nihil esse videmus.*

970.

Death is much lesse to us, we ought esteeme,  
If lesse may be, than what doth nothing seeme.

Nor alive, nor dead, it doth concerne you nothing. Alive,  
because you are : Dead, because you are no more. Moreover,  
no man dies before his houre. The time you leave behinde  
was no more yours, than that which was before your birth,  
and concerneth you no more.



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XIX

That to Philosophie, is to  
learne how  
to die

LUCR. iii.  
1016.

*Respice enim quàm nil ad nos anteacta vetustas  
Temporis æterni fuerit.*

For marke, how all antiquitie fore-gone  
Of all time ere we were, to us was none.

Wheresoever your life endeth, there is it all. The profit of life consists not in the space, but rather in the use. Some man hath lived long, that hath had a short life. Follow it whilest you have time. It consists not in number of yeeres, but in your will, that you have lived long enough. Did you thinke you should never come to the place, where you were still going? There is no way but hath an end. And if company may solace you, doth not the whole world walke the same path?

1012.

*—Omnia te vita perfuncta sequuntur.*

Life past, all things at last  
Shall follow thee as thou hast past.

Doe not all things move as you doe, or keepe your course? Is there any thing grows not old together with your selfe? A thousand men, a thousand beasts, and a thousand other creatures die in the very instant that you die.

1B. ii. 587.

*Nam nox nulla diem, neque noctem aurora sequuta est,  
Quæ non audierit mistos vagitibus ægris  
Ploratus mortis comites et funeris atri.*

No night ensued day light: no morning followed night,  
Which heard not moaning mixt with sick-mens groaning,  
With deaths and funerals joyned was that moaning.

To what end recoile you from it, if you cannot goe backe? You have seene many who have found good in death, ending thereby many many miseries. But have you seene any that hath received hurt thereby? Therefore is it meere simplicitie to condemne a thing you never proved, neither by your selfe nor any other. Why doest thou complaine of me and of destinie? Doe we offer thee any wrong? is it for thee to direct us, or for us to governe thee? Although thy age be not come to her period, thy life is. A little man is a whole man as well as a great man. Neither men nor their lives are measured by the Ell. Chiron refused immortalitie, being informed of the conditions thereof, even by the God of time and of continuance, Saturne his father. Imagine truly how much an ever-during life would be lesse tolerable and more

# THE FIRST BOOKE

painfull to a man, than is the life which I have given him : CHAPTER  
Had you not death, you would then uncessantly curse, and XIX  
cry out against me, that I had deprived you of it. I have That to Phi-  
of purpose and wittingly blended some bitternesse amongst losophie, is to  
it, that so seeing the commoditie of it's use, I might hinder learne how  
you from over-greedily embracing, or indiscreetly calling for to die  
it. To continue in this moderation, that is, neither to flie  
from life, nor to run to death (which I require of you) I have  
tempered both the one and other betweene sweetnes and  
sowrenes. I first taught Thales the chiefest of your Sages  
and Wisemen, that to live and die, were indifferent, which  
made him answer one very wisely, who asked him, wherfore  
he died not; 'Because,' said he, 'it is indifferent. The  
'water, the earth, the aire, the fire, and other members of  
'this my universe, are no more the instruments of thy life,  
'than of thy death. Why fearest thou thy last day? He  
'is no more guiltie, and conferreth no more to thy death,  
'than any of the others. It is not the last step that causeth  
'wearinesse: it only declares it. All daies march towards  
'death, only the last comes to it.' Behold heere the good  
precepts of our universall mother Nature. I have often-  
times bethought my selfe whence it proceedeth, that in times  
of warre, the visage of death (whether wee see it in us or in  
others) seemeth without all comparison much lesse dreadful  
and terrible unto us, than in our houses, or in our beds,  
otherwise it should be an armie of Physitians and whiners,  
and she ever being one, there must needs bee much more  
assurance amongst countrie-people and of base condition,  
than in others. I verily beleewe, these fearefull lookes, and  
astonishing countenances wherewith we encompasse it, are  
those that more amaze and terrifie us than death: a new  
forme of life; the out-cries of mothers; the wailing of  
women and children; the visitation of dismaid and swoun-  
ing friends: the assistance of a number of pale-looking, dis-  
tracted, and whining servants; a darke chamber: tapers  
burning round about; our couch beset round with Physitians  
and Preachers; and to conclude, nothing but horror and  
astonishment on every side of us: are wee not alreadie dead  
and buried? The very children are afraid of their friends,  
when they see them masked; and so are we: The maske

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XIX must as well be taken from things, as from men, which being removed, we shall finde nothing hid under it, but the very same death, that a seely varlet, or a simple maid-servant, did lately suffer without amazement or feare. Happie is that death, which takes all leasure from the preparations of such an equipage.

That to Philosophie, is to learne how to die

## THE TWENTIETH CHAPTER

### Of the force of Imagination.



*IMAGINATION* generat casum: 'A strong imagination begetteth chance,' say learned clearks. I am one of those that feele a very great conflict and power of imagination. All men are shockt therewith, and some overthrowne by it. The impression of it pierceth me, and for want of strength to resist her, my endeavour is to avoid it. I could live with the only assistance of holy and merry-hearted men. The sight of others anguishes doth sensibly drive me into anguish; and my sense hath often usurped the sense of a third man. If one cough continually, he provokes my lungs and throat. I am more unwilling to visit the sicke dutie doth engage me unto, than those to whom I am little beholding, and regard least. I apprehend the evill which I studie, and place it in me. I deeme it not strange that she brings both agues and death to such as give her scope to worke her wil, and applaude her. Simon Thomas was a great Physitian in his daies. I remember upon a time comming by chance to visit a rich old man that dwelt in Tholouse, and who was troubled with the cough of the lungs, who discoursing with the said Simon Thomas of the meanes of his recoverie, he told him, that one of the best was, to give me occasion to be delighted in his companie, and that fixing his eyes upon the livelines and freshnes of my face, and setting his thoughts upon the jolitic and vigor, wherewith my youthfull age did then flourish, and filling all his senses with my flourishing estate,

# THE FIRST BOOKE

his habitude might thereby be amended, and his health recovered. But he forgot to say, that mine might also be empaired and infected. Gallus Vibius did so well enure his minde to comprehend the essence and motions of folly, that he so transported his judgement from out his seat, as he could never afterward bring it to his right place againe: and might rightly boast, to have become a foole through wisdom. Some there are, that through feare anticipate the hang-mans hand; as he did, whose friends having obtained his pardon, and putting away the cloth wherewith he was hood-winkt, that he might heare it read, was found starke dead upon the scaffold, wounded only by the stroke of imagination. Wee sweat, we shake, we grow pale, and we blush at the motions of our imaginations; and wallowing in our beds we feele our bodies agitated and turmoiled at their apprehensions, yea in such manner, as sometimes we are ready to yeeld up the spirit. And burning youth (although asleepe) is often therewith so possessed and enfolded, that dreaming it doth satisfie and enjoy her amorous desires.

CHAPTER  
XX  
Of the force  
of Imagination

*Vt quasi transactis sæpe omnibu' rebu' profundant  
Fluminis ingentes fluctus, vestemque cruentent.*

LUCR. iv.  
1027.

And if all things were done, they powre fourth streames,  
And bloodie their night-garment in their dreames.

And although it be not strange to see some men have hornes growing upon their head in one night, that had none when they went to bed: notwithstanding the fortune or successe of Cypus King of Italie is memorable, who because the day before he had with earnest affection, assisted and beene attentive at a bul-baiting, and having all night long dreamed of hornes in his head, by the very force of imagination brought them forth the next morning in his forehead. An earnest passion gave the son of Cresus his voice, which nature had denied him. And Antiochus got an ague, by the excellent beautie of Stratonice so deeply imprinted in his minde. Plinie reporteth to have seene Lucius Cossitius upon his marriage day to have beene transformed from a woman to a man. Pontanus and others recount the like Metamorphosies to have hapned in Italie these ages past: And through a vehement desire of him and his mother.



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XX Of the force of Imagina- tion

OVID. *Metam.*  
ix. 794.

*Vota puer solvit, quæ fœmina voverat Iphis.*

Iphis a boy, the vowes then paid,  
Which he vow'd when he was a maid.

My selfe traveling on a time by Vitry in France, hapned to see a man, whom the Bishop of Soissons had in confirmation, named Germane, and all the inhabitants thereabout have both knowne and seene to be a woman-childe, untill she was two and twentie yeares of age, called by the name of Marie. He was, when I saw him, of good yeares, and had a long beard, and was yet unmarried. He saith, that upon a time leaping, and straining himselfe to overleape another, he wot not how, but where before he was a woman, he suddenly felt the instrument of a man to come out of him; and to this day the maidens of that towne and countrie have a song in use, by which they warne one another, when they are leaping, not to straine themselves overmuch, or open their legs too wide, for feare they should bee turned to boies, as Marie Germane was. It is no great wonder, that such accidents doe often happen, for if imagination have power in such things, it is so continually annexed, and so forcibly fastened to this subject, that lest she should so often fall into the relaps of the same thought, and sharpnesse of desire, it is better one time for all, to incorporate this virile part unto wenches. Some will not sticke to ascribe the scarres of King Dagobert, or the cicatrices of Saint Francis unto the power of Imagination. Othersome will say, that by the force of it, bodies are sometimes removed from their places. And Celsus reports of a Priest, whose soule was ravished into such an extasie, that for a long time the body remained void of all respiration and sense. Saint Augustine speaketh of another, who if hee but heard any lamentable and wailefull cries, would suddenly fall into a swowne, and bee so forcibly carried from himselfe, that did any chide and braule never so loud, pinch and thumpe him never so much, he could not be made to stirre, untill hee came to himselfe againe. Then would he say, he had heard sundry strange voyces, comming as it were from a farre, and perceiving his pinches and bruises, wondered at them. And that it was not an obstinate conceit, or wilfull humour in him, or against his feeling sense, it



# THE FIRST BOOKE

plainly appeared by this, because during his extasie, he seemed to have neither pulse nor breath. It is very likely that the principall credit of visions, of enchantments, and such extraordinary effects, proceedeth from the power of imaginations, working especially in the mindes of the vulgar sort, as the weakest and seeliest, whose conceit and beleefe is so seized upon, that they imagine to see what they see not. I am yet in doubt, these pleasant bonds, wherewith our world is so fettered, and France so pestered, that nothing else is spoken of, are haply but the impressions of apprehension, and effects of feare. For I know by experience, that some one, for whom I may as well answer as for my selfe, and in whom no manner of suspicion either of weaknesse or enchantment might fall, hearing a companion of his make report of an extraordinary faint sowning, wherein he was fallen, at such a time, as he least looked for it, and wrought him no small shame, whereupon the horror of his report did so strongly strike his imagination, as he ranne the same fortune, and fell into a like drooping: And was thence forward subject to fall into like fits: So did the passionate remembrance of his inconvenience possesse and tyrannize him; but his fond doting was in time remedied by another kinde of raving. For himselfe avowing and publishing aforehand the infirmitie he was subject unto, the contention of his soule was solaced upon this, that bearing his evill as expected, his dutie thereby diminished, and he grieved lesse thereat. And when at his choice, he hath had law and power (his thought being cleered and unmasked, his body finding it selfe in his right due and place) to make the same to be felt, seized upon, and apprehended by others knowledge: he hath fully and perfectly recovered himselfe. If a man have once beene capable, he cannot afterward be incapable, except by a just and absolute weaknesse. Such a mischief is not to be feared, but in the enterprises, where our minde is beyond all measure bent with desire and respect; and chiefly where opportunitie comes unexpected, and requires a sudden dispatch. There is no meanes for a man to recover himselfe from this trouble; I know some, who have found to come unto it with their bodies as it were halfe glutted else-where, thereby to stupifie or allay the heat of

CHAPTER  
XX  
Of the force  
of Imagina-  
tion

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XX  
Of the force  
of Imagina-  
tion

that furie, and who through age, finde themselves lesse unable, by how much more they be lesse able: And another, who hath also found good, in that a friend of his assured him to bee provided with a counter-battery of forcible enchantments, to preserve him in any such conflict: It is not amisse I relate how it was. An Earle of very good place, with whom I was familiarly acquainted, being married to a very faire Lady, who had long beene solicited for love, by one assisting at the wedding, did greatly trouble his friends; but most of all an old Lady his kins-woman, who was chiefe at the marriage, and in whose house it was solemnized, as she that much feared such sorceries and witchcrafts: which shee gave mee to understand, I comforted her as well as I could, and desired her to relie upon me: I had by chance a peece of golden plate in my trunke, wherein were ingraven certaine celestiaall figures, good against the Sunne-beames, and for the head-ach, being fitly laid upon the suture of the head: and that it might the better be kept there, it was sewed to a riband, to be fastened under the chin. A fond doting conceit, and cosin-germane to that wee now speake of. James Peletier had whilest he lived in my house, bestowed that singular gift upon mee; I advised my selfe to put it to some use, and told the Earle, he might haply be in danger, and come to some misfortune as others had done, the rather because some were present, that would not stick to procure him some ill lucke, and which was worse, some spitefull shame; but neverthelesse I willed him boldly to goe to bed: For I would shew him the part of a true friend, and in his need, spare not for his good to employ a miracle, which was in my power; alwaies provided, that on his honour he would promise me faithfully to keepe it very secret; which was only, that when about mid-night he should have his candle brought him, if he had had no good successe in his businesse, he should make such and such a signe to me. It fel out, his mind was so quailed, and his eares so dulled, that by reason of the bond wherewith the trouble of his imagination had tied him, hee could not run on poste: and at the houre appointed, made the signe agreed upon betweene us, I came and whispered him in the eare, that under pretence to put us all out of his chamber, he should rise out of his bed, and

# THE FIRST BOOKE

in jesting manner take my night-gowne which I had on, and put it upon himselfe (which he might well doe, because wee were much of one stature) and keepe it on till he had performed my appointment, which was, that when we should be gone out of the Chamber, he should withdraw himselfe to make water, and using certaine jestures, I had shewed him, speake such words thrice over. And every time hee spake them he should girt the ribband, which I put into his hands, and very carefully place the plate thereto fastned, just upon his kidneyes, and the whole figure, in such a posture. All which when he had accordingly done, and the last time so fastened the ribband, that it might neither be untide nor stirred from his place, he should then boldly and confidently returne to his charge, and not forget to spread my night-gowne upon his bed, but so as it might cover them both. These fopperies are the chiefe of the effect. Our thought being unable so to free it selfe, but some strange meanes will proceed from some abstruse learning: Their inanitie gives them weight and credit. To conclude, it is most certaine, my Characters proved more venerian than solare, more in action, than in prohibition. It was a ready and curious humour drew me to this effect, farre from my nature. I am an enemie to craftie and fained actions, and hate all suttletie in my hands, not only recreative, but also profitable. If the action be not vicious, the course unto it is faultie. Amasis King of Ægypt, tooke to wife Laodice, a very beauteous yong virgin of Greece, and he that before had in every other place found and shewed himselfe a lustie gallant, found himselfe so short, when he came to grapple with her, that he threatned to kill her, supposing it had beene some charme or sorcerie. As in all things that consist in the fantasie, she addrest him to devotion. And having made his vowes and promises to Venus, he found himselfe divinely freed, even from the first night of his oblations and sacrifices. Now they wrong us, to receive and admit us with their wanton, squeamish, quarellous countenances, which setting us a fire, extinguish us.

Pythagoras his neece was wont to say, 'That a woman which lies with a man ought, together with her petie-coate, leave off all bashfulnesse, and with her petie-coate, take the same againe.' The minde of the assailant molested with

CHAPTER  
XX  
Of the force  
of Imagina-  
tion

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XX  
Of the force  
of Imagina-  
tion

sundry different alarms, is easily dismayed. And he whom imagination hath once made to suffer this shame (and she hath caused the same to be felt but in the first acquaintances; because they are then burning and violent, and in the first acquaintance and coming together, or triall a man gives of himselfe, he is much more afraid and quaint to misse the marke he shoots at) having begun ill he falls into an ague or spite of this accident, which afterward continueth in succeeding occasions. Married men, because time is at their command, and they may go to it when they list, ought never to presse or importune their enterprise, unlesse they be readie. And it is better undecently to faile in hanseling the nuptiall bed, full of agitation and fits, by waiting for some or other fitter occasion, and more private opportunitie, lest sudden and alarmed, than to fall into a perpetuall miserie, by apprehending an astonishment and desperation of the first refusall. Before possession taken, a patient ought by sallies, and divers times, lightly assay and offer himselfe without vexing or opiniating himselfe, definitively to convince himselfe. Such as know their members docile and tractable by nature, let them only endeavour to countercosin their fantasie. Men have reason to checke the indocile libertie of this member, for so importunately insinuating himselfe when we have no need of him, and so importunately, or as I may say impertinently failing, at what time we have most need of him; and so imperiously contesting by his authority with our will, refusing with such fiercenes and obstinacie our solicitations both mentall and manuell. Neverthelesse if a man inasmuch as he doth gormandize and devour his rebellion, and drawes a triall by his condemnation, would pay me for to plead his cause, I would peradventure make other of our members to be suspected to have (in envy of his importance, and sweetnesse of his use) devised this imposture, and framed this set quarrell against him, and by some malicious complot armed the world against him, enviously charging him alone with a fault common to them all. For I referre it to your thought, whether there be any one particular part of our body, that doth not sometimes refuse her particular operation to our will and wish, and that doth not often exercise and practise against our will. All of them have



# THE FIRST BOOKE

their proper passions, which without any leave of ours doe either awaken or lull them asleepe. How often doe the forced motions and changes of our faces witnesse the secretest and most lurking thoughts we have, and bewray them to by-standers? The same cause that doth animate this member, doth also, unwitting to us, embolden our heart, our lungs, and our pulses. The sight of a pleasing object, reflecting imperceptibly on us, the flame of a contagious or aguish emotion. Is there nought besides these muscles and veines, that rise and fall without the consent, not only of our will, but also of our thought? We cannot command our haire to stand an end, nor our skinne to startle for desire or feare. Our hands are often carried where we direct them not. Our tongue and voice are sometimes to seeke of their faculties, the one loseth her speech, the other her nimblenesse. Even when we have nothing to feed upon, we would willingly forbid it: the appetites to eat, or list to drinke, doe not leave to move the parts subject to them, even as this other appetite, and so, though it be out of season, forsaketh us, when he thinks good. Those instruments that serve to discharge the belly, have their proper compressions and dilatations, besides our intent, and against our meaning, as these are destined to discharge the kindeis. And that which, the better to authorize our wills power, Saint Augustin alleageth, to have seene one, who could at all times command his posterior, to let as many scapes as he would, and which Vives endeareth by the example of an other in his daies, who could let tunable and organized ones, following the tune of any voice propounded unto his eares, inferreth the pure obedience of that member: than which, none is commonly more indiscreet and tumultuous. Seeing my selfe know one so skittish and mutinous, that these fortie yeares keeps his master in such awe, that will he, or nill he, he will with a continuall breath, constant and unintermitted custome breake winde at his pleasure, and so brings him to his grave. And would to God I knew it but by Histories, how that many times our belly, being restrained thereof, brings us even to the gates of a pining and languishing death: And that the Emperour, who gave us free leave to vent at all times, and every where, had also given us the

CHAPTER  
XX  
Of the force  
of Imagina-  
tion



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XX  
Of the force  
of Imagina-  
tion

power to doe it. But our will, by whose privilege we advance this reproch, how much more likely, and consonant to trueth may we tax it of rebellion, and accuse it of sedition, by reason of its unrulinesse and disobedience? Will shee at all times doe that, which we would have her willingly to doe? Is shee not often willing to effect that, which we forbid her to desire? and that to our manifest prejudice and dammage? Doth she suffer her selfe to be directed by the conclusions of our reason? To conclude, I would urge in defence of my client, that it would please the Judges to consider, that concerning this matter, his cause being inseparably conjoynd to a consort, and indistinctly: yet will not a man addresse himselfe but to him, both by the arguments and charges, which can no way appertaine to his said consort. For, his effect is indeed sometime importunately to invite, but to refuse never: and also to invite silently and quietly. Therefore is the sawcinesse and illegalitie of the accusers seene. Howsoever it be, protesting that Advocates and Judges may wrangle, contend, and give sentence, what, and how they please, Nature will in the meane time follow her course: who, had she endued this member with any particular privilege, yet had she done but right, and shewed but reason. Author of the only immortall worke, of mortall men. Divine worke according to Socrates; and love, desire of immortallitie, and immortall Dæmon himselfe. Some man peradventure, by the effects of imagination leaveth the pox or Kings evill heere, which his companion carrieth into Spaine againe: loe heere why in such cases men are accustomed to require a prepared minde, wherefore doe Physitians labour and practise before hand the conceit and credence of their patients, with so many false promises of their recoverie and health, unlesse it be that the effect of imagination may supplie and prepare the imposture of their decoction? They knew that one of their trades-master hath left written, how some men have been found, in whom the only sight of a potion hath wrought his due operation: All which humor or caprice is now come into my minde, upon the report which an Apothecarie, whilome a servant in my fathers house, was wont to tell me, a man by knowledge simple, and by birth a Switzer; a nation little vaine-glorious, and not much given to lying,

# THE FIRST BOOKE

which was, that for a long time he had knowne a Merchant in Tholouse, sickish, and much troubled with the stone, and who often had need of glisters, who according to the fits and occurrences of his evill, caused them diversly to be prescribed by Physitians. Which being brought him, no accustomed forme to them belonging was omitted, and would often taste whether they were too hot, and view them well, and lying along upon his bed, on his bellie, and all complements performed, only injection excepted, which ceremony ended, the Apothecarie gone, and the patient lying in his bed, even as if he had received a glister indeed, he found and felt the very same effect, which they doe that have effectually taken them. And if the Physitian saw it had not wrought sufficiently, he would accordingly give him two or three more in the same manner. My witsnesse protesteth, that the sicke mans wife, to save charges (for he paid for them as if he had received them) having sometimes assaid to make them onely with luke warme water, the effect discovered the craft, and being found not to worke at all, they were forced to returne to the former, and use the Apothecarie. A woman supposing to have swallowed a pinne with her bread, cried and vexed her-selfe, even as if she had felt an intolerable paine in her throat, where she imagined the same to sticke; but because there appeared neither swelling or alteration, a skilfull man deeming it to be but a fantasie conceived, or opinion, apprehended by eating of some gretty peece of bread, which haply might pricke her in the swallow, made her to vomit, and unknowne to her, cast a pinne in that which she had vomited. Which the woman perceiving, and imagining she had cast the same, was presently eased of her paine. I have knowne a Gentleman, who having feasted a company of very honest Gentlemen and Gentlewomen, in his owne house, by way of sport, and in jest, boasted two or three daies after (for there was no such thing) that he had made them eat of a baked Cat; whereat the Gentlewoman of the companie apprehended such horror, that falling into a violent ague and distemper of her stomacke, she could by no meanes be recovered. Even brute beasts, as well as we, are seene to be subject to the power of imagination; witsnesse some Dogs, who for sorrow of their Masters death are seene

CHAPTER  
XX  
Of the force  
of Imagina-  
tion

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XX  
Of the force  
of Imagination

to die, and whom we ordinarily see to startle and barke in their sleep, and horses to neigh and struggle. But all this may be referred to the narrow future of the Spirit and the body, entercommunicating their fortunes one unto another. It is another thing, that imagination doth sometimes worke, not only against her owne body, but also against that of others. And even as one body ejecteth a disease to his neighbour, as doth evidently appeare by the plague, pox, or sore eies, that goe from one to another :

OVID. *Am.* ii.  
219.

*Dum spectant oculi læsos, læduntur et ipsi :  
Multaque corporibus transitione nocent.*

Eies become sore, while they looke on sore eies :  
By passage many ills our limmes surprise.

Likewise the imagination moved and tossed by some vehemence, doth cast some darts, that may offend a strange object. Antiquitie hath held, that certaine women of Scithia, being provoked and vexed against some men, had the power to kill them, only with their looke. The Tortoises and the Estriges hatch their egges with their looks only, a signe that they have some ejaculative vertue. And concerning witches they are said to have offensive and harme-working eies.

VIRG. *Buc.*  
Ecl. iii. 103.

*Nescio quis teneros oculus mihi fascinat agnos.*  
My tender Lambs I cannot see,  
By what bad eie, bewitched be.

Magitians are but ill respondents for me. So it is, that by experience wee see women to transferre divers markes of their fantasies, unto children they beare in their wombes : witnes she that brought forth a Blacke-a-more. There was also presented unto Charles King of Bohemia, an Emperour, a young girle, borne about Pisa, all shagd and hairy over and over, which her mother said, to have beene conceived so, by reason of an image of Saint Iohn Baptist, that was so painted, and hung over her bed. That the like is in beasts, is witnessed by Jacobs sheepe, and also by partridges and hares, that grow white by the snow upon mountaines. There was lately seene a cat about my owne house, so earnestly eyeing a bird, sitting upon a tree, that he seeing the Cat, they both so wistly fixed their looks one upon another, so long, that at last, the bird fell downe as dead in the Cats pawes, either drunken by his owne strong imagination, or drawne

# THE FIRST BOOKE

CHAPTER  
XX  
Of the force  
of Imagination

by some attractive power of the Cat. Those that love hawking, have haply heard the Falkner tale, who earnestly fixing his sight upon a Kite in the aire, laid a wager that with the only force of his looke, he would make it come stooping downe to the ground, and as some report did it many times. The Histories I borrow, I referre to the consciences of those I take them from. The discourses are mine, and hold together by the prooffe of reason, not of experiences: each man may adde his example to them: and who hath none, considering the number and varietie of accidents, let him not leave to think, there are store of them. If I come not well for my selfe, let another come for me. So in the studie wherein I treat of our manners and motions, the fabulous testimonies, alwaies provided they be likely and possible, may serve to the purpose, as well as the true, whether it hapned or no, be it at Rome, or at Paris, to Iohn or Peter, it is alwaies a tricke of humane capacitie, of which I am profitably advised by this report. I see it and reape profit by it, as well in shadow as in bodie. And in divers lessons that often histories afford, I commonly make use of that, which is most rare and memorable. Some writers there are, whose end is but to relate the events. Mine, if I could attaine to it, should be to declare, what may come to passe, touching the same. It is justly allowed in schooles, to suppose similitudes, when they have none. Yet doe not I so, and concerning that point, in superstitious religion, I exceed all historicall credit. To the examples I here set downe, of what I have read, heard, done, or seene, I have forbid my selfe so much as to dare to change the least, or alter the idlest circumstances. My conscience doth not falsifie the least jot. I wot not whether my insight doth. Concerning this subject I doe sometimes enter into conceit, that it may well become a Divine, a Philosopher, or rather men of exquisite conscience, and exact wisdome, to write histories. How can they otherwise engage their credit upon a popular reputation? How can they answer for the thoughts of unknowne persons? And make their bare conjectures passe for currant payment? Of the actions of divers members, acted in their presence, they would refuse to beare witnes of them, if by a judge they were put to their corporall



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XX  
Of the force  
of Imagina-  
tion

oath. And there is no man so familiarly knowne to them, of whose inward intention they would undertake to answer at full. I hold it lesse hazardous to write of things past, than present; forasmuch as the writer is not bound to give account but of a borrowed trueth. Some perswade mee to write the affaires of my time, imagining I can see them with a sight lesse blinded with passion, than other men, and perhaps neerer, by reason of the accesse which fortune hath given me to the chiefeſt of divers factions. But they will not say, how for the glory of Saluſt, I would not take the paines; as one that am a vowed enemy to obſervance, to aſſiduitie, and to conſtancie, and that there is nothing ſo contrarie to my ſtile, as a continued narration. I doe ſo often for want of breath breake off and interrupt my ſelfe. I have neither compoſition nor explication of any worth. I am as ignorant as a childe of the phraſes and vowels belonging to common things. And therefore have I attempted to ſay what I can, accommodat- ing the matter to my power. Should I take any man for a guide, my meaſure might differ from his. For, my libertie being ſo farre, I might haply publiſh judgements, agreeing with me, and conſonant to reaſon, yet unlawfull and puniſhable. Plutarke would per- adventure tell us of that which he hath written, that it is the worke of others, that his examples are in all and everie where true, that they are profitable to poſteritie, and pre- ſented with a luſtre, that lights and directs us unto vertue, and that is his worke. It is not dangerous, as in a medicinable drug, whether in an old tale or report, be it thus or thus, ſo or ſo.

## THE TWENTY-FIRST CHAPTER

The profit of one man is the dammage of another.



DEMADES the Athenian condemned a man of the Citie, whoſe trade was to ſell ſuch neceſſaries as belonged to burials, under colour, hee asked too much profit for them: and that ſuch profit could not come unto him without the death of many people. This judgement ſeemeth to be



# THE FIRST BOOKE

ill taken, because no man profiteth but by the losse of others: by which reason a man should condemne all manner of gaine. The Merchant thrives not but by the licentiousnesse of youth; the Husbandman by dearth of corne; the Architect but by the ruine of houses; the Lawyer by suits and controversies betweene men: Honour it selfe, and practice of religious Ministers, is drawne from our death and vices. ‘No Physitian delighteth in the health of his owne friend,’ saith the ancient Greeke Comike: ‘nor no Souldier is pleased with the peace of his Citie, and so of the rest.’ And which is worse, let every man sound his owne conscience, hee shall finde, that our inward desires are for the most part nourished and bred in us by the losse and hurt of others; which when I considered, I began to thinke, how Nature doth not gainsay herselfe in this, concerning her generall policie: for Physitians hold, that ‘The birth, increase, and augmentation of every thing, is the alteration and corruption of another.’

*Nam quodcunque suis mutatum finibus exit,  
Continuò hoc mors est illius, quod fuit ante.*

What ever from it's bounds doth changed passe,  
That strait is death of that which erst it was.

CHAPTER  
XXI  
The profit of  
one man is  
the dammage  
of another

LUCR. i. 687,  
813; ii. 762;  
iii. 536.

## THE TWENTY-SECOND CHAPTER

Of custome, and how a received law  
should not easily be changed.



MY opinion is, that hee conceived aright of the force of custome, that first invented this tale; how a country woman having enured herselfe to cherish and beare a young calfe in her armes, which continuing, shee got such a custome, that when he grew to be a great ox, shee carried him still in her armes. For truly, ‘Custome is a violent and deceiving schoole-mistris.’ She by little and little, and as it were by stealth, establisheth the foot of her authoritie in us; by which mild and gentle beginning, if once by the aid of time, it have settled and planted

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER the same in us, it will soone discover a furious and tyranni-  
 XXII call countenance unto us, against which we have no more the  
 Of custome, libertie to lift so much as our eies; wee may plainly see her  
 and how a upon every occasion to force the rules of Nature: *Vsus effica-*  
 received law *cissimus rerum omnium magister*: 'Use is the most effectuall  
 should not 'master of all things.' I beleve Platoes den mentioned in  
 easily be his common-wealth, and the Physitians that so often quit  
 changed their arts reason by authoritie; and the same King who by  
 PLIN. *Epis.* xx. meanes of her, ranged his stomacke to be nourished with  
 poyson; and the mayden that Albert mentioneth to have  
 accustomed herselfe to live upon spiders: and now in the  
 new-found world of the Indians, there were found divers  
 populous nations, in farre differing climates, that lived upon  
 them; made provision of them, and carefully fed them; as  
 also of grasse-hoppers, pissemires, lizards, and night-bats;  
 and a toad was sold for six crownes in a time that all such  
 meats were scarce amongst them, which they boyle, rost,  
 bake, and dresse with divers kinds of sawces. Others have  
 beene found to whom our usuall flesh and other meats were  
 mortall and venomous. *Consuetudinis magna est vis; Per-*  
 Cic. *Tusc. Qu.* ii. *noctant venatores in nive, in montibus uri se patiuntur:*  
*Pugiles caestibus contusi, ne ingemiseunt quidem.* 'Great is  
 'the force of custome: Huntsmen wil watch all night in  
 'snow, and endure to bee scorched on the hils: Fencers  
 'brused with sand-bags or cudgels, doe not so much as  
 'groane.' These forrein examples are not strange, if wee  
 but consider what we ordinarily finde by travell, and how  
 custome quaieth and weakeneth our customary senses. We  
 need not goe seeke what our neighbours report of the  
 Cataracts of Nile; and what Philosophers deeme of the  
 celestially musicke, which is, that the bodies of it's circles,  
 being solid smooth, and in their rowling motion, touching  
 and rubbing one against another, must of necessitie produce  
 a wonderfull harmonie: by the changes and entercapings of  
 which, the revolutions, motions, cadences, and carrols of the  
 asters and planets are caused and transported. But that  
 universally the hearing senses of these low worlds creatures,  
 dizzied and lulled asleepe, as those of the Ægyptians are, by  
 the continuation of that sound, how loud and great soever  
 it be, cannot sensibly perceive or distinguish the same.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

Smiths, Millers, Forgers, Armorsers, and such other, could not possibly endure the noise that commonly rings in their eares, if it did pierce them as it doth us. My perfumed Jerkin serveth for my nose to smell unto, but after I have worne it three or foure daies together, not I, but others have the benefit of it. This is more strange, that notwithstanding long intermissions, custome may joyne and establish the effect of her impression upon our senses; as they prove that dwell neere to bells or steeples. I have my lodging neere unto a tower, where both evening and morning a very great bell doth chime Ave marie and Cover-few, which jangling doth even make the tower to shake; at first it troubled me much, but I was soone acquainted with it, so that now I am nothing offended with it, and many times it cannot waken me out of my sleepe. Plato did once chide a child for playing with nuts, who answered him, 'Thou chidest me for a 'small matter.' 'Custome' (replied Plato) 'is no small matter.' I finde that our greatest vices make their first habit in us, from our infancie, and that our chiefe government and education, lieth in our nurses hands. Some mothers thinke it good sport to see a childe wring off a chickens necke, and strive to beat a dog or cat. And some fathers are so fond-foolish, that they will conster as a good Augur or fore-boding of a martiall minde to see their sonnes misuse a poore peasant, or tug a lackey, that doth not defend himselfe; and impute it to a ready wit, when by some wily disloyaltie, or crafty deceit, they see them cousin and over-reach their fellowes: yet are they the true seeds or roots of cruelty, of tyranny, and of treason. In youth they bud, and afterward grow to strength, and come to perfection by meanes of custome.

And it is a very dangerous institution, to excuse so base and vile inclinations, with the weaknesse of age, and lightnesse of the subject. First, it is nature that speaketh, whose voice is then shriller, purer, and more native, when it is tender, newer, and youngest. Secondly, the deformity of the crime consisteth not in the difference betweene crownes and pinnes; it depends of it selfe. I finde it more just to conclude thus: Why should not hee as well deceive one of a crowne, as he doth of a pinne? than as commonly some doe,

CHAPTER  
XXII  
Of custome,  
and how a  
received law  
should not  
easily be  
changed

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XXII

Of custome,  
and how a  
received law  
should not  
easily be  
changed

saying, alas, it is but a pinne; I warrant you, he will not doe so with crownes. A man would carefully teach children to hate vices of their owne genuity, and so distinguish the deformity of them, that they may not only eschew them in their actions, but above all, hate them in their hearts: and what colour soever they beare, the very conceit may seeme odious unto them. I know well, that because in my youth I have ever accustomed my selfe to tread a plaine beaten path, and have ever hated to entermeddle any manner of deceit of cousoning-craft, even in my childish sports (for truly it is to be noted, that Childrens playes are not sports, and should be deemed as their most serious actions.) There is no pastime so slight, that inwardlie I have not a naturall propension, and serious care, yea extreme contradiction, not to use any deceit. I shuffle and handle the cards, as earnestly for counters, and keepe as strict an accompt, as if they were double duckets, when playing with my wife or children, it is indifferent to mee whether I win or lose, as I doe when I play in good earnest. How and wheresoever it be, mine owne cies will suffice to keepe me in office; none else doe watch mee so narrowly; not that I respect more. It is not long since in mine owne house, I saw a little man, who at Nantes was borne without armes, and hath so well fashioned his feet to those services, his hands should have done him, that in truth they have almost forgotten their naturall office. In all his discourses he nameth them his hands, he carveth any meat, he chargeth and shoots off a pistole, he threds a needle, he soweth, he writeth, puts off his cap, combeth his head, plaieth at cards and dice; shuffleth and handleth them with a great dexteritie as any other man that bath the perfect use of his hands: the monie I have sometimes given him, he hath caried away with his feet, as well as any other could doe with his hands. I saw another, being a Childe, that with the bending and winding of his necke, (because hee had no hands) would brandish a two-hand-Sword, and mannage a Holbard, as nimbly as any man could doe with his hands: he would cast them in the aire, then receive them againe, he would throw a Dagger, and make a whip to yarke and lash, as cunningly as any Carter in France. But her effects are much better discovered in



# THE FIRST BOOKE

the strange impressions, which it worketh in our mindes where it meetes not so much resistance. What cannot she bring to passe in our judgements, and in our conceits? Is there any opinion so fantastical, or conceit so extravagant (I omit to speake of the grosse imposture of religions, where-with so many great nations and so many worthy and sufficient men have beene besotted, and drunken: For, being a thing beyond the compasse of our humane reason, it is more excusable if a man that is not extraordinarily illuminated thereunto by divine favour, doe lose and mis-carrie himselfe therein) or of other opinions, is there any so strange, that custome hath not planted and established by lawes in what regions soever it hath thought good? And this ancient exclamation is most just: *Non pudet physicum, id est speculatorem venatoremque naturæ, ab animis consuetudine imbutis quærere testimonium veritatis?* ‘Is it not a shame for a naturall Philosopher, that is the watch-man and hunts-man of nature, to seeke the testimonie of truth, from mindes endued and double dide with custome?’ I am of opinion, that no fantasie so mad can fall into humane imagination, that meetes not with the example of some publike custome, and by consequence that our reason doth not ground and bring to a stay. There are certaine people, that turne their backs towards those they salute, and never looke him in the face whom they would honour or worship. There are others, who when the King spitteth, the most favoured Ladie in his court stretcheth forth her hand; and in another countrey, where the noblest about him, stoope to the ground to gather his ordure in some fine linnen cloth: Let us here by the way insert a tale. A French Gentleman was ever wont to blow his nose in his hand, (a thing much against our fashion) maintaining his so doing; and who in wittie jesting was very famous. He asked me on a time, what privilege this filthie excrement had, that wee should have a daintie linnen cloth or handkercher to receive the same; and which is worse, so carefully fold it up, and keepe the same about us, which should be more loathsome to ones stomacke, than to see it cast away, as wee doe all our other excrements and filth. Mee thought he spake not altogether without reason: and custome had taken from me the discerning of this strange-

CHAPTER  
XXII  
Of custome,  
and how a  
received law  
should not  
easily be  
changed

CIC. Nat. De. i.



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER

### XXII

Of custome,  
and how a  
received law  
should not  
easily be  
changed

nesse, which being reported of an other countrie we deeme so hideous. Miracles are according to the ignorance wherein we are by nature, and not according to natures essence ; use brings the sight of our judgement asleepe. The barbarous heathen are nothing more strange to us, than we are to them : nor with more occasion, as every man would avow, if after he had travelled through these farre-fetcht examples, hee could stay himselfe upon the discourses, and soundly conferre them. Humane reason is a tincture in like weight and measure, infused into all our opinions and customes, what form soever they be of : infinite in matter : infinite in diversitie. But I will returne to my theme. There are certaine people, where, except his wife and children, no man speaketh to the King, but through a trunke. Another nation, where virgins shew their secret parts openly, and married women diligently hide and cover them. To which custome, this fashion used in other places, hath some relation : where chastitie is nothing regarded but for marriage sake ; and maidens may at their pleasure lie with whom they list ; and being with childe, they may without feare of accusation, spoyle and cast their children, with certaine medicaments, which they have only for that purpose. And in another country, if a Merchant chance to marrie, all other Merchants that are bidden to the wedding, are bound to lie with the bride before her husband, and the more they are in number, the more honour and commendation is hers, for constancie and capacitie : the like if a gentleman or an officer marrie ; and so of all others : except it be a day-labourer, or some other of base condition ; for then must the Lord or Prince lie with the bride ; amongst whom (notwithstanding this abusive custome) loyaltie in married women is highly regarded, and held in speciall account, during the time they are married. Others there are, where publike brothel-houses of men are kept, and where open mart of marriages are ever to be had : where women goe to the warres with their husbands, and have place, not onely in fight, but also in command, where they doe not onely weare jewels at their noses, in their lip and cheekes, and in their toes, but also big wedges of gold through their paps and buttocks, where when they eat, they wipe their

# THE FIRST BOOKE

fingers on their thighs, on the bladder of their genitories, and the soles of their feet, where not children, but brethren and nephewes inherit; and in some places, the nephewes onely, except in the succession of the Prince. Where to order the communitie of goods, which amongst them is religiously observed, certaine Sovereigne Magistrats have the generall charge of husbandry and tilling of the lands, and of the distribution of the fruits, according to every mans need: where they howle and weepe at their childrens deaths, and joy and feast at their old mens decease. Where ten or twelve men lie all in one bed with all their wives, where such women as lose their husbands, by any violent death, may marrie againe, others not: where the condition of women is so detested, that they kill all the maiden children, so soone as they are borne, and to supply their naturall need, they buy women of their neighbours. Where men may at their pleasure, without allaging any cause, put away their wives, but they (what just reason soever they have) can never put away their husbands. Where husbands may lawfully sell their wives, if they be barren. Where they cause dead bodies first to be boyled, and then to be brayed in a morter, so long till it come to a kind of pap, which afterward they mingle with their wine, and so drinke it. Where the most desired sepulcher that some wish for, is to bee devoured of dogges, and in some places of birds. Where some thinke, that blessed soules live in all liberty, in certaine pleasant fields stored with al commodities, and that from them proceeds that Eccho, which we heare. Where they fight in the water, and shoot exceeding true with their bowes as they are swimming. Where in signe of subjection men must raise their shoulders, and stoope with their heads, and put off their shooes when they enter their Kings houses. Where Eunuchs that have religious women in keeping, because they shall not be loved, have also their noses and lips cut off. And Priests that they may the better acquaint themselves with their Demons, and take their Oracles, put out their eyes. Where every man makes himselfe a God of what he pleaseth: the hunter of a Lion or a Fox; the fisher, of a certaine kinde of Fish; and frame themselves Idols of every humane action or passion: the Sunne, the Moone, and the

CHAPTER  
XXII  
Of custome,  
and how a  
received law  
should not  
easily be  
changed

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

### CHAPTER XXII

Of custome,  
and how a  
received law  
should not  
easily be  
changed

earth are their chieftest Gods: the forme of swearing is, to touch the ground, looking upon the Sunne, and where they eat both flesh and fish raw. Where the greatest oath is to sweare by the name of some deceased man, that hath lived in good reputation in the countrie, touching his grave with the hand. Where the new-yeares gifts that Kings send unto Princes their vassals every yeare, is some fire, which when it is brought, all the old fire is cleane put out: of which new fire all the neighbouring people are bound upon paine *læsæ majestatis*, to fetch for their uses. Where, when the King (which often commeth to passe) wholly to give himselfe unto devotion, giveth over his charge, his next successor is bound to doe like, and convayeth the right of the Kingdome unto the third heire. Where they diversifie the forme of policie, according as their affaires seeme to require: and where they depose their Kings, when they thinke good, and appoint them certaine ancient grave men to undertake and weald the Kingdoms government, which sometimes is also committed to the communitie. Where both men and women are equally circumcised, and alike baptised. Where the Souldier, that in one or divers combats hath presented his King with seven enemies heads, is made noble. Where some live under that so rare and unsociable opinion of the mortalitie of soules. Where women are brought a bed without paine or grieve. Where women on both their legs weare greaves of Copper: and if a louse bite them, they are bound by duty of magnanimitie to bite it againe: and no maid dare marrie, except she have first made offer of her Virginitie to the King. Where they salute one another laying the forefinger on the ground, and then lifting it up toward heaven: where all men beare burthens upon their head, and women on their shoulders. Where women pisse standing, and men cowering. Where in signe of true friendship they send one another some of their owne blood, and offer incense to men which they intend to honour, as they doe to their Gods: where not onely kindred and consanguinitie in the fourth degree, but in any furthest off, can by no meanes be tolerated in marriages: where children sucke till they be four, and sometimes twelve yeares old, in which place they deeme it a dismall thing to give a childe sucke

# THE FIRST BOOKE

the first day of his birth. Where fathers have the charge to punish their male-children, and mothers onely maid-children, and whose punishment is to hang them up by the feet and so to smoke them. Where women are circumcised; where they eat all manner of herbes, without other distinction, but to refuse those that have ill favour: where all things are open, and how faire and rich soever their houses be, they have neither doores nor windowes, nor any chests to locke; yet are all theeves much more severely punished there, than any where else; where, as monckes doe, they kill lice with their teeth, and thinke it a horrible matter to see them crusht between their nailes; where men so long as they live never cut their haire, nor paire their nailes: another place where they onely paire the nailes of their right hand, and those of the left are never cut, but very curiously maintained: where they indeavour to cherish all the haire growing on the right side, as long as it will grow: and very often shave away that of the left-side: where in some Provinces neere unto us, some women cherish their haire before, and other some that behinde, and shave the contrarie: where fathers lend their children, and husbands their wives to their guests, so that they pay ready mony: where men may lawfully get their mothers with childe: where fathers may lie with their daughters, and with their sonnes: where, in solemne assemblies and banquets, without any distinction of bloud or alliance, men will lend one another their children. In some places men feede upon humane flesh, and in others, where it is deemed an office of pietie in children to kill their fathers at a certaine age: in other places fathers appoint what children shall live, and be preserved, and which die and be cast out, whilst they are yet in their mothers wombe: where old husbands lend their wives to yong men, for what use soever they please: In other places, where al women are common without sinne or offence: yea in some places, where for a badge of honour, they weare as many frienged tassels, fastened to the skirt of their garment as they have laine with severall men. Hath not custome also made a severall common-wealth of women? hath it not taught them to manage Armes? to levie Armies, to marshall men, and to deliver battles? And that which

## CHAPTER XXII

Of custome,  
and how a  
received law  
should not  
easily be  
changed



## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XXII strict-searching Philosophie could never perswade the wisest,  
Of custome, doth she not of her owne naturall instinct teach it to the  
and how a grosest headed vulgar? For we know whole nations, where  
received law death is not only condemned, but cherished; where children  
should not of seven yeares of age, without changing of countenance, or  
easily be shewing any signe of dismay, endured to be whipped to  
changed death; where riches and worldly pelfe was so despised and  
holden so contemptible, that the miserablest and neediest  
wretch of a Citie would have scorned to stoope for a purse  
full of gold. Have we not heard of divers most fertile  
regions, plenteously yeelding al maner of necessary victuals,  
where neverthesse the most ordinary cates and daintiest  
dishes, were but bread, water-cresses, and water? Did not  
custome worke this wonder in Chios, that during the space  
of seven hundred yeres it was never found or heard of, that  
any woman or maiden had her honor or honestie called in  
question? And to conclude, there is nothing in mine opinion,  
that either she doth not, or cannot: and with reason doth  
Pindarus, as I have heard say, 'Call her the Queene and  
'Empresse of all the world.' He that was met beating of  
his father, answered, 'It was the custome of his house; that  
'his father had so beaten his grandfather, and he his great-  
'grandfather, and pointing to his sonne, said, this child shall  
'also beat mee, when he shall come to my age.' And the  
father, whom the sonne haled and dragged through thicke  
and thinne in the street, commanded him to stay at a  
certaine doore, for himself had dragged his father no further:  
which were the bounds of the hereditarie and injurious  
demeanours the children of that family were wont to shew  
their fathers. 'By custome,' saith Aristotle, 'as often as by  
'sicknesse, doe we see women tug and teare their haire, bite  
'their nailes, and eat cole and earth: and more by custome  
'than by nature doe men meddle and abuse themselves with  
'men.' The lawes of conscience, which we say to proceed  
from nature, rise and proceed of custome: every man hold-  
ing in special regard, and inward veneration the opinions  
approved, and customes received about him, cannot without  
remorse leave them, nor without applause applie himselfe  
unto them: when those of Creet would in former ages curse  
any man, they besought the Gods to engage him in some



## THE FIRST BOOKE

bad custome. But the chieftest effect of her power is to seize upon us, and so to entangle us, that it shall hardly lie in us, to free our selves from her hold-fast, and come into our wits againe, to discourse and reason of her ordinances; verily, because wee sucke them with the milke of our birth, and forasmuch as the worlds visage presents it selfe in that estate unto our first view, it seemeth we are borne with a condition to follow that course. And the common imaginations we finde in credit about us, and by our fathers seed infused in our soule, seeme to be the generall and naturall. Whereupon it followeth, that whatsoever is beyond the compasse of custome, wee deeme likewise to bee beyond the compasse of reason; God knowes how for the most part, unreasonably. If as we, who study our selves, have learned to doe, every man that heareth a just sentence, would presently consider, how it may in any sort belonging unto his private state, each man should finde, that this is not so much a good word, as a good blow to the ordinary sottishnesse of his judgement. But men receive the admonitions of truth and her precepts, as directed to the vulgar, and never to themselves; and in lieu of applying them to their maners, most men most foolishly and unprofitably apply them to their memorie. But let us returne to customes soveraignty: such as are brought up to libertie, and to command themselves, esteeme all other forme of policie, as monstrous and against nature. Those that are enured to Monarchie doe the like. And what facilitie soever fortune affoordeth them to change, even when with great difficultie they have shaken off the importunitie of a tutor, they run to plant a new one with semblable difficulties, because they cannot resolve themselves to hate tutorship. It is by the meditation of custome, that every man is contented with the place where nature hath settled him: and the savage people of Scotland have nought to doe with Touraine, nor the Scithians with Thessalie. Darius demanded of certaine Græcians, ‘For what they would take upon them ‘the Indians custome, to eat their deceased fathers.’ (For such was their maner, thinking they could not possibly give them a more noble and favourable tombe, than in their owne bowels) they answered him, ‘That nothing in the world

CHAPTER  
XXII  
Of custome,  
and how a  
received law  
should not  
easily be  
changed

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER ' should ever bring them to embrace so inhumane a custome :'  
 XXII But having also attempted to perswade the Indians to leave  
 Of custome, their fashion, and take the Græcians, which was to burne  
 and how a their corpes, they were much more astonied thereat. Every  
 received law man doth so, forsomuch as custome doth so bleare us that  
 should not easily be we cannot distinguish the true visage of things.  
 easily be changed

LUCR. ii. 1037.

*Nil adeo magnum, nec tam mirabile quicquam  
 Principio, quod non minuant mirarier omnes  
 Paulatim.*

Nothing at first so wondrous is, so great,  
 But all, t'admire, by little slake their heat.

Having other times gone about to endeare, and make some one of our observations to be of force, and which was with resolute auctoritie received in most parts about us, and not desiring, as most men doe, onely to establish the same by the force of lawes and examples, but having ever bin from her beginning, I found the foundation of it so weak, that my selfe, who was to confirme it in others, had much adoe to keepe my countenance. This is the receipt by which Plato undertaketh to banish the unnaturall and preposterous loves of his time, and which hee esteemeth Sovereaigne and principall: To wit, that publike opinion may condemne them; that Poets, and all men else may tell horrible tales of them. A receit by meanes whereof the fairest Daughters winne no more the love of their fathers, nor brethren most excellent in beautie, the love of their sisters. The very fables of Thyestes, of Oedipus, and of Macareus, having with the pleasure of their songs infused this profitable opinion, in the tender conceit of children. Certes, chastitie is an excellent vertue, the commoditie whereof is very well knowne: but to use it, and according to nature to prevaile with it, is as hard as it is easie, to endeare it and to prevaile with it according to custome, to lawes and precepts. The first and universall reasons are of a hard perscrutation. And our Masters passe them over in gleaning, or in not daring so much as to taste them, at first sight cast themselves headlong into the libertie or sanctuarie of custome. Those that will not suffer themselves to be drawne out of his originall source, do also commit a greater error, and submit themselves to savage opinions: witnesse Chrysippus; who in so many severall places of his

# THE FIRST BOOKE

compositions, inserted the small accompt he made of con-  
junctions, how incestuous soever they were. Hee that will  
free himselfe from this violent prejudice of custome, shall  
find divers things received with an undoubted resolution,  
that have no other anker but the hoarie head and frowning  
wrinkles of custome, which ever attends them: which maske  
being pulled off, and referring all matters to truth and  
reason, he shall perceive his judgement, as it were overturned,  
and placed in a much surer state. As for example, I wil  
then aske him, what thing can be more strange than to see  
a people bound to follow lawes, he never understood? Being  
in all his domestical affaires, as marriages, donations, testa-  
ments, purchases, and sales, necessarily bound to customary  
rules, which forsomuch as they were never written nor  
published in his owne tongue, he cannot understand, and  
whereof he must of necessity purchase the interpretation  
and use. Not according to the ingenious opinion of Isocrates,  
who counselleth his King 'to make the Trafikes and negotia-  
'tions of his subjects, free, enfranchized and gaineful, and  
'their debates, controversies, and quarrels burthensome, and  
'charged with great subsidies, and impositions': But accord-  
ing to a prodigious opinion, to make open sale, and trafficke  
of reason it selfe, and to give lawes a course of merchandize,  
is very strange. I commend fortune, for that (as our  
Historians report) it was a Gentleman of Gaskonie, and my  
Countriman, that first opposed himselfe against Charles the  
great, at what time he went about to establish the Latine  
and Imperiall lawes amongst us. What is more barbarous  
than to see a nation, where by lawful custome the charge of  
judging is sold, and judgements are paid for with readie  
money; and where justice is lawfully denied him, that hath  
not wherewithall to pay for it; and that this merchandize  
hath so great credit, that in a politicall government there  
should be set up a fourth estate of Lawyers, breath-sellers,  
and pettifoggers, and joyned to the three ancient states, to  
wit, the Clergie, the Nobility, and the Communalitie; which  
fourth state having the charge of lawes, and sometimes  
auctoritie of goods and lives, should make a body, apart,  
and severall from that of Nobilitie, whence double Lawes  
must follow; those of honour, and those of justice; in many

CHAPTER  
XXII  
Of custome,  
and how a  
received law  
should not  
easily be  
changed

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XXII things very contrarie do those as rigorously condemne a lie  
Of custome, pocketed up, as these a lie revenged : by the law and right  
and how a of armes he that putteth up an injurie shall be degraded of  
received law honour and nobilitie ; and he that revengeth himselfe of it,  
should not shall by the civill Law incurre a capitall punishment. Hee  
easily be that shall addresse himselfe to the Lawes to have reason for  
changed some offence done unto his honour, dishonoreth himselfe.  
And who doth not so, is by the Lawes punished and chastised. And of these so different parts, both neverthe-  
lesse having reference to one head ; those having peace, these  
war committed to their charge ; those having the gaine, these  
the honor ; those knowledge, these vertue : those reason,  
these strength : those the word, these action : those justice,  
these valour : those reason, these force : those a long gowne,  
and these a short coat, in partage and share. Touching  
indifferent things, as clothes and garments, whosoever will  
reduce them to their true end, which is the service and  
commodity of the bodie, whence dependeth their originall  
grace and comlines, for the most fantastically to my humour  
that may be imagined, amongst others I will give them our  
square caps ; that long hood of plaited velvet, that hangs  
over our womens heads, with his parti-coloured traile, and  
that vaine and unprofitable modell of a member, which we  
may not so much as name with modestie, whereof not-  
withstanding we make publike shew, and open demonstration.  
These considerations do neverthelesse never distract a man of  
understanding from following the common guise. Rather on  
the contrary, me seemeth, that all severall, strange, and  
particular fashions proceed rather of follie, or ambitious  
affectation, than of true reason : and that a wise man ought  
inwardly to retire his minde from the common presse, and  
hold the same liberty and power to judge freely of all things,  
but for outward matters, he ought absolutely to follow the  
fashions and forme customarily received. Publike societie  
hath nought to do with our thoughts ; but for other things,  
as our actions, our travel, our fortune, and our life, that  
must be accommodated and left to it's service and common  
opinions : as that good and great Socrates, who refused to  
save his life by disobeying the magistrate, yea a magistrate  
most wicked and unjust. For that is the rule of rules, and



# THE FIRST BOOKE

generall law of lawes, for every man to observe those of the place wherein he liveth. CHAPTER XXII

*Νόμοις ἑπεσθαι ποῖσιν ἐγγώριοις καλόν.*

Lawes of the native place,  
To follow, is a grace.

*Gnom. Græc.*  
vii.

Of custome,  
and how a  
received law  
should not  
easily be  
changed

Loe here some of another kind. There riseth a great doubt, whether any so evident profit may be found in the change of a received law, of what nature soever, as there is hurt in removing the same; forsomuch as a well settled policie may be compared to a frame or building of divers parts joyned together with such a ligament as it is impossible to stirre or displace one, but the whole body must needes be shaken, and shew a feeling of it. The Thurians Law-giver instituted, that, 'whosoever would goe about, either to 'abolish any one of the old Lawes, or attempt to establish 'a new, should present himself before the people with a roape 'about his necke, to the end, that if his invention were not 'approved of all men, he should presently bee strangled.' And he of Lacedæmon laboured all his life to get an assured promise of his citizens, that they would never infringe any one of his ordinances. That Ephore or Tribune, who so rudely cut off the two strings, that Phrinis had added unto musicke, respecteth not whether musicke be better or no with them, or whether the accords of it be better filled, he hath sufficient reason to condemne them, because it is an alteration of the old forme. It is that which the old rustie sword of justice of Marseille did signifie. I am distasted with noveltie, what countenance soever it shew: and I have reason so to be, for I have seene very hurtfull effects follow the same. That which so many yeares since doth so presse us, hath not yet exploited all. But some may alleage with apparance, that by accident, it hath produced and engendred all, yea both the mischiefes and ruines, that since are committed without and against it: it is that a man should blame and finde fault with.

*Heu patior telis vulnera facta meis.*

Alas I suffer smart  
Procur'd by mine owne dart.

OVID. *Epist.*  
*Phyl.* 48.

Those which attempt to shake an Estate, are commonly



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XXII

Of custome,  
and how a  
received law  
should not  
easily be  
changed

the first overthrowne by the fall of it : he that is first mover of the same, reapeth not alwayes the fruit of such troubles ; he beats and troubleth the water for others to fish in. The contexture and combining of this monarchie, and great building, having bin dismist and dissolved by it, namely in her old yeares, giveth as much overture and entrance as a man will to like injuries. Royall Majestie doth more hardly fall from the top to the middle, than it tumbleth downe from the middle to the bottom. But if the inventors are more damageable, the imitators are more vicious, to cast themselves into examples, of which they have both felt and punished the horror and mischief. And if there be any degree of honour, even in ill doing, these are indebted to others for the glory of the invention, and courage of the first attempt. All sorts of new licentiousnesse doe haply draw out of this originall and fruitfull source, the images and patterns to trouble our common-wealth. We may reade in our very lawes, made for the remedie of the first evill, the apprenticeship and excuse of all sorts of wicked enterprises : And in favour of publike vices, they are named with new and more pleasing words for their excuses, bastardizing and allaying their true titles : yet it is to reforme our consciences and our conceits, *Honesta oratio est*. 'It is an honest speech and well said.' But the best pretence of innovation or noveltie is most dangerous : *Adeo nihil motum ex antiquo probabile est*. 'So nothing moved out of the first place is allowable' : Yet me seemeth (if I may speake boldly) that it argueth a great selfe-love and presumption, for a man to esteeme his opinions so far, that for to establish them, a man must be faine to subvert a publike peace, and introduce so many inevitable mischiefs, and so horrible a corruption of manners, as civill warres, and alterations of a state bring with them, in matters of such consequence, and to bring them into his owne countrie. Is it not ill husbanded to advance so many certaine and knowne vices, for to combate contested and debatable errors ? Is there any worse kinde of vices, than those which shooke a mans owne conscience and naturall knowledge ? The Senate durst give this defeate in payment about the controversies betweene it and the people for the mysterie of their religion : *Ad deos, id magis quam ad se pertinere : ipsos*

TEREN. *And.*  
act i. sc. I.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

*visuros, ne sacra sua polluantur* : ‘That that did rather  
‘belong to the Gods than to them, and the Gods should  
‘looke at it, that their due rites were not polluted.’  
Agreeing with that, which the Oracle answered those of  
Delphos, in the Median warre, fearing the invasions of the  
Persians. They demanded of that God what they should doe  
with the treasures consecrated to his Temple, whether hide,  
or cary them away : who answered them, that they should  
remove nothing, but take care of themselves, for he was able  
to provide for all things that were fit for him. Christian re-  
ligion hath all the markes of extreme justice and profit, but  
none more apparent than the exact commendation of obedi-  
ence due unto magistrates, and manutention of policies: what  
wonderfull example hath divine wisdom left us, which to  
establish the wel-fare of humane kinde, and to conduct this  
glorious victorie of hers against death and sinne, would not  
do it but at the mercy of our politik order, and hath sub-  
mitted the progresse of it, and the conduct of so high and  
worthie effect, to the blindness and injustice of our observa-  
tions and customes, suffering the innocent blood of so many  
her favored elect to run, and allowing a long losse of yeares  
for the ripening of this inestimable fruit? There is much  
difference betweene the cause of him that followeth the  
formes and lawes of his countrie, and him that undertaketh  
to governe and change them. The first alleageth for his ex-  
cuse, simplicitie, obedience, and example ; whatsoever he doth  
cannot be malice, at the most it is but ill lucke. *Quis est*  
*enim, quem non moveat clarissimis monumentis testata consig-*  
*nataque antiquitas?* ‘For who is he whom antiquitie will  
‘not move, being witnessed and signed with former monu-  
‘ments?’ Besides that which Isocrates saith, that ‘defect  
‘hath more part in moderation, than hath excesse.’ The  
other is in much worse case. For he that medleth with chus-  
ing and changing, usurpeth the authoritie of judging : and  
must resolve himselfe to see the fault of what he hunteth for,  
and the good of what he bringeth in. This so vulgar con-  
sideration hath confirmed me in my state, and restrained my  
youth, that was more rash, from burthening my shoulders  
with so filthie a burthen, as to make my selfe respondent of  
so important a science. And in this to dare, what in sound

CHAPTER

XXII

Of custome,  
and how a  
received law  
should not  
easily be  
changed

CIC. Div. i.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XXII judgement I durst not in the easiest of those wherein I had  
Of custome, beene instructed, and wherein the rashnes of judging is of no  
and how a prejudice. Seeming most impious to me, to goe about to  
received law submit publike constitutions and unmoveable observances, to  
should not the instabilitie of a private fantasie (private reason is but a  
easily be private jurisdiction) and to undertake that on divine-lawes,  
changed which no policie would tolerate in civill law. Wherein

although mans reason have much more commerce, yet are they sovereignly judges of their judges : and their extreme sufficiencie serveth to expound custome and extend the use, that of them is received, and not to divert and innovate the same. If at any time divine providence hath gone beyond the rules, to which it hath necessary constrained us, it is not to give us a dispensation from them. They are blowes of her divine hand, which we ought not imitate, but admire : as extraordinarie examples, markes of an expresse and particular avowing of the severall kinds of wonders, which for a testimonie of her omnipotencie it offereth us, beyond our orders and forces, which it is follie and impietie to goe about to represent, and which we ought not follow but contemplate with admiration, and meditate with astonishment. Acts of her personage, and not of ours. Cotta protesteth very opportunely ; *Quum de religione agitur, T. Coruncanum, P. Scipionem, P. Scævola, Pontifices maximos, non Zenonem, aut Cleanthem, aut Chrysippum, sequor.* ‘When we talke ‘of religion, I follow Titus Coruncanus, Publius Scipio, P. ‘Scævola, and the professors of religion, not Zeno, Cleanthes, ‘or Chrysippus.’

CIC. *De Nat.*  
iii. p.

May God know it in our present quarell, wherein are a hundred articles, yea, great and deepe articles, to be removed and altered, although many there are, who may boast to have exactly survaid the reasons and foundations of one and other faction. It is a number, if it be a number, that should have no great meane to trouble us. But whither goeth all this other throng ? Under what colours doth it quarter it selfe ? It followeth of theirs, as of other weake and ill applied medicines, the humors, that it would have purged in us, it hath enflamed, exasperated, and sharpned, by her conflict, and still do remaine in our bodies. It could not by reason of her weaknesse purge us, but hath rather weakned us ; so

# THE FIRST BOOKE

that we cannot now void it, and by her operation we reape nothing but long, continuall, and intestine griefes and aches, yet is it, that fortune, ever reserving her authoritie above our discourses, doth somtimes present us the urgent necessitie, that lawes must needs yeeld her some place: And when a man resisteth the increase of an innovation, brought in by violence, to keepe himselfe each-where and altogether in rule and bridle against those that have the keyes of fields, to whom all things are lawfull, that may in any sort advance their desaigne, that have not law, nor order, but to follow their advantage, it is a dangerous obligation, and prejudiciall inequalitye.

CHAPTER  
XXII  
Of custome,  
and how a  
received law  
should not  
easily be  
changed

*Aditum nocendi perfido præstat fides.*

Trust in th' untrustie, may  
To hurt make open way.

SEN. *Oed.*  
act iii. sc. I.

For so much as the ordinarie discipline of an estate, that hath his perfect health, doth not provide for these extraordinarie accidents, it presupposeth a bodie holding it selfe in his principall members and offices, and a common consent to observe and obey it. Lawfull proceeding is a cold, dull, heavie and forced proceeding: and is not like to hold out against a licentious and unbridled proceeding. It is yet as all men know, a reproach to those two great personages, Octavius and Cato, in their civill warres; the one of Scilla, the other of Cæsar, because they rather suffered their countrie to incur all extremities, than by her lawes to aid her, or to innovate any thing. For truly in these last necessities, where nothing is left to take hold by, it were peradventure better, to shrug the shoulders, stoope the head, and somewhat yeeld to the stroke, than beyond possibilitie to make head and resist, and be nothing the better, and give violence occasion to trample all underfoot: and better were it to force the lawes to desire but what they may, since they may not what they would. So did he that ordained them to sleep foure and twentie houres: And he who for a time removed one day from the Calender: And another who of the moneth of Iune made a second May. The Lacedemonians themselves, so strict observers of their countries ordinances, being urged by their Lawes, which precisely forbad and inhibited to chuse one man twice to be their Admirall, and on the other side



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXII  
Of custome,  
and how a  
received law  
should not  
easily be  
changed

their affaires necessarily requiring, that Lysander should once more take that charge upon him, they created one Aracus Admirall, but instituted Lysander superintendent of all maritime causes. And with the same sutteltie, one of their Ambassadors being sent to the Athenians for to obtaine the change of some ordinance, Pericles alleaging, that 'it was expresly forbid to remove the table, wherein a law had once beene set downe,' perswaded him but to turne it, for that was not forbidden. It is that whereof Plutarke commendeth Philopæmen, who being borne to command, could not onely command according to the lawes, but the lawes themselves, whensoever publike necessitie required it.

## THE TWENTY-THIRD CHAPTER

Divers events from one selfe same counsell.



AMES AMIOT, great Almoner of France, did once tell me this storie, to the honour of one of our Princes, (and so he was indeed by very good tokens, albeit by off-spring he were a stranger) that during our first troubles, at the siege of Roane, the said Prince being advertised by the Queene-mother of a conspiracie and enterprise, that should be attempted against his life, and by letters particularly informed him of the partie that should performe it, who was a gentle-man of Anjow, or Manse, and who to that purpose did ordinarily frequent the said Princes court; he never imparted that secret or communicated that warning to any man, but the next morrow walking upon Saint Catherins hill, whence our batterie played against the towne (for it was, at what time we laid siege to Roane) with the said Lord great Almoner: and another Bishop by his side, he chanced to descrie the said gentleman, whom the Queene-mother had described unto him, and caused him to be called, who being come before his presence, said thus unto him, perceiving him alreadie to wax pale, and tremble at the



# THE FIRST BOOKE

alarums of his conscience : ‘ Master, such a one, I am fully  
 ‘ perswaded you fore-imagine what I will charge you with,  
 ‘ and your countenance doth plainly shew it, you can con-  
 ‘ ceale nothing from me : for I am so well instructed of your  
 ‘ businesse, that would you goe about to hide it, you should  
 ‘ but marre all, you have perfect knowledge of this and this  
 ‘ thing,’ (which were the chieftest props and devices of the  
 secretest drifts of his complot and conspiracie) ‘ faile not  
 ‘ therefore as you tender your life, to confesse the truth of  
 ‘ all your purpose.’ When the silly man saw himselfe so  
 surprized and convicted (for the whole matter had beene  
 discovered unto the Queene by one of the complices) he had  
 no other way, but to lift up his hands, and beg for grace  
 and mercie at the Princes hands, at whose feete he would  
 have prostrated himselfe, but that he would not let him :  
 thus following his discourse ; ‘ Come hither my friend,’ said  
 he, ‘ Did I ever doe you any displeasure ? Have I ever  
 ‘ through any particular hatred, wronged or offended any  
 ‘ friend of yours ? It is not yet three weekes since I knew  
 ‘ you, what reason might move you to conspire and enter-  
 ‘ prise my death ?’ The Gentleman with a faint-trembling  
 voyce, and selfe-accusing looke, answered him, that no par-  
 ticular occasion had ever moved him to that, but the interest  
 of the generall cause of his faction, and that some of them  
 had perswaded him, that to root out, and in what manner  
 soever, to make away so great an enemy of their religion,  
 would be an execution full of pietie, and a worke of superero-  
 gation. Then said the Prince, ‘ I will shew you how much  
 ‘ the religion which I professe is more milde, than that  
 ‘ whereof you make profession : yours hath perswaded you  
 ‘ to kill me, without hearing me, having never been offended  
 ‘ by me : and mine, commands me to pardon you, convicted  
 ‘ as you are, that you would so treacherously and without  
 ‘ cause have killed me. Goe your way, withdraw your selfe,  
 ‘ let mee never see you here againe, and if you be wise,  
 ‘ hence-forward in your enterprises take honester men for  
 ‘ your counsellors, than those of your religion.’ The Emperour  
 Augustus being in Gaule, received certaine advertisement of  
 a conspiracie, that L. Cinna complotted against him, whereof  
 he purposed to be avenged, and for that purpose sent to all

CHAPTER  
 XXIII  
 Divers events  
 from one selfe  
 same coun-  
 sell

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XXIII  
Divers events  
from one selfe  
same counsell

his friends against the next morrow for advice and counsell, but passed the fore-going night with great anxietie and unrest, considering that following his intent, he should bring a yong Gentleman, well borne, of a noble house, and great Pompeyes nephew, to his death: which perplexitie produced divers strange discourses and consideration in him. 'What?' said he unto himselfe, 'Shall it ever be reported, that I doe live in feare, and suffer mine enemie to walke at his pleasure and libertie? Shall he then go free, that hath attempted and resolved to deprive me of my life, which both by sea and land I have saved from so many civill warres, and from so many battels? And now that I have established an universall peace in the world, shall he be absolved and goe unpunished, that hath not only determined to murther, but to sacrifice me?' (For, the complot of the conspiracie was to murther him, when he should be at sacrifice.) After that, having taken some rest with himselfe, he with a lowder voice began to exclaime and cry out against himselfe, saying, 'Why livest thou, if the lives of so many depend on thy death? Shall thy vengeance and cruelties never have an end? Is thy life of that worth, as it may countervaile the sundry mischiefes that are like to ensue, if it be preserved?' Livia his wife being in bed with him, perceiving his agonie, and hearing his speeches, said thus unto him: 'And may not womens counsels be admitted? Doe as Physitians are wont, who when their ordinarie receipts will not worke, have recourse to the contrarie. Hitherto thou couldest never doe any good with severitie: Lepidus hath followed Savidienus, Murena Lepidus, Cœpio Murena, Egnatius Scœpio; begin now to prove what good lenitie and clemencie will doe thee. Cinna is convicted, pardon him: To annoy or hurt thee now, he is not able, and thou shalt thereby increase thy glory.' Augustus seemed very glad to have found an Advocate of his humour, and having thanked his wife, and countermanded his friends, whom he had summoned to the Counsell, commanded Cinna to be brought before him alone. Then sending all men out of his chamber, and a chaire prepared for Cinna to sit in, he thus bespake him: 'First Cinna, I require to have gentle audience, and that thou wilt not

# THE FIRST BOOKE

‘ interrupt my speech, which ended, I will give thee time  
 ‘ and leasure to answer me: Thou knowest (oh Cinna) that  
 ‘ when I had taken thee prisoner in mine enemies campe,  
 ‘ who wast not only become, but borne my foe; I saved  
 ‘ thee, then put thee in quiet possession of thy goods, and  
 ‘ at last, have so enriched thee, and placed thee in so high a  
 ‘ degree, that even the conquerours are become envious over  
 ‘ the conquered. The Priests office, which thou beggedst  
 ‘ at my hands, I freely bestowed on thee, having first refused  
 ‘ the same to others, whose fathers and friends had in many  
 ‘ battels shed their blood for me: After all which benefits,  
 ‘ and that I had in dutie tied thee so fast unto me, thou  
 ‘ hast notwithstanding undertaken to kill me.’ To whom  
 Cinna replied, crying alowd, ‘ That he had never so much as  
 ‘ conceived so wicked a thought, much lesse entertained the  
 ‘ same.’ ‘ Oh Cinna, this is not according to thy promise,’  
 answered then Augustus, ‘ which was, that thou wouldest  
 ‘ not interrupt me: What I say, is true, thou has under-  
 ‘ taken to murder me, in such a place, on such a day, in  
 ‘ such a company, and in such manner:’ and seeing him so  
 amazed in heart, and by his evidence stricken dumbe,  
 moved thereunto, not by the condition of his promise, but  
 by the guilt of his selfe-accusing conscience; ‘ why wouldest  
 ‘ thou doe it,’ replied he, ‘ is it because thou wouldest be  
 ‘ Emperour? Truely the commonwealth is but in hard con-  
 ‘ dition, if none but my selfe hinder thee from the Empire.  
 ‘ Thou canst not so much as defend thine owne house, and  
 ‘ didst but lately lose a processe, only by the favor of a seely  
 ‘ libertine. What? hast thou no meane or power in any  
 ‘ other matter, but to attempt Cæsars life? I quit it, if  
 ‘ there be no man but my selfe to impeach thy hopes. Sup-  
 ‘ posest thou that Paulus, that Fabius, that the Cossenians,  
 ‘ or the Servillians will ever permit thee? And so great a  
 ‘ troupe of noble men, noble, not only in name, but such as  
 ‘ by their vertues honour their nobilitie, will ever suffer it.’  
 After many other such like discourses (for he talked with  
 him more than 2 houres) he said unto him; ‘ Away, oh  
 ‘ Cinna, that life which once I gave thee, as to an enemy, I  
 ‘ now give thee againe, as to a traitour, and a patricide:  
 ‘ let a true friendship from this day forward begin betwene

CHAPTER  
 XXIII  
 Divers events  
 from one selfe  
 same coun-  
 sell

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXIII  
Divers events  
from one selfe  
same coun-  
sell

‘ us, let us strive together, which of us two with a better  
‘ faith shall out-goe the other, and whether I have given  
‘ thy life, or thou hast received the same with great con-  
‘ fidence : ’ and so left him. Shortly after he gave him the  
Consulship, blaming him that he durst not aske it of him.  
And ever after held him as his deere friend, and made him  
alone, heire and executor of his goods. Now after this  
accident, which hapned to Augustus in the xl. yeare of  
his age, there was never any conspiracie or enterprise  
attempted against him ; and he received a just reward  
for his so great clemency. But the like succeeded not to  
our Prince, for his mildnesse and lenitie could not so warrant  
him, but that afterward he fell into the snares of the like  
treason : so vaine and frivolous a thing is humane wisdom :  
and contrary to all projects, devices, counsels, and precautions,  
fortune doth ever keepe a full sway and possession of all  
events. We count those Physitians happy and successeful,  
that successefully end a desperate cure, or come to a good  
issue : as if there were no other art but theirs, that could  
not subsist of it selfe, and whose foundations were too feeble  
to stand and relie upon her owne strength : and as if there  
were none but it, that stands in need of fortunes helpe-  
affording hand, for the effecting of her operations. My  
conceit of it, is both the worst and the best a man may  
imagine : for thanks be to God, there is no commerce  
betweene us : I am contrary to others ; for I ever despise it,  
and when I am sick, in stead of entring into league or com-  
position with it, I then beginne to hate and feare it most :  
and answer such as urge mee to take Physicke, that at least  
they will tarie till such time as I have recovered my health  
and strength againe ; that then I may the better be enabled  
to endure the violence and hazard of their potions. I let  
nature worke, and presuppose unto my selfe, that she hath  
provided her selfe, both of teeth and clawes, to defend her  
self from such assaults as shall beset her, and to maintaine  
this contexture or frame, whose dissolution it so much hateth.  
In liew of bringing helpe unto her, when shee most striveth,  
and is combated by sicknesse, I greatly feare lest I bring  
succor unto her adversarie, and surcharge her with new  
enemies. Now I conclude, that not onely in Physicke, but



# THE FIRST BOOKE

likewise in sundry more certaine arts, fortune hath great share in them. The Poeticall furies, which ravish and transport their Author beyond himselfe, why shall we not ascribe them to his good fortune, since himselfe confesseth, that they exceed his strength and sufficiencie, and acknowledgeth to proceed from elsewhere, than from himselfe, and that they are not in his power, no more than Orators say to have those strange motions and extraordinary agitations, that in their art transport them beyond their purpose? The like wee see to bee in painting, for sometimes the Painters hand shall draw certaine lines or draughts, so farre exceeding his conception or skill, that himselfe is forced to enter into admiration and amazement. But fortune yet doth much more evidently shew, the share shee hath in all their workes, by the graces and beauties that often are found in them, not onely beyond the intent, but besides the very knowledge of the workman. A heedy Reader shall often discover in other mens compositions, perfections farre-differing from the Authors meaning, and such as haply he never dreamed of, and illustrateth them with richer senses, and more excellent constructions. As for military enterprises, no man is so blinde but seeth what share fortune hath in them: even in our counsels and deliberations, some chance or good lucke must needs be joyned to them, for whatsoever our wisdom can effect, is no great matter. The sharper and quicker it is, more weaknesse findes it in it selfe, and so much the more doth it distrust it selfe. I am of Sillaes opinion: and when I nearest consider the most glorious exploits of warre, me thinkes I see, that those who have the conduct of them, employ neither counsell nor deliberation about them, but for fashion-sake, and leave the best part of the enterprise to fortune, and on the confidence they have in her ayd, they still go beyond the limits of all discourse. Casuall rejoycings, and strange furies ensue among their deliberations, which for the most induce them to take the counsell least grounded upon apparence or reason, and which quaille their courage beyond reason; whence it hath succeeded unto divers great Captaines, by giving credit to such rash counsels, and alleaging to their souldiers, that by some divine inspiration, and other signes and prognostications, they were

CHAPTER  
XXIII  
Divers events  
from one selfe  
same coun-  
sell



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER encouraged to such and such enterprises. Loe here where-  
XXIII fore in this uncertainty and perplexitie, which the impuis-  
Divers events sances and inabilitie doth bring us to see and chuse what  
from one selfe sances and inabilitie doth bring us to see and chuse what  
same coun- is most commodious, for the difficulties which the divers  
sell accidents and circumstances of everie thing draw with them :  
the surest way, if other considerations did not invite us  
thereto, is, in my conceit, to follow the partie, wherein is  
most honestie and justice ; and since a man doubteth of the  
nearest way, ever to keepe the right. As in these two  
examples I have lately mentioned, there is no doubt, but  
that it was more commendable and generous in him, who  
had received the offence, to remit and pardon the same,  
than to have done otherwise. If the first had but ill successe,  
his good intent is not to be blamed ; and no man knoweth,  
had he taken the contrary way, whether he should have  
escaped the end, to which his destinie called him ; and then  
had he lost the glorie and commendations of so seld-seene  
humanitie. Sundrie men possessed with this feare, are read-  
of in ancient Histories ; the greatest part of which have  
followed the way of fore-running the conspiracies, which  
were complotted against them, by revenge or tortures, but  
I see very few, that by this remedy have received any good ;  
witnesses so many Romane Emperours. Hee that perceiveth  
himselfe to bee in this danger, ought not much to relie upon  
his power, or hope in his vigilancie. For, how hard a matter  
is it, for a man to warrant and safeguard himselfe from an  
emie, that masks under the visage of the most officious  
and heartie-seeming friend we have ? And to know the  
inward thoughts and minde-concealed meanings of such as  
daily attend, and are continually with us ? It will little  
availe him to have forraine nations to his guard, and ever to  
be encircled about with troupes of Armed men ? whosoever  
he be that resolveth to condemne his owne life, may at any  
time become Master of other mens lives.

Moreover that continuall suspicion, which makes the  
Prince to mistrust every body, should be a wonderfull vexa-  
tion to his minde. And therefore when Dion was advertised  
that Calippus watched to kill him, could never finde in his  
heart to informe himselfe of it : affirming ; ‘ He had rather  
die once, than ever live in feare and miserie, and to guard

## THE FIRST BOOKE

‘himselfe not onely from his enemies, but from his very friends.’ Which thing Alexander presented more lively and undauntedly by effect, who by a letter of Parmenio having received advertisement, that Philip his neerest and best regarded Physitian, had with money beene suborned and corrupted by Darius, to poison him, who at the very instant that he gave Philip the letter to reade, swallowed downe a potion he had given him: was it not to expresse his resolution, that if his friends would kill him, he would not shun them, but consent to their treachery? This Prince is the Sovereigne patterne of hazardous attempts: yet know I not whether in all his life, he shewed an act of more resolute constancie, than this, nor an ornament so many wayes famous. Those which daily preach and buzze in Princes eares, under colour of their safetie, a heedy diffidence and ever-warie distrustfulnesse, doe nought but tell them of their ruine, and further their shame and downfall. No noble act is atchieved without danger. I know one by his owne complexion of a right martial courage, and ready for any resolution, whose good and hopefull fortune is dayly corrupted by such verball perswasions; as first to keepe close with his friends; never to listen to any reconciliation with his old enemies: to stand upon his owne guard; never to commit himselfe to any stronger than himselfe, what faire promise soever they make him, or whatsoever apparant profit they seeme to containe. I also know another, who because he did ever follow the contrarie counsell, and would never listen to such schoole-reasons, hath beyond all hope raised his fortune above the common reach. That boldnesse wherewith they so greedily gape after glory, is alwayes at hand, when ever need shall be, as gloriously in a doublet as in an armour; in a cabinet as in a campe; the arme held downe, as lifted up. A wisdome so tenderly precise, and so precisely circumspect, is a mortall enemy to haughty executions. Scipio, to sound the depth of Siphax intent, and to discover his minde; leaving his armie, and abandoning the yet unsettled country of Spaine, which under his new conquest of it, was likely to be suspected, he I say, could passe into Affrike onely with two simple ships or small barkes, to commit himselfe in a strange and foe countrie, to engage his

CHAPTER  
XXIII  
Divers events  
from one selfe  
same coun-  
sell

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXIII  
Divers events  
from one selfe  
same coun-  
sell

person, under the power of a barbarous King, under an unknowne faith, without either hostage, or letters of credence, yea without any body, but onely upon the assurance of the greatnesse of his courage, of his succesfull good fortune, and of the promise of his high-raised hopes. *Habita fides ipsam plerumque fidem obligat.* 'Most commonly 'trusting obligeth trustinesse. To an ambitious and fame-aspiring minde, contrariwise, a man must yeeld little, and cary a hard hand against suspitions: Feare and distrust draw on offences and allure them. The most mistrustfull of our Kings established his affaires, and setled his estate, especially because he had voluntarily given over, abandoned and committed his life and libertie, to the hands and mercy of his enemies: Seeming to put his whole confidence in them, that so they might likewise conceive an undoubted affiance in him. Cæsar did onely confront his mutinous legions, and oppose his hardly-ruled Armies, with the minde-quelling authoritie of his countenance, and awe-moving fiercenesse of his words: and did so much trust himselfe and his fortune, that he no whit feared to abandon and commit himselfe to a seditious and rebellious Armie.

LUCAN. v. 296.

—*stetit aggere fulti  
Cæspitis, intrepidus vultu, meruitque timeri  
Nil metuens.*

He on a rampart stood of turfe uprear'd,  
Fearelesse, and fearing none was to be fear'd.

True it is, that this undaunted assurance cannot so fully and lively be represented, but by those in whom the imagination or apprehension of death, and of the worst that may happen, can strike no amazement at all: for, to represent it fearefully-trembling, doubtfull and uncertaine, for the service of an important reconciliation, is to effect no great matter: It is an excellent motive to gaine the heart and good will of others, for a man to go and submit himselfe to them, provided it be done freely, and without constraint of any necessitie, and in such sort, that a man bring a pure and unspotted confidence with him, and at least his countenance void of all scruple. Being yet a childe, I saw a gentleman, who had the command of a great Citie, and by a commotion

## THE FIRST BOOKE

of a seditiously furious people greatly put to his plunges, who to suppress the rising fire of this tumult, resolved to sally out from a strongly assured place, where he was safe, and yeeld himselfe to that many-headed monster mutinous rowt; thrived so ill by it, that he was miserably slaine amongst them: yet deeme I not his oversight to have beene so great in issuing out, his memorie being of most men condemned, as because he tooke a way of submission, and remissenesse, and attempted to extinguish that rage and hurly-burly, rather by way of following, than of guiding, and by requiring sute, than by demonstrative resolution: and I deeme, a gratically milde severitie, with a militarie commandement, full of confidence and securitie, beseeeming his ranke, and the dignitie of his charge, had better availed him, had beene more succesfull, at least with more honour, and well seeming comlinesse. There is nothing lesse to bee expected or hoped for at the hands of this monstrous faced multitude, thus agitated by furie, than humanitie and gentlenesse; it will much sooner receive reverence, and admit feare. I might also blame him, that having undertaken a resolution (in my judgement, rather brave than rash) to cast himselfe inconsiderately, weake and unarmed, amidst a tempestuous Ocean of senselesse and mad men, he should have gone through stitch with it, and not leave the person he represented in the briers, whereas after he had perceived the danger at hand, he chanced to bleed at the nose; and then to change that demisse and flattering countenance he had undertaken, into a dismaid and drooping looke, filling both voice and eyes with astonishment and repentance: and seeking to squat himselfe, hee the more enflamed, and called them upon him. It was determined, there should be a generall muster made of divers troupes of armed men (a place fittest for secret revenges, and where they may safest be atchieved) there were most apparant reasons, that the place was very unsure, or at least, to be suspected, by such as were to have the principall and necessary charge to survey them. Divers counsels were proposed, sundry opinions heard, as in a subject of great difficultie, and on which depended so many weightie consequences. My advice was, they should carefully avoid to give any testimonie of suspicion, or shew

CHAPTER

XXIII

Divers events  
from one selfe  
same coun-  
sell



## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXIII  
Divers events  
from one selfe  
same coun-  
sell

of doubt, and that our troupes should be as full as might be, and the Fyles orderly ranked, and every Souldier shew an undaunted carriage, and undismayed countenance, and in stead of keeping some of our forces backe (which thing most opinions aimed at) all Captaines should be put in minde to admonish their Souldiers to make their sallies as orderly and as strong as might be, in honour of the assistance; and spare no powder, which would serve as a gratification toward these suspectfull troupes, which afterward caused a mutuall and profitable confidence. I finde the course that Iulius Cæsar held to be the best a man may take: First he assayed by clemencie to purchase the love of his very enemies, contenting himselfe in the conspiracies that were discovered unto him, simply to shew they were not unknownen to him, but had perfect notice of them. That done, he tooke a most noble resolution, which was, without dread or dismay, or any care-taking, to attend whatsoever might betide him, wholly abandoning and remitting himselfe into the hands of the Gods and of fortune. For certainly, it is the state wherein he was, when he was murthered in the Senate. A stranger having published every where, that he could teach Dionysius the tyrant of Siracusa a way to understand and discover the very certaintie of all the practices, his subjects or any else should practise against him, if he would bestow a good summe of money upon him: Dionysius being therof advertised, sent for him, to discover the secret and understand the truth of so necessarie an art for his preservation: the stranger told him, there was no other skill in his art, but that he should deliver him a talent, and then boast hee had learned the use of so unvaluable a secret of him. Dionysius allowed of his invention, and forthwith caused six hundred crownes to be delivered him. It is not likely that ever he would have given so great a summe of mony to an unknowne man, but in reward of a most profitable instruction; for by way of this reputation he kept his enemies still in awe. And therefore doe Princes wisely publish such advertisements as they receive of the plots conspired, and treasons practised against their lives and states, thereby to make men beleieve, that nothing can be attempted against them, but they shall have knowledge of it. The Duke of



# THE FIRST BOOKE

Athens committed many fond oversights in the establishing of his late tyrannie upon the Florentines, but this the chiefest, that having received the first advertisement of the Monopolies and Complots the Florentines contrived against him, by Mathew, surnamed Morozo, one of the complices, thinking to suppress this warning, and conceale that any in the Citie were offended at him, or grudged at his rule, caused him immediatly to be put to death. I remember to have heretofore read the storie of a Romane (a man of speciall dignitie) who flying the tyrannie of the Triumvirate, had many times by the suddertie of his invention, escaped those who pursued him. It fortun'd upon a day, that a troupe of horse-men, who had the charge to apprehend him, passing alongst a hedge, under which he lay lurking, had well-nigh discovered him; which he perceiving, and considering the dangers and difficulties he had so long endured, thinking to save himselfe from the continuall and daily searches that every where were made after him, and calling to minde the small pleasure he might hope of such a life, and how much better it were for him to die once, than live in such continuall feare and agonie, himselfe called them, and voluntarily discovered his lurking hole, and that he might rid them and himselfe from further pursuit and care, did willingly yeeld unto their crueltie. For a man to call his enemies to aid him, is a counsell somewhat rash, yet thinke I, it were better to embrace it, than remaine still in the continuall fit of such a fever that hath no remedie. But since the provisions of man may apply unto it, are full of unquietnesse and uncertaintie, much better is it with a full assurance to prepare himselfe patiently to endure whatsoever may happen, and draw some comfort from that, which a man is never sure shall come to passe.

CHAPTER  
XXIII  
Divers events  
from one selfe  
same coun-  
sell

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## THE TWENTY-FOURTH CHAPTER

### Of Pedantisme.



HAVE in my youth oftentimes beene vexed, to see a Pedant brought in, in most of Italian comedies, for a vice or sport-maker, and the nicke-name or Magister to be of no better signification amongst us. For, my selfe being committed to their tuition, how could I chuse but be somewhat jealous of their reputation? In deed I sought to excuse them by reason of the naturall disproportion that is betweene the vulgar sort, and rare and excellent men, both in judgement and knowledge: forsomuch as they take a cleane contrarie course one from another. But when I considered, the choysest men were they, that most contemned them, I was far to seeke, and as it were lost my selfe, witnesse our good Bellay:

BELLAY.

*Mais je hay par sur tout un scavoir pedantesque.*

A pedant knowledge, I  
Detest out of all cry.

Yet is this custome very ancient; for Plutarch saith, ‘that Greeke and Scholer, were amongst the Romans, words of reproach and imputation.’ And comming afterwards to yeares of more discretion, I have found they had great reason, and that *magis magnos clericos, non sunt magis magnos sapientes*: ‘The most great Clerkes are not the ‘most wisest men.’ But whence it may proceed, that a minde rich in knowledge, and of so many things, becommeth thereby never livelier nor more quicke-sighted; and a grose-headed and vulgar spirit may without amendment containe the discourse and judgement of the most excellent wits the world ever produced, I still remaine doubtfull. To receive so many, so strange, yea and so great wits, it must needs follow (said once a Lady unto me, yea one of our chiefeest Princesses, speaking of some body) ‘that a mans owne wit, ‘force, droope, and as it were diminish it selfe, to make

## THE FIRST BOOKE

‘ roome for others.’ I might say, that as plants are choked by over-much moisture, and lamps dammed with too much oyle, so are the actions of the mind over-whelmed by over-abundance of matter and studie: which occupied and intangled with so great a diversitie of things, loseth the meane to spread and cleare it selfe; and that surcharge keepeth it low-drooping and faint. But it is otherwise, for our mind stretcheth the more by how much more it is replenished. And in examples of former times, the contrary is seene, of sufficient men in the managing of publike affaires, of great Captaines, and notable Counsellors in matters of estate, to have been therewithall excellently wise. And concerning Philosophers, retired from all publike negotiations, they have indeed sometimes been vilified, by the comike libertie of their times, their opinions and demeanors yeelding them ridiculous. Will you make them Judges of the right of a processe, or of the actions of a man? They are readie for it. They enquire whether there be any life yet remaining, whether any motion. Whether man be any thing but an Oxe, what working or suffering is; what strange beasts law and justice are. Speake they of the Magistrate, or speake they unto him; they do it with an unreverent and uncivill libertie. Heare they a Prince or a King commended? Hee is but a shepherd to them, as idle as a Swaine busied about milking of his cattell, or shearing of his sheepe: but yet more rudely. Esteeme you any man the greater for possessing two hundred acres of land? They scoffe at him, as men accustomed to embrace all the world, as their possession. Do you boast of your Nobilitie, because you can blazon your descent of seven or eight rich Grandfathers? They will but little regard you, as men that conceive not the universall image of nature, and how many predecessors every one of us hath had, both rich and poore, Kings and groomes, Greekes and Barbarians. And were you lineally descended in the fiftieth degree from Hercules, they deeme it a vanitie to vaunt or alleage this gift of fortune. So did the vulgar sort disdaine them as ignorant of the first and common things, and as presumptuous and insolent. But this Platonicall lustre is far from that which our men stand in need of. They were envied as being beyond the common sort, as despising publike actions,

CHAPTER  
XXIV  
Of Pedant-  
isme

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXIV  
Of Pedant-  
isme

PACUVIUS,  
*Lips.* i. 10.

as having proposed unto themselves a particular and inimitable life, aiming and directed at certaine high discourses, and from the common use : these are disdained as men beyond the ordinary fashion, as incapable of publike charges, as leading an unsociable life, and professing base and abject customs, after the vulgar kind. *Odi homines ignavos opera, Philosophos sententia.* ‘I hate men that are fooles in working, and Philosophers in speaking.’ As for those Philosophers, I say, that as they were great in knowledge, so were they greater in all action. And even as they report of that Syracusan Geometrician, who being taken from his bookish contemplation, to shew some practice of his skill, for the defence of his countrie, reared sodainly certaine terror-moving engines, and shewed effects farre exceeding all mens conceit, himselve notwithstanding disdaining all this his handiworkes, supposing he had thereby corrupted the dignitie of his art ; his engines and manuall works being but the apprenticeships, and trials of his skill in sport : So they, if at any time they have been put to the triall of any action, they have been seen to flie so high a pitch, and with so loftie a flight, that men might apparantly see their minds and spirits were through the intelligence of things, become wonderfully rich and great. But some perceiving the seat of politike government possessed by unworthy and incapable men, have withdrawne themselves from it. And hee who demanded of Crates, how long men should Philosophize, received this answer, Untill such time as they who have the conduct of our Armies be no longer blockish asses. Heraclitus resigned the royaltie unto his brother. And to the Ephesians, who reproved him for spending his time in playing with children before the temple : hee answered, And is it not better to doe so, than to governe the publike affaires in your companie ? Others having their imagination placed beyond fortune and the world, found the seat of justice, and the thrones of Kings, to be but base and vile. And Empedocles refused the royaltie, which the Agrigentines offered him. Thales sometimes accusing the carke and care men tooke about good husbandry, and how to grow rich ; some replied unto him, that he did as the Fox, because he could not attaine unto it himselve : which hearing, by way of sport



# THE FIRST BOOKE

CHAPTER  
XXIV  
Of Pedant-  
isme

he would needs shew by experience how he could at his pleasure become both thriftie and rich ; and bending his wits to gaine and profit, erected a traffike, which within one yeare brought him such riches, as the skilfullest in the trade of thriving, could hardly in all their life devise how to get the like. That which Aristotle reporteth of some, who called both him, and Anaxagoras, and such like men, wise, and not prudent, because they cared not for things more profitable : besides, I doe not verie well digest this nice difference of words, that serveth my find-fault people for no excuse : and to see the base and needie fortune, wherewith they are content, we might rather have just cause to pronounce them, neither wise nor prudent. I quit this first reason, and thinke it better to say, that this evill proceedeth from the bad course they take to follow sciences ; and that respecting the manner we are instructed in them, it is no wonder if neither Schollers nor Masters, howbeit they prove more learned, become no whit more sufficient. Verily the daily care, and continuall charges of our fathers, aymeth at nothing so much, as to store our heads with knowledge and learning ; as for judgement and vertue, that is never spoken of. If a man passe by, crie out to our people ; ‘ Oh what a wise man goeth yonder ! ’ And of another : ‘ Oh what a good man is yonder ! ’ He will not faile to cast his eyes and respect toward the former. A third crier were needfull, to say, ‘ Oh what blocke-heads are those ! ’ We are ever readie to aske, ‘ Hath he any skill in the Greeke and Latine tongue ? can he write well ? doth hee write in prose or verse ? ’ But whether hee be growne better or wiser, which should be the chieftest of his drift, that is never spoken of, we should rather enquire who is better wise, than who is more wise. We labour, and toyle, and plod to fill the memorie, and leave both understanding and conscience emptie. Even as birds flutter and skip from field to field to pecke up corne, or any graine, and without tasting the same, carrie it in their bills, therewith to feed their little ones ; so doe our pedants gleane and picke learning from bookes, and never lodge it further than their lips, only to degorge and cast it to the wind. It is strange how fitly sottishnesse takes hold of mine example. Is not that which I doe in the greatest part of this composi-



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XXIV Of Pedant- isme

SEN. *Epist.*  
cviii.

tion, all one and selfe same thing? I am ever heere and there picking and culling, from this and that booke, the sentences that please me, not to keepe them (for I have no store-house to reserve them in) but to transport them into this: where, to say truth, they are no more mine, than in their first place: we are (in mine opinion) never wise, but by present learning, not by that which is past, and as little by that which is to come. But which is worse, their Schollers, and their little ones are never a whit the more fed or better nourished: but passeth from hand to hand, to this end only, thereby to make a glorious shew, therewith to entertaine others, and with it's helpe to frame some quaint stories, or prettie tales, as of a light and counterfeited coyne, unprofitable for any use or imployment, but to reckon and cast accompts. *Apud alios loqui didicerunt, non ipsi secum. Non est loquendum, sed gubernandum.* 'They have learned to speake with others, not with themselves: speaking is not so requisite as government.' Nature, to shew that nothing is savage in whatsoever she produceth, causeth oftentimes, even in rudest and most unarted nations, productions of spirits to arise, that confront and wrestle with the most artist productions. As concerning my discourse, is not the Gaskonie proverbe, drawne from a bag-pipe, prettie and quaint? *Bouha prou bouha, mas à remuda lous dits quèm.* 'You may blow long enough, but if once you stirre your fingers, you may go seeke.' Wee can talke and prate, Cicero saith thus, These are Platoes customes, These are the verie words of Aristotle; but what say we our selves? what doe we? what judge we? A Peroquet would say as much. This fashion puts me in mind of that rich Romane, who to his exceeding great charge had bene verie industrious to finde out the most sufficient men in all sciences, which he continually kept about him, that if at any time occasion should bee moved amongst his friends to speake of any matter pertaining to Schollership, they might supplie his place, and be readie to assist him: some with discourse, some with a verse of Homer, othersome with a sentence, each one according to his skill or profession; who perswaded himselfe that all such learning was his owne, because it was contained in his servants minds. As they doe whose sufficiencie is placed in their sumptuous

# THE FIRST BOOKE

libraries. I know some, whom if I aske what he knoweth, hee will require a booke to demonstrate the same, and durst not dare to tell me that his posteriors are scabious, except he turne over his Lexicon to see what posteriors and scabious is, wee take the opinions and knowledge of others into our protection, and that is all: I tell you they must be infeoffed in us, and made our owne. Wee may verie well be compared unto him, who having need of fire, should goe fetch some at his neighbours chimney, where finding a good fire, should there stay to warme himselfe, forgetting to carrie some home, what avails it us to have our bellies full of meat, if it be not digested? If it bee not transchanged in us? except it nourish, augment, and strengthen us? May we imagine that Lucullus, whom learning made and framed so great a Captaine without experience, would have taken it after our manner? Wee relie so much upon other mens armes, that we disanull our owne strength. Will I arme my selfe against the feare of death? it is at Senecaes cost: will I draw comfort either for my selfe, or any other? I borrow the same of Cicero. I would have taken it in my selfe, had I been exercised unto it: I love not this relative and begd-for sufficiencie. Suppose we may be learned by other mens learning. Sure I am, we can never be wise, but by our owne wisdom.

CHAPTER  
XXIV  
Of Pedant-  
isme

Μισῶ σοφιστήν, ὅστις οὐχ αὐτῷ σοφός.

That wise man I cannot abide,  
That for himself cannot provide.

*Proverb.  
Iamb.*

*Ex quo Ennius: Nequidquam sapere sapientem, qui ipsi sibi prodesse non quiret.* Whereupon saith Ennius: ‘That  
‘ wise man is vainly wise, who could not profit himselfe.’

ENNIUS.

—si cupidus, si  
Vanus, et Eugeneâ quantumvis vilior agnâ.

If covetous, if vaine (not wise)  
Than any lambe more base, more nice.

JUVENAL. Sat.  
viii. 14.

*Non enim paranda nobis solum, sed fruenda sapientia est.* CIC. *Finit.* i.  
‘For, wee must not only purchase wisdom, but enjoy and p-  
‘ employ the same.’ Dionysius scoffeth at those Gramarians,  
who ploddingly labour to know the miseries of Ulysses, and  
are ignorant of their owne; mocketh those Musitians, that

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXIV  
Of Pedant-  
isme

so attentively tune their instruments, and never accord their manners; derideth those Orators, that studie to speake of justice, and never put it in execution. Except our mind be the better, unlesse our judgement be the sounder, I had rather my scholler had imployed his time in playing at Tennis; I am sure his bodie would be the nimbler. See but one of these our universitie men or bookish schollers returne from schole, after he hath there spent ten or twelve yeares under a Pedants charge: who is so unapt for any matter? who so unfit for any companie? who so to seeke if he come into the world? all the advantage you discover in him, is, that his Latine and Greeke have made him more sottish, more stupid, and more presumptuous, then before he went from home. Whereas he should returne with a mind full-fraught, he returnes with a wind-puft conceit: in stead of plum-feeding the same, he hath only spunged it up with vanitie. These Masters, as Plato speaketh of Sophisters (their cosin Germanes) of all men, are those that promise to be most profitable unto men, and alone, amongst all, that not only amend not what is committed to their charge, as doth a carpenter or a mason, but empaire and destroy the same, and yet they must full dearely be paid. If the law which Protagoras proposed to his disciples, were followed, which was, that either they should pay him according to his word, or sweare in the temple, how much they esteemed the profit they had received by his discipline, and accordingly satisfie him for his paines, my Pedagogues would be aground, especially if they would stand to the oath of my experience. My vulgar Perigordin-speech doth verie pleasantly terme such selfe-conceited wisards, Letter-ferits, as if they would say letter-strucken men, to whom (as the common saying is) letters have given a blow with a mallet. Verily for the most part they seeme to be distracted even from common sense. Note but the plaine husbandman, or the unwillie shoemaker, and you see them simply and naturally plod on their course, speaking only of what they know, and no further; whereas these letter-puft pedants, because they would faine raise themselves aloft, and with their literall doctrine which floteth up and downe the superficies of their braine, arme themselves beyond other men, they uncessantly

# THE FIRST BOOKE

intricate and entangle themselves: they utter loftie words, and speake golden sentences, but so that another man doth place, fit, and applie them. They are acquainted with Galen, but know not the disease. They will stuffe your head with lawes, when God wot they have not yet conceived the ground of the case. They know the Theorike of all things, but you must seeke who shall put it in practice. I have seene a friend of mine, in mine owne house, who by way of sport talking with one of these pedanticall gulls, counterfeited a kind of fustian tongue, and spake a certain gibbrish, without rime or reason, sans head or foot, a hotch-pot of divers things, but that he did often enterlace it with inkepot termes, incident to their disputations, to amuse the bookish sot for a whole day long with debating and contending; ever thinking he answered the Objections made unto him; yet was he a man of letters and reputation, a graduate, and wore a goodly formall long gowne.

CHAPTER  
XXIV  
Of Pedant-  
isme

*Vos ô patritius sanguis quos vivere par est  
Occipiti cæco, posticæ occurrite sannæ.*

PERS. Sat. i.  
61.

You noble blouds, who with a noddle blind,  
Should live, meet with the mocke that's made behind.

Whosoever shall narrowly looke into this kind of people, which far and wide hath spred it selfe, he shall find (as I have done,) that for the most part, they neither understand themselves, nor others, and that their memorie is many times sufficiently full fraught, but their judgement ever hollow and emptie: except their natural inclination have of it selfe otherwise fashioned them. As I have seene Adrianus Turnebus, who having never professed any thing but studie and letters, wherein he was, in mine opinion, the worthiest man that lived these thousand yeares, and who notwithstanding had no Pedanticall thing about him, but the wearing of his gowne, and some externall fashions, that could not well be reduced, and incivilized to the courtiers cut; things of no consequence. And I naturally hate our people, that will more hardly endure a long robe uncuriously worne, than a crosse skittish mind: and that observe what leg, or reverence he makes, note his garbe or demeanor, view his boots, or his hat, and marke what manner of man he is. For his inward parts, I deeme him to have been one of the most unspotted



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXIV  
Of Pedant-  
isme

and truly honest minds that ever was. I have sundry times of purpose urged him to speak of matters furthest from his study, wherein he was so cleare-sighted, and could with so quicke an apprehension conceive, and with so sound a judgement distinguish them, that he seemed never to have professed or studied other facultie than warre, and matters of state. Such spirits, such natures may be termed worthy, goodly, and solid.

JUVEN. *Sat.*  
xiv. 34.

—*queis arte benigna*  
*Et meliore luto finxit præcordia Titan.*  
Whose bowels heavens-bright-Sunne composed  
Of better mold, art wel disposed.

That maintaine themselves against any bad institution. Now it sufficeth not that our institution marre us not, it must change us to the better. There are some of our Parliaments and Courts, who when they are to admit of any officers, doe only examine them of their learning; others, that by presenting them the judgement of some law cases, endeavour to sound their understanding. Me thinks the latter keep the better stile: And albeit these two parts are necessarie, and both ought to concur in one, yet truly should that of learning be lesse prized than judgement, this may well be without the other, and not the other without this. For as the Greeke verse saith,

*Comm. Græc.*  
π. ct φ. ult.

‘Ως οὐδὲν ἡ μάθησις, ἢ μὴ νοῦς παρῇ.  
Learning nought worth doth lie,  
Be not discretion by.

Whereto serveth learning, if understanding be not joyned to it? Oh would to God, that for the good of our justice, the societies of Lawyers were as wel stored with judgement, discretion, and conscience, as they are with learning and wit. *Non vitæ, sed scholæ discimus.* ‘We learne ‘not for our life, but for the schoole.’ It is not enough to joyne learning and knowledge to the minde, it should be incorporated unto it: it must not be sprinkled, but dyed with it; and if it change not and better her estate (which is imperfect) it were much better to leave it. It is a dangerous Sword, and which hindreth and offendeth her master, if it be in a weake hand, and which hath not the skill to manage

SEN. *Epist.*  
cvi. f.



# THE FIRST BOOKE

the same: *Vt fuerit melius non didicisse*: 'So as it were  
'better that we had not learned.' It is peradventure the  
cause, that neither we, nor divinitie require not much learn-  
ing in women; and that Francis Duke of Britannie, sonne  
to John the fifth, when he was spoken unto for a marriage  
betweene him and Isabel a daughter of Scotland; and some  
told him she was but meanly brought up, and without any  
instruction of learning, answered, hee loved her the better for  
it, and that a woman was wise enough, if she could but  
make a difference between the shirt and dublet of her  
husbands. It is also no such wonder (as some say) that our  
auncesters did never make any great accompt of Letters, and  
that even at this day (except it be by chaunce) they are not  
often found in our Kings or Princes chiefest counsels and  
consultations: And if the end to grow rich by them, which  
now adaies is altogether proposed unto us by the studie of  
Law, of Phisicke, of Pedantisme, and of Divinitie; did not  
keep them in credit, without doubt you should see them  
as beggarly and needy, and as much vilified as ever they  
were. And what hurt I pray you, since they neither teach  
us to think well, nor doe well? *Postquam docti prodierunt,*  
*boni desunt.* 'Since men became learned, good men failed.'  
Each other science is prejudiciall unto him, that hath not  
the science of goodnesse. But may not the reason I whilom  
sought for, also proceed thence? That our studie in France,  
having as it were no other aime but profit, but those lesse  
whom nature hath produced to more generous offices, than  
lucrative, giving themselves unto learning, or so briefly  
(before they have apprehended any liking of them, retired  
unto a profession that hath no communitie with bookes)  
there are then none left, altogether to engage themselves to  
studie and Bookes, but the meaner kind of people, and such  
as are borne to base fortune, and who by learning and letters  
seek some meane to live, and enrich themselves. The minds  
of which people being both by naturall inclination, by  
example, and familiar institution, of the basest stampe, doe  
falsly reap the fruit of learning. For it is not in her power  
to give light unto the mind, that hath none, nor to make  
a blind man to see. The myserie of it is not to affoord him  
sight, but to direct it for him, to addresse his goings, alwaies

CHAPTER  
XXIV  
Of Pedant-  
isme

SEN. *Epist.*  
xcv.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXIV  
Of Pedant-  
isme

provided he have feet of his owne, and good, strait, and capable legs. Knowledge is an excellent drug, but no drug is sufficiently strong to preserve it selfe without alteration or corruption, according to the fault of the vessell, that contains it. Some man hath a cleare sight, that is not right-sighted; and by consequence seeth what good is, and doth not follow it; and seeketh knowledge, but makes no use of it. The chiefest ordinance of Plato in his common wealth is, to give unto his Citizens their charge, according to their nature. Nature can doe all, and doth all. The crookt backt, or deformed, are unfit for any exercise of the bodie, and crooked and mis-shapen minds unproper for exercises of the minde. The bastard and vulgar sort are unworthy of Philosophie. When we see a man ill shod, if he chance to be a Shoemaker, wee say it is no wonder, for commonly none goes worse shod than they. Even so it seemes, that experience doth often shew us, a Physitian lesse healthy, a Divine lesse reformed, and most commonly a Wiseman lesse sufficient than another. Aristo Chius had heretofore reason to say, that Philosophers did much hurt to their auditors, forasmuch as the greatest number of minds are not apt to profit by such instructions, which, if they take not a good, they will follow a bad course: *ἀσώτους ex Aristippi, acerbos ex Zenonis schola exire*. 'They proceed licentious out of the Schoole of Aristippus, but bitter out of the Schoole of Zeno.' In that excellent institution which Zenophon giveth the Persians, wee find, that as other Nations teach their children Letters, so they taught theirs vertue. Plato said the eldest borne sonne, in their royall succession, was thus taught. 'As soone as he was borne, he was delivered, not to women, but to such Eunuchs, as by reason of their vertue were in chiefest authoritie about the King. Their speciall charge was first to shapen his limmes and bodie, goodly and healthy; and at seven yeares of age, they instructed and inured him to sit on horsebacke, and to ride a hunting: when he came to the age of fourteene, they delivered him into the hands of foure men, that is to say, the wisest, the justest, the most temperate, and the most valiant of all the nation. The first taught him religion; the second, to be ever upright and true; the third, to

# THE FIRST BOOKE

CHAPTER  
XXIV  
Of Pedant-  
isme

‘ become Master of his owne desires ; and the fourth, to feare  
‘ nothing.’ It is a thing worthy great consideration, that in  
that excellent, and as I may terme it, matchlesse policie  
of Lyncurgus, and in truth, by reason of her perfection,  
monstrous, yet notwithstanding, so carefull for the education  
of children, as of her principall charge, and even in the  
Muses bosome and resting-place, there is so little mention  
made of learning: as if that generous youth disdaining all  
other yokes but of vertue, ought only be furnished, in lieu  
of tutors of learning, with masters of valour, of justice, of  
wisdome, and of temperance. An example which Plato  
hath imitated in his Lawes. The manner of their discipline  
was, to propound questions unto them, teaching the judge-  
ment of men and of their actions: and if by way of reason  
or discourse, they condemned or praised, either this man, or  
that deed, they must be told the truth and best: by which  
meanes at once they sharpened their wits, and learned the  
right. Astiages in Zenophon calleth Cyrus to an accompt  
of his last lesson: It is (faith he) that a great lad in our  
Schoole, having a little coat, gave it to one of his fellowes,  
that was of lesser stature than himselfe, and tooke his coat  
from him, which was too big for him: our Master having  
made me judge of that difference, I judged that things  
must be left in the state they were in, and that both seemed  
to be better fitted as they were; whereupon he shewed me,  
I had done ill; because I had not only considered the  
comelinesse where I should chiefly have respected justice,  
which required, that none should be forced in any thing  
which properly belonged to him, and said, he was whipt for  
it, as we are in our countrie-townes, when we have forgotten  
the first preterperfect tense or Aoriste of *τύπτω*. My  
Regent might long enough make me a prolix and cunning  
Oration *in genere demonstrativo*, ‘ in the oratorie kind of  
‘ praise or dispraise,’ before ever hee should perswade me his  
Schoole is worth that. They have gone about to make the  
way shorter: and since Sciences (even when they are right  
taken) can teach us nothing but wisdome, honestie, integritie,  
and resolution; they have at first sight, attempted to put  
their children to the proper of effects, and instruct them,  
not by heare-say, but by assay of action, lively modelling

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

### CHAPTER XXIV Of Pedant- isme

and framing them, not only by precepts and words, but principally by examples and works, that it might not be a Science in their mind, but rather his complexion and habitude; not to purchase, but a naturall inheritance.

To this purpose when Agesilaus was demanded, what his opinion was, children should learne: answered, 'What they 'should doe being men.' It is no marvell, if such an institution have produced so admirable effects. Some say, that in other Cities of Greece they went to seeke for Rhetoricians, for Painters, and for Musicians; whereas in Lacedemon, they sought for Law-givers, for Magistrates, and Generals of armies: In Athens men learn'd to say well, but here, to doe well: there to resolve a sophisticall argument, and to confound the imposture and amphibologie of words, captiously entrelaced together; here to shake off the allurements of voluptuousnesse, and with an undanted courage to contemne the threats of fortune, and reject the menaces of death: those busied and laboured themselves about idle words, these after martiall things: there the tongue was ever in continuall exercise of speaking, here the minde in an uncessant practice of well-doing. And therefore was it not strange, if Antipater requiring fiftie of their children for hostages, they answered cleane contrarie to that we would doe, 'that they would rather deliver him twice so many men'; so much did they value and esteeme the losse of their countries education. When Agesilaus inviteth Xenophon to send his children to Sparta, there to be brought up; it is not, because they should learne Rhetorike, or Logike, but, as himselfe saith, 'to the end they may learne the worthiest 'and best science that may bee, to wit, the knowledge how 'to obey, and the skill how to command.' It is a sport to see Socrates, after his blunt manner, to mocke Hippias, who reporteth unto him, what great summes of money he had gained, especially in certaine little Cities, and small townes of Sicily, by keeping schoole, and teaching letters, and that at Sparta he could not get a shilling. That they were but Idiots and foolish people, who can neither measure nor esteeme; nor make no accompt of Grammer, or of Rythmes; and who only amuse themselves to know the succession of Kings, the establishing and declination of estates, and such



# THE FIRST BOOKE

like trash of flim-flam tales. Which done, Socrates forcing him particularly to allow the excellencie of their forme of publike government, the happinesse and vertue of their private life, remits unto him to guesse the conclusion of the unprofitableness of his arts. Examples teach us both in this martiall policie, and in all such like, that the studie of sciences doth more weaken and effeminate mens minds, than corroborate and adapt them to warre. The mightiest, yea the best settled estate, that is now in the world, is that of the Turkes, a nation equally instructed to the esteeme of armes, and disesteeme of letters. I find Rome to have beene most valiant, when it was least learned. The most warlike nations of our daies, are the rudest and most ignorant. The Scythians, the Parthians, and Tamburlane, serve to verifie my saying. When the Gothes over-ran and ravaged Greece; that which saved all their Libraries from the fire, was, that one among them, scattered this opinion, that such trash of bookes and papers must be left untoucht and whole for their enemies, as the only meane, and proper instrument to divert them from all militarie exercises, and amuse them to idle, secure, and sedentarie occupations. When our King Charles the eight, in a manner without unsheathing his sword, saw himselfe absolute Lord of the whole Kingdome of Naples, and of a great part of Thuscanie, the Princes and Lords of his traine ascribed this sodaine, and unhopd for victorie, and facilitie of so noble and prodigious a conquest, only to this, that most of the Princes and nobilitie of Italie amused themselves rather to become ingenious and wise by learning, than vigorous and warriors by militarie exercises.

CHAPTER  
XXIV  
Of Pedant-  
isme



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## THE TWENTY-FIFTH CHAPTER

Of the institution and education of Children; to  
the Ladie Diana of Foix, Countesse of Gurson



NEVER knew father, how crooked and deformed soever his sonne were, that would either altogether cast him off, or not acknowledge him for his owne: and yet (unlesse he be meere besotted or blinded in his affection) it may not be said, but he plainly perceiveth his defects, and hath a feeling of his imperfections. But so it is, he is his owne. So is it in my selfe. I see better than any man else, that what I have set downe, is nought but the fond imaginations of him, who in his youth hath tasted nothing but the paring, and seen but the superficies of true learning: whereof he hath retained but a generall and shapelesse forme: a smacke of every thing in generall, but nothing to the purpose in particular: After the French manner. To be short, I know there is an art of Phisicke; a course of lawes; foure parts of the Mathematikes; and I am not altogether ignorant, what they tend unto. And perhaps I also know the scope and drift of Sciences in generall, to be for the service of our life. But to wade further, or that ever I tired my selfe with plodding upon Aristotle (the Monarch of our moderne doctrine) or obstinately continued in the search of any one science: I confesse I never did it. Nor is there any one art, whereof I am able so much as to draw the first lineaments. And there is no scholler (be he of the lowest forme) that may not repute himselfe wiser than I, who am not able to appose him in his first lesson: and if I be forced to it, I am constrained verie impertinently to draw in matter from some generall discourse, whereby I examine, and give a guesse at his naturall judgement: a lesson as much unknowne to them, as theirs is to me. I have not dealt or had commerce with any excellent booke, except Plutarke or Seneca, from whom (as

# THE FIRST BOOKE

the Danaïdes) I draw my water, uncessantly filling, and as fast emptying: some thing whereof I fasten to this paper, but to my selfe nothing at all. And touching bookes: Historie is my chiefe studie, Poesie my only delight, to which I am particularly affected: for as Cleanthes said, that as the voice being forcible pent in the narrow gullet of a trumpet, at last issueth forth more strong and shriller, so me seemes, that a sentence cunningly and closely couched in measure-keeping Posie, darts it selfe forth more furiously, and wounds me even to the quicke. And concerning the naturall faculties that are in me, (whereof behold here an essay) I perceive them to faint under their owne burthen; my conceits, and my judgement march but uncertaine, and as it were groping, staggering, and stumbling at every rush: And when I have gone as far as I can, I have no whit pleased my selfe: for the further I saile, the more land I descrie, and that so dimmed with fogges, and over-cast with clouds, that my sight is so weakned, I cannot distinguish the same. And then undertaking to speake indifferently of all that presents it selfe unto my fantasie, and having nothing but mine owne naturall meanes to imploy therein, if it be my hap (as commonly it is) among good Authors, to light upon those verie places which I have undertaken to treat off, as even now I did in Plutarke, reading his discourse of the power of imagination, wherein in regard of those wise men, I acknowledge my selfe so weake, and so poore, so dull and grose-headed, as I am forced both to pittie and disdaine my selfe, yet am I pleased with this, that my opinions have often the grace to jump with theirs, and that I follow them a loofe-off, and thereby possesse at least, that which all other men have not; which is, that I know the utmost difference betweene them and my selfe: all which notwithstanding I suffer my inventions to run abroad, as weake and faint, as I have produced them, without bungling and botching the faults, which this comparison hath discovered to me in them. A man had need have a strong backe, to undertake to march foot to foot with these kind of men. The indiscreet writers of our age, amidst their triviall compositions, intermingle and wrest in whole sentences taken from ancient Authors, supposing by such filch-

CHAPTER  
XXV  
Of the institution and education of Children

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XXV  
Of the institution and education of Children

ing-theft to purchase honour and reputation to themselves, doe cleane contrarie. For, this infinite varietie and dissemblance of lustres, makes a face so wan, so il-favored, and so uglye, in respect of theirs, that they lose much more than gaine thereby. These were two contrarie humours: The Philosopher Chrisippus was wont to foist-in amongst his bookes, not only whole sentences, and other long-long discourses, but whole bookes of other Authors, as in one, he brought in Euripides his Medea. And Apollodorus was wont to say of him, that if one should draw from out his bookes, what he had stolne from others, his paper would remaine blanke. Where as Epicurus cleane contrarie to him in three hundred volumes, he left behind him, had not made use of one allegation. It was my fortune not long since to light upon such a place: I had languishingly traced after some French words, so naked and shallow, and so void either of sence or matter, that at last I found them to be nought but meere French words; and after a tedious and wearisome travell, I chanced to stumble upon an high, rich, and even to the clouds-raised piece, the descent whereof had it been somewhat more pleasant or easie, or the ascent reaching a little further, it had been excusable, and to be borne-withall; but it was such a steepe downe-fall, and by meere strength hewen out of the maine rocke, that by reading of the first six words, me thought I was carried into another world: whereby I perceive the bottome whence I came to be so low and deep, as I durst never more adventure to go through it; for, if I did stuffe any one of my discourses with those rich spoiles, it would manifestly cause the sottishnesse of others to appeare. To reprove mine owne faults in others, seemes to me no more unsufferable, than to reprehend (as I doe often) those of others in my selfe. They ought to be accused every where, and have all places of Sanctuarie taken from them: yet do I know how over-boldly, at all times I adventure to equall my selfe unto my filchings, and to march hand in hand with them; not without a fond-hardie hope, that I may perhaps be able to bleare the eyes of the Judges from discerning them. But it is as much for the benefit of my application, as for the good of mine invention and force. And I doe not furiously front,

# THE FIRST BOOKE

and bodie to bodie wrestle with those old champions: it is but by sleights, advantages, and false-offers I seek to come within them, and if I can, to give them a fall. I doe not rashly take them about the necke, I doe but touch them, nor doe I go so far as by my bargaine I would seeme to doe; could I but keepe even with them, I should then be an honest man; for I seeke not to venture on them, but where they are strongest. To doe as I have seen some, that is, to shroud themselves under others armes, not daring so much as to show their fingers ends unarmed, and to botch up all their works (as it is an easie matter in a common subject, namely for the wiser sort) with ancient inventions, here and there huddled-up together. And in those who endeavoured to hide what they have filched from others, and make it their owne, it is first a manifest note of injustice, than a plaine argument of cowardlinesse; who having nothing of any worth in themselves to make show of, will yet under the countenance of others sufficiencie goe about to make a faire offer: Moreover (oh great foolishnesse) to seek by such cosening tricks to forestall the ignorant approbation of the common sort, nothing fearing to discover their ignorance to men of understanding (whose praise only is of value) who will soone trace out such borrowed ware. As for me, there is nothing I will doe lesse. I never spake of others, but that I may the more speake of my selfe. This concerneth not those mingle-mangles of many kinds of stuffe, or as the Grecians call them Rapsodies, that for such are published, of which kind I have (since I came to yeares of discretion) seen divers most ingenious and wittie; amongst others, one under the name of Capilupus; besides many of the ancient stampe. These are wits of such excellence, as both here and elsewhere they will soone be perceived, as our late famous writer Lipsius, in his learned and laborious work of the Politikes: yet whatsoever come of it, for so much as they are but follies, my intent is not to smother them, no more than a bald and hoarie picture of mine, where a Painter hath drawne not a perfect visage, but mine owne. For, howsoever, these are but my humors and opinions, and I deliver them but to show what my conceit is, and not what ought to be beleaved. Wherin I ayme at nothing but to

CHAPTER  
XXV  
Of the institution and  
education of  
Children



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XXV  
Of the institution and education of Children

display my selfe, who peradventure (if a new prentiship change me) shall be another to morrow. I have no authoritie to purchase beliefe, neither do I desire it; knowing well that I am not sufficiently taught to instruct others. Some having read my precedent Chapter, told me not long since in mine owne house, I should somewhat more have extended my selfe in the discourse concerning the institution of children. Now (Madam) if there were any sufficiencie in me, touching that subject, I could not better employ the same, than to bestow it as a present upon that little lad, which ere long threatneth to make a happie issue from out your honorable wombe: for (Madame) you are too generous to begin with other than a man childe. And having had so great a part in the conduct of your successfull marriage, I may challenge some right and interest in the greatnesse and prosperitie of all that shall proceed from it: moreover, the ancient and rightfull possession, which you from time to time have ever had, and still have over my service, urgeth me with more than ordinarie respects, to wish all honour, well-fare and advantage to whatsoever may in any sort concerne you and yours. And truly, my meaning is, but to shew, that the greatest difficultie, and importing all humane knowledge, seemeth to be in this point, where the nurture and institution of young children is in question. For, as in matters of husbandrie, the labor that must be used before sowing, setting, and planting, yea in planting it selfe, is most certaine and easie. But when that which was sowed, set and planted, commeth to take life; before it come to ripenesse, much adoe, and great varietie of proceeding belongeth to it. So in men, it is no great matter to get them, but being borne, what continuall cares, what diligent attendance, what doubts and feares, doe daily wait on their parents and tutors, before they can be nurtured and brought to any good? The fore-shew of their inclination whilest they are young is so uncertaine, their humours so variable, their promises so changing, their hopes so false, and their proceedings so doubtful, that it is very hard, (yea for the wisest) to ground any certaine judgement, or assured successe upon them. Behold Cymon, view Themistocles, and a thousand others, how they have differed, and fallen to better



# THE FIRST BOOKE

from themselves, and deceive the expectation of such as knew them. The young whelps both of Dogges and Beares, at first sight shew their naturall disposition, but men head-long imbracing this custome or fashion, following that humor or opinion, admitting this or that passion, allowing of that or this law, are easily changed, and soone disguised; yet is it hard to force the naturall propension or readinesse of the mind, whereby it followeth, that for want of heedie fore-sight in those that could not guide their course well, they often employ much time in vaine, to addresse young children in those matters, whereunto they are not naturally addicted. All which difficulties notwithstanding, mine opinion is, to bring them up in the best and profitablest studies, and that a man should slightly passe over those fond presages, and deceiving prognostikes, which we over precisely gather in their infancie. And (without offence be it said) me thinks, that Plato in his common-wealth alloweth them too-too much authoritie.

Madame, Learning joyned with true knowledge is an especiall and gracefull ornament, and an implement of wonderfull use and consequence, namely in persons raised to that degree of fortune, wherein you are. And in good truth, learning hath not her owne true forme, nor can she make shew of her beauteous lineaments, if she fall into the hands of base and vile persons. [For, as famous Torquato Tasso saith; ‘Philosophie being a rich and noble Queene, and knowing her owne worth, graciously smileth upon, and lovingly embraceth Princes and noble men, if they become suters to her, admitting them as her minions, and gently affording them all the favours she can; whereas upon the contrarie, if she be wooed, and sued unto by clownes, mechanicall fellowes, and such base kind of people, she holds her selfe disparaged and disgraced, as holding no proportion with them. And therefore see we by experience, that if a true Gentleman, or nobleman follow her with any attention, and wooed her with importunitie, he shall learne and know more of her, and prove a better scholler in one yeare, than an ungentle or base fellow shall in seven, though he pursue her never so attentively.’] She is much more readie and fierce to lend her furtherance and

CHAPTER  
XXV  
Of the institution and  
education of  
Children

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXV  
Of the in-  
stitution and  
education of  
Children

direction in the conduct of a warre, to attempt honorable actions, to command a people, to treat a peace with a prince of forraine nation, than she is to forme an argument in Logick, to devise a Syllogisme, to canvase a case at the barre, or to prescribe a receipt of pills. So (noble Ladie) forsomuch as I cannot perswade my selfe, that you will either forget or neglect this point, concerning the institution of yours, especially having tasted the sweetnesse thereof, and being descended of so noble and learned a race. For we yet possesse the learned compositions of the ancient and noble Earles of Foix, from out whose heroicke loynes your husband and you take your of-spring. And Francis Lord of Candale your worthie uncle, doth daily bring forth such fruits thereof, as the knowledge of the matchlesse qualitie of your house shall hereafter extend it selfe to many ages; I will therefore make you acquainted with one conceit of mine, which contrarie to the common use I hold, and that is all I am able to afford you, concerning that matter. The charge of the Tutor, which you shall appoint your sonne, in the choice of whom consisteth the whole substance of his education and bringing-up; on which are many branches depending, which (forasmuch as I can adde nothing of any moment to it) I will not touch at all. And for that point, wherein I presume to advise him, he may so far forth give credit unto it, as he shall see just cause. To a gentleman borne of noble parentage, and heire of a house, that aymeth at true learning, and in it would be disciplined, not so much for gaine or commoditie to himselfe (because so abject an end is far unworthie the grace and favour of the Muses, and besides, hath a regard or dependencie of others) nor for externall shew and ornament, but to adorne and enrich his inward minde, desiring rather to shape and institute an able and sufficient man, than a bare learned man. My desire is therefore, that the parents or overseers of such a gentleman be very circumspect, and carefull in chusing his director, whom I would rather commend for having a well composed and temperate braine, than a full stufft head, yet both will doe well. And I would rather prefer wisdome, judgement, civill customes, and modest behaviour, than bare and meere literall learning; and that in his charge he hold

# THE FIRST BOOKE

a new course. Some never cease brawling in their schollers eares (as if they were still pouring in a tonell) to follow their booke, yet is their charge nothing else, but to repeat, what hath beene told them before. I would have a tutor to correct this part, and that at first entrance, according to the capacitie of the wit he hath in hand, he should begin to make shew of it, making him to have a smacke of all things, and how to chuse and distinguish them, without helpe of others, sometimes opening him the way, other times leaving him to open it by himselfe. I would not have him to invent and speake alone, but suffer his disciple to speake when his turne commeth. Socrates, and after him Arcesilaus, made their schollers to speake first, and then would speake themselves. *Obest plerumque iis qui discere volunt, auctoritas eorum qui docent.* 'Most commonly the authoritie of them ' that teach, hinders them that would learne.'

CHAPTER  
XXV  
Of the institution and education of Children

Cic. De Nat. i.

It is therefore meet, that he make him first trot-on before him, whereby he may the better judge of his pace, and so guesse how long he will hold out, that accordingly he may fit his strength: for want of which proportion, we often marre all. And to know how to make a good choice, and how far forth one may proceed (still keeping a due measure) is one of the hardest labours I know. It is a signe of a noble, and effect of an undanted spirit, to know how to second, and how far forth he shall condescend to his childish proceedings, and how to guide them. As for my selfe, I can better and with more strength walke up, than downe a hill. Those which according to our common fashion, undertake with one selfe-same lesson, and like maner of education, to direct many spirits of divers formes and different humours, it is no marvell if among a multitude of children, they scarce meet with two or three, that reap any good fruit by their discipline, or that come to any perfection. I would not only have him to demand an accompt of the words contained in his lesson, but of the sense and substance thereof, and judge of the profit he hath made of it, not by the testimonie of his memorie, but by the witnesse of his life. That what he lately learned, he cause him to set forth and pour-tray the same into sundrie shapes, and then to accommodate it to as many different and severall subjects; whereby he

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XXV

Of the institution and education of Children

shal perceive, whether he have yet apprehended the same, and therein enfeoffed himselfe, at due times taking his instruction from the institution given by Plato. It is a signe of cruditie and indigestion for a man to yeeld up his meat, even as he swallowed the same: the stomacke hath not wrought his full operation, unlesse it have changed forme, and altered fashion of that which was given him to boyle and concoct.

[Wee see men gape after no reputation but learning, and when they say, such a one is a learned man, they thinke they have said enough;] Our minde doth move at others pleasure, as tyed and forced to serve the fantasies of others, being brought under by authoritie, and forced to stoope to the lure of their bare lesson; wee have beene so subjected to harpe upon one string, that we have no way left us to descant upon voluntarie: our vigor and libertie is cleane extinct. *Nunquam tutelæ suæ fiunt.* 'They never come to 'their owne tuition.' It was my hap to bee familiarlie acquainted with an honest man at Pisa, but such an Aristotelian, as he held this infallible position; that a conformitie to Aristotles doctrine was the true touchstone and squire of all solid imaginations, and perfect veritie; for, whatsoever had no coherencie with it, was but fond Chimeraes, and idle humours; in asmuch as he had knowne all, seene all, and said all. This proposition of his, being somewhat over amply and injuriously interpreted by some, made him a long time after to be troubled in the inquisition of Rome. I would have him make his scholler narrowly to sift all things with discretion, and harbour nothing in his head by meere authoritie, or upon trust. Aristotles principles shall be no more axiomes unto him, than the Stoikes or Epicurians. Let this diversitie of judgements be proposed unto him, if he can, he shall be able to distinguish the truth from falsehood, if not, he will remaine doubtfull.

DANTE, *Inferno*, cant.  
xii. 48.

*Che non men che saper dubbiar m'aggrada.*

No lesse it pleaseth me,  
To doubt, than wise to be.

For if by his owne discourse he embrace the opinions of Xenophon, or of Plato, they shall be no longer theirs, but



## THE FIRST BOOKE

his. He that meerely followeth another, traceth nothing, and seeketh nothing: *Non sumus sub Rege, sibi quisque se vindicet.* 'We are not under a Kings command, every one ' may challenge himselfe, for let him at least know that he ' knoweth.' It is requisite he endeavour as much to feed himselfe with their conceits, as labour to learne their precepts; which, so he know how to applie, let him hardly forget, where, or whence he had them. Truth and reason are common to all, and are no more proper unto him that spake them heretofore, than unto him that shall speake them hereafter. And it is no more according to Platocs opinion, than to mine, since both he and I understand and see alike. The Bees doe here and there sucke this, and cull that flower, but afterward they produce the hony, which is peculiarly their owne, then is it no more Thyme or Majoram. So of peeeces borrowed of others, he may lawfully alter, transforme, and confound them, to shape out of them a perfect peece of worke, altogether his owne; alwaies provided, his judgement, his travell, studie, and institution tend to nothing, but to frame the same perfect. Let him hardly conceale, where, or whence he hath had any helpe, and make no shew of any thing, but of that which he hath made himselfe. Pirates, filchers, and borrowers, make a shew of their purchaces and buildings, but not of that which they have taken from others: you see not the secret fees or bribes Lawyers take of their Clients, but you shall manifestly discover the alliances they make, the honours they get for their children, and the goodly houses they build. No man makes open shew of his receipts, but every one of his gettings. The good that comes of studie (or at least should come) is to prove better, wiser, and honester. It is the understanding power (said Epicharmus) that seeth and heareth, it is it, that profiteth all, and disposeth all, that moveth, swayeth, and ruleth all: all things else are but blind, senselesse, and without spirit. And truly in barring him of libertie to doe any thing of himselfe, we make him thereby more servile and more coward. Who would ever enquire of his scholler what he thinketh of Rhetorike, of Grammar, of this, or of that sentence of Cicero? Which things throughly fethered (as if they were oracles) are let flie into our memorie; in which both letters and syllables

CHAPTER  
XXV  
Of the institution and education of Children  
SEN. *Epist.*  
xxxiii.



## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXV  
Of the in-  
stitution and  
education of  
Children

are substantial parts of the subject. To know by roat is no perfect knowledge, but to keep what one hath committed to his memories charge, is commendable : what a man directly knoweth, that will he dispose-of, without turning still to his booke, or looking to his pattern. A meere bookish sufficiencie is unpleasant. All I expect of it, is an imbellishing of my actions, and not a foundation of them, according to Platocs mind, who saith, constancie, faith, and sinceritie, are true Philosophie ; as for other Sciences, and tending elsewhere, they are but garish paintings. I would faine have Paluel or Pompey, those two excellent dauncers of our time, with all their nimblenesse, teach any man to doe their loftie tricks, and high capers, only with seeing them done, and without stirring out of his place, as some Pedanticall fellows would instruct our minds without moving or putting it in practice. And glad would I be to find one, that would teach us how to manage a horse, to tosse a pike, to shoot-off a peece, to play upon the lute, or to warble with the voice, without any exercise, as these kind of men would teach us to judge, and how to speake well, without any exercise of speaking or judging. In which kind of life, or as I may terme it, Prentiship, what action or object soever presents it-selfe unto our eies, may serve us in stead of a sufficient booke. A prettie pranke of a boy, a knavish tricke of a page, a foolish part of a lackey, an idle tale or any discourse else, spoken either in jest or earnest, at the table or in companie, are even as new subjects for us to worke-upon : for furtherance whereof, commerce or common societie among men, visiting of forraine countries, and observing of strange fashions, are verie necessary, not only to be able (after the manner of our yong gallants of France) to report how many paces the Church of Santa Rotonda is in length or breadth, or what rich garments the curtezan Signora Livia weareth, and the worth of her hosen ; or as some do, nicely to dispute how much longer or broader the face of Nero is, which they have seene in some old ruines of Italie, than that which is made for him in other old monuments elsewhere. But they should principally observe, and be able to make certaine relation of the humours and fashions of those countries they have seene, that they may the better

# THE FIRST BOOKE

know how to correct and prepare their wits by those of others. I would therefore have him begin even from his infancie to travell abroad ; and first, that at one shoot he may hit two markes, he should see neighbour-countries, namely where languages are most different from ours ; for, unlesse a mans tongue be fashioned unto them in his youth, he shall never attaine to the true pronuntiation of them, if he once grow in yeares. Moreover, we see it received as a common opinion of the wiser sort, that it agreeth not with reason, that a childe be alwaies nuzzled, cockered, dandled, and brought up in his parents lap or sight ; forsomuch as their naturall kindnesse, or (as I may call it) tender fondnesse, causeth often, even the wisest to prove so idle, so over-nice, and so base-minded. For parents are not capable, neither can they find in their hearts to see them checkt, corrected, or chastised, nor indure to see them brought up so meanly, and so far from daintinesse, and many times so dangerously, as they must needs be. And it would grieve them to see their children come home from those exercises, that a Gentleman must necessarily acquaint himselfe with, sometimes all wet and bemyred, other times sweatie, and full of dust, and to drinke being either extreme hot, or exceeding cold ; and it would trouble them to see him ride a rough-untamed horse, or with his weapon furiously incounter a skilfull Fencer, or to handle and shoot-off a musket ; against which there is no remedy, if he will make him prove a sufficient, compleat, or honest man : he must not be spared in his youth ; and it will come to passe, that he shall many times have occasion and be forced to shooke the rules of Physicke.

CHAPTER XXV  
Of the institution and education of Children

*Vitamque sub dio et trepidis agat  
In rebus.—*

HOR. iii. Od. ii.  
5.

Leade he his life in open aire,  
And in affaires full of despaire.

It is not sufficient to make his minde strong, his muskles must also be strengthned : the minde is over-borne if it be not seconded : and it is too much for her alone to discharge two offices. I have a feeling how mine panteth, being joyned to so tender and sensible a bodie, and that lieth so heavie upon it. And in my lecture, I often perceive how my

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXV  
Of the in-  
stitution and  
education of  
Children

Authors in their writings sometimes commend examples for magnanimitie and force, that rather proceed from a thicke skin and hardnes of the bones. I have knowne men, women and children borne of so hard a constitution, that a blow with a cudgell would lesse hurt them, than a flip would doe me, and so dull and blockish, that they will neither stir tongue nor eye-browes, beat them never so much. When wrestlers goe about to counterfeit the Philosophers patience, they rather shew the vigor of their sinnewes, than of their heart. For the custome to beare travell, is to tolerate griefe: *Labor callum obducit dolori*: 'Labour worketh a hardnesse upon sorrow.' Hee must be enured to suffer the paine and hardnesse of exercises, that so he may be induced to endure the paine of the colicke, of cauterie, of fals, of sprains, and other diseases incident to mans bodie: yea, if need require, patiently to beare imprisonment, and other tortures, by which sufferance he shall come to be had in more esteeme and accompt: for according to time and place, the good as well as the bad man may haply fall into them; we have seen it by experience. Whosoever striveth against the lawes, threats good men with mischief and extortion. Moreover, the authoritie of the Tutor (who should be soveraigne over him) is by the cockering and presence of the parents, hindred and interrupted: besides the awe and respect which the houshold beares him, and the knowledge of the meanes, possibilities, and greatnesse of his house, are in my judgement, no small lets in a young Gentleman. In this schoole of commerce, and societie among men, I have often noted this vice, that in lieu of taking acquaintance of others, we only endeavour to make our selves knowne to them: and we are more ready to utter such merchandize as we have, than to ingrosse and purchase new commodities. Silence and modestie are qualities verie convenient to civil conversation. It is also necessary, that a young man be rather taught to be discreetly-sparing, and close-handed, than prodigally-wastfull and lavish in his expences, and moderate in husbanding his wealth when he shall come to possesse it. And not to take pepper in the nose for every foolish tale that shal be spoken in his presence, because it is an uncivil importunity, to contradict, whatsoever is not agreeing to our humour:

Cic. *Tusc. Qu.*  
ii.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

let him be pleased to correct himselfe. And let him not seeme to blame that in others, which he refuseth to doe himselfe, nor goe about to withstand common fashions. *Licet sapere sine pompa, sine invidia.* ‘A man may bee wise without ostentation, without envie.’ Let him avoid those imperious images of the world, those uncivil behaviours, and childish ambition, wherewith Godwot, too-too many are possest: that is, to make a faire shew of that, which is not in him: endeavouring to be reputed other than indeed he is; and as if reprehension and new devices were hard to come by, he would by that meane acquire unto himselfe the name of some peculiar vertue. As it pertaineth but to great Poets to use the libertie of arts; so is it tolerable but in noble minds, and great spirits to have a preheminance above ordinarie fashions. *Si quid Socrates et Aristippus contra morem et consuetudinem fecerunt, idem sibine arbitretur licere: Magis enim illi et divinis bonis hanc licentiam assequabantur.* ‘If Socrates and Aristippus have done ought against custome or good manner, let not a man thinke he may doe the same: for they obtained this licence by their great and excellent good parts’: He shall be taught, not to enter rashly into discourse or contesting, but when he shall encounter with a Champion, worthie his strength; And then would I not have him imploy all the tricks that may fit his turne, but only such as may stand him in most stead. That he be taught to be curious in making choice of his reasons, loving pertinency, and by consequence brevitie. That above all, he be instructed to yeeld, yea to quit his weapons unto truth, as soone as he shall discern the same, whether it proceed from his adversarie, or upon better advice from himselfe, for, he shall not be preferred to any place of eminencie above others, for repeating of a prescript part; and he is not engaged to defend any cause, further than he may approve it; nor shall he bee of that trade, where the libertie for a man to repent and re-advise himselfe is sold for readie money. *Neque, ut omnia, quæ præscripta et imperata sint, defendat, necessitate ulla cogitur.* ‘Nor is he inforced by any necessitie to defend and make good all that is prescribed and commanded him.’ If his tutor agree with my humour, he shall frame his affection, to be

CHAPTER  
XXV

Of the institution and education of Children

SEN. *Epist.*  
ciii. f.

CIC. *Off.* i.

CIC. *Acad. Qu.*  
iv.



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER

### XXV

Of the institution and education of Children

a most loyall and true subject to his Prince, and a most affectionate and couragious Gentleman, in al that may concerne the honor of his Sovereigne, or the good of his countrie. And endeavour to suppress in him all maner of affection to undertake any action otherwise than for a publike good and dutie. Besides many inconveniences, which greatly prejudice our libertie, by reason of these particular bonds; the judgement of a man that is waged and bought, either it is lesse free and honest, or else it is blemisht with oversight and ingratitude. A meere and precise Courtier can neither have law nor will to speake or thinke, otherwise than favourablie of his Master, who among so many thousands of his subjects, hath made choice of him alone, to institute and bring him up with his owne hand. These favours, with the commodities that follow minion Courtiers, corrupt (not without some colour of reason) his libertie, and dazle his judgement. It is therefore commonly seene, that the Courtiers-language differs from other mens, in the same state, and to be of no great credit in such matters. Let therefore his conscience and vertue shine in his speech, and reason be his chiefe direction. Let him be taught to confesse such faults as he shall discover in his owne discourses, albeit none other perceive them but himselfe; for it is an evident shew of judgement, and effect of sinceritie, which are the chieftest qualities he aymeth at. That wilfully to strive, and obstinately to contest in words, are common qualities, most apparent in basest mindes: That to re-advise and correct himselfe, and when one is most earnest, to leave an ill opinion, are rare, noble, and Philosophicall conditions. Being in companie, he shall be put in minde, to cast his eyes round about, and every where: For I note, that the chiefe places are usually seized upon by the most unworthie, and lesse capable; and that height of fortune is seldome joyned with sufficiencie. I have seene, that whilst they at the upper end of a board were busie entertaining themselves, with talking of the beautie of the hangings about a chamber, or of the taste of some good cup of wine, many good discourses at the lower end, have utterly been lost. He shall weigh the carriage of every man in his calling, a Heardsman, a Mason, a Stranger, or a



# THE FIRST BOOKE

traveller; all must be employed; every one according to his worth; for all helps to make up household; yea, the follie and the simplicitie of others shall be as instructions to him. By controlling the graces and manners of others, he shall acquire into himselfe envie of the good, and contempt of the bad. Let him hardly be possest with an honest curiositie to search out the nature and causes of all things: let him survey what-soever is rare and singular about him; a building, a fountaine, a man, a place where any battell hath been fought, or the passages of Cæsar or Charlemaine.

CHAPTER  
XXV  
Of the institution and education of Children

*Quæ tellus sit lenta gelu, quæ putris ab æstu,  
Ventus in Italiam quis bene vela ferat.*

PROP. iv. *El.*  
iii. 39.

What land is parcht with heat, what clog'd with frost,  
What wind drives kindly to th' Italian coast.

He shall endeavour to be familiarly acquainted with the customes, with the meanes, with the state, with the dependances and alliances of all Princes; they are things soone and pleasant to be learned, and most profitable to be knowne. In this acquaintance of men, my meaning is, that hee chiefly comprehend them, that live but by the memorie of bookes. He shall, by the help of Histories, informe himselfe of the worthiest minds that were in the best ages. It is a frivolous studie, if a man list, but of unvaluable worth, to such as can make use of it. And as Plato saith, the onely studie the Lacedemonians reserved for themselves. What profit shall he not reap, touching this point, reading the lives of our Plutark? Alwayes conditioned, the master bethinke himselfe whereto his charge tendeth, and that he imprint not so much in his schollers mind the date of the ruine of Carthage, as the manners of Hanniball and Scipio, nor so much where Marcellus died, as because he was unworthy of his devoire he died there: that he teach him not somuch to know Histories, as to judge of them. It is, amongst things that best agree with my humour, the subject to which our spirits doe most diversly applie themselves. I have read in Titus Livius a number of things, which peradventure others never read, in whom Plutarke haply read a hundred more, than ever I could read, and which perhaps the author himselfe did never intend to set downe. To some kind of

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER

XXV

Of the institution and education of

Children

men, it is a meere gramaticall studie, but to others a perfect anatomie of Philosophie; by meanes whereof, the secretest part of our nature is searched-into. There are in Plutarke many ample discourses most worthy to be knowne: for in my judgement, he is the chiefe work-master of such works, whereof there are a thousand, whereat he hath but slightly glanced; for with his finger he doth but point us out a way to walke in, if we list; and is sometimes pleased to give but a touch at the quickest and maine point of a discourse, from whence they are by diligent studie to be drawne, and so brought into open market. As that saying of his. That the inhabitants of Asia served but one alone, because they could not pronounce one onely syllable, which is *Non*, gave perhaps both subject and occasion to my friend Beotie to compose his booke of voluntarie servitude. If it were no more but to see Plutarke wrest a slight action to mans life; or a word that seemeth to beare no such sence, it will serve for a whole discourse. It is pittie men of understanding should so much love brevitie, without doubt their reputation is thereby better, but we the worse. Plutarke had rather we should commend him for his judgement, than for his knowledge, he loveth better to leave a kind of longing-desire in us of him, than a sacietie. He knew verie well, that even in good things, too much may be said: and that Alexandridas did justly reprove him, who spake verie good sentences to the Ephores, but they were over tedious. Oh stranger, quoth he, thou speakest what thou oughtest, otherwise then thou shouldest. Those that have leane and thin bodies stuffe them up with bumbasting. And such as have but poore matter, will puffe it up with loftie words. There is a marvelous cleerenesse, or as I may terme it an enlightning of mans judgement drawne from the commerce of men, and by frequenting abroad in the world: we are all so contrived and compact in our selves, that our sight is made shorter by the length of our nose. When Socrates was demaunded whence he was, he answered, not of Athens, but of the world; for he, who had his imagination more full, and farther stretching, embraced all the world for his native Citie, and extended his acquaintance, his societie, and affections to all man-kind: and not as we do, that looke no

# THE FIRST BOOKE

further than our feet. If the frost chance to nip the vines about my village, my Priest doth presently argue, that the wrath of God hangs over our head, and threatneth all mankind: and judgeth that the Pippe is alreadie falne upon the Canibals.

CHAPTER  
XXV  
Of the institution and education of Children

In viewing these intestine and civill broiles of ours, who doth not exclaime, that this worlds vast-frame is neere unto a dissolution, and that the day of judgement is readie to fall on us? never remembring that many worse revolutions have been seene, and that whilest we are plunged in griefe, and overwhelmed in sorrow, a thousand other parts of the world besides are blessed with all happinesse, and wallow in pleasures, and never thinke on us? whereas, when I behold our lives, our licence, and impunitie, I wonder to see them so milde and easie. He on whose head it haileth, thinks all the Hemisphære besides to be in a storme and tempest. And as that dull-pated Savoyard said, that if the seelie King of France could cunningly have managed his fortune, he might verie well have made himselfe chiefe Steward of his Lords houshold, whose imagination conceived no other greatness than his Masters; we are all insensible of this kind of error: an error of great consequence and prejudice. But whosoever shall present unto his inward eyes, as it were in a Table, the Idea of the great image of our universall mother Nature, attired in her richest robes, sitting in the throne of her Majestie, and in her visage shall read, so generall, and so constant a varietie; he that therein shall view himselfe, not himselfe alone, but a whole Kingdome, to be in respect of a great circle; but the smallest point that can be imagined, he onely can value things according to their essentiall greatnesse and proportion. This great universe (which some multiplie as Species under one Genus) is the true looking-glasse wherein we must looke, if we will know whether we be of a good stamp, or in the right byase. To conclude, I would have this worlds-frame to be my Schollers choise-booke: So many strange humours, sundrie sects, varying judgements, diverse opinions, different lawes, and fantastickall customes teach us to judge rightly of ours, and instruct our judgement to acknowledge his imperfections and naturall weaknesse, which is no easie an apprenticeship: So many in-

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XXV novations of estates, so many fals of Princes, and changes of  
 Of the in- publike fortune, may, and ought to teach us, not to make  
 stitution and so great accompt of ours: So many names, so many victories,  
 education of and so many conquests buried in darke oblivion, makes the  
 Children hope to perpetuate our names, but ridiculous, by the sur-  
 prising of ten Argo-lettiers, or of a small cottage, which is  
 knowne but by his fall. The pride and fiercenesse of so  
 many strange and gorgeous shewes: the pride-puft majestic  
 of so many courts, and of their greatnesse, ought to confirme  
 and assure our sight, undauntedly to beare the affronts and  
 thunder-claps of ours, without seeling our eyes: So many  
 thousands of men, low-laide in their graves afore us, may  
 encourage us, not to feare, or be dismaied to go meet so  
 good companie in the other world; and so of all things else.  
 Our life (said Pithagoras) drawes neare unto the great and  
 populous assemblies of the Olympike games, wherein some,  
 to get the glorie, and to win the goale of the games, exercise  
 their bodies with all industrie; others, for greedinesse of  
 gaine, bring thither marchandise to sell: others there are  
 (and those be not the worst) that seek after no other good,  
 but to marke, how, wherefore, and to what end, all things  
 are done: and to be spectators or observers of other mens  
 lives and actions, that so they may the better judge and  
 direct their owne. Unto examples may all the most profit-  
 able Discourses of Philosophie be sorted, which ought to be  
 the touch-stone of humane actions, and a rule to square  
 them by, to whom may be said,

PERS. Sat. iii.  
69.

67.

—*quid fas optare, quid asper*  
*Vtile nummus habet, patriæ charisque propinquis*  
*Quantum elargiri deceat, quem te Deus esse*  
*Iussit, et humana qua parte locatus es in re.*  
*Quid sumus, aut quidnam victuri gignimur:*

What thou maiest wish, what profit may come cleare,  
 From new-stampt coyne, to friends and countrie deare,  
 What thou ought'st give: whom God would have thee  
     bee,  
 And in what part mongst men he placed thee.  
 What we are, and wherefore,  
 To live heer we were bore.

What it is to know, and not to know (which ought to be  
 166



# THE FIRST BOOKE

the scope of studie) what valour, what temperance, and what justice is: what difference there is betweene ambition and avarice, bondage and freedome, subjection and libertie, by which markes a man may distinguish true and perfect contentment, and how far-forth one ought to feare or apprehend death, griefe, or shame.

CHAPTER XXV

Of the institution and education of Children

*Et quo quemque modo fugiátque ferátque laborem.*

How ev'ry labour he may plie,  
And beare, or ev'ry labour flie.

VIRG. *Æn.*  
vi. 893.

What wards or springs move us, and the causes of so many motions in us: For me seemeth, that the first discourses, wherewith his conceit should be sprinkled, ought to be those, that rule his manners, and direct his sense; which will both teach him to know himselfe, and how to live, and how to die well. Among the liberall Sciences, let us begin with that which makes us free: Indeed, they may all in some sort stead us, as an instruction to our life, and use of it, as all other things else serve the same to some purpose or other. But let us make especiall choice of that, which may directly and pertinently serve the same. If we could re-straine and adapt the appurtenances of our life to their right byase and naturall limits, we should find the best part of the Sciences that now are in use, cleane out of fashion with us: yea, and in those that are most in use, there are certaine by-ways and deep-flows most profitable, which we should do well to leave, and according to the institution of Socrates, limit the course of our studies in those where profit is wanting.

—*sapere aude,*

*Incipe: vivendi qui rectè prorogat horam,  
Rusticus expectat dum defluat annis, at ille  
Labitur, et labetur in omne volubilis ævum.*

HOR. i. *Epist.*  
ii. 40.

Be bold to be wise: to begin, be strong,  
He that to live well doth the time prolong,  
Clowne-like expects, till downe the streame be run;  
That runs, and will run, till the world be done.

It is more simplicitie to teach our children.

*Quid moveant Pisces, animosáque signa Leonis,  
Lotus et Hesperia quid Cupricornus aqua.*

PROP. iv. *El.*  
i. 85.



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XXV

Of the in-  
stitution and  
education of  
Children

What Pisces move, or hot-breath'd Leos beames,  
Or Capricornus bath'd in westernne streames.

The knowledge of the starres, and the motion of the  
of eighth spheare, before their owne.

Τί Πλειάδεσσι κάμοι     τί δ' ἀστράσι βοώτεω.

What longs it to the seaven stars, and me,  
Or those about Boötes be.

Anaximenes writing to Pythagoras, saith, 'with what  
'sense can I amuse my selfe to the secrets of the Starres,  
'having continually death or bondage before mine eyes?'  
For at that time the Kings of Persia were making prepara-  
tions to war against his Countrie. All men ought to say so.  
Being beaten with ambition, with avarice, with rashnesse,  
and with superstition, and having such other enemies unto  
life within him. Wherefore shall I study and take care  
about the mobility and variation of the world? When hee  
is once taught what is fit to make him better and wiser, he  
shall be entertained with Logicke, naturall Philosophy,  
Geometry, and Rhetoricke, then having settled his judge-  
ment, looke what science he doth most addict himselfe unto,  
he shall in short time attaine to the perfection of it. His  
lecture shall be sometimes by way of talke and sometimes by  
booke: his tutor may now and then supply him with the same  
Author, as an end and motive of his institution: sometimes  
giving him the pith and substance of it ready chewed. And  
if of himselfe he be not so thoroughly acquainted with bookes,  
that hee may readily find so many notable discourses as are  
in them to effect his purpose, it shall not be amisse, that  
some learned man being appointed to keepe him company,  
who at any time of need, may furnish him with such muni-  
tion, as hee shall stand in need of; that hee may afterward  
distribute and dispense them to his best use. And that this  
kind of lesson be more easie and naturall than that of Gaza,  
who will make question? Those are but harsh, thornie, and  
unpleasant precepts; vaine, idle and immateriall words, on  
which small hold may be taken; wherein is nothing to  
quicken the minde. In this, the spirit findeth substance to  
bide and feed upon. A fruit without all comparison much  
better, and that will soone be ripe. It is a thing worthy

# THE FIRST BOOKE

consideration, to see what state things are brought unto in this our age; and how Philosophie, even to the wisest, and men of best understanding, is but an idle, vaine and fantastical name, of small use, and lesse worth, both in opinion and effect. I thinke these Sophistries are the cause of it, which have forestalled the wayes to come unto it: They doe very ill, that goe about to make it seeme as it were inaccessible for children to come unto, setting it foorth with a wrimples, gastlie, and frowning visage; who hath masked her with so counterfet, pale, and hideous a countenance? There is nothing more beauteous, nothing more delightfull, nothing more gamesome; and as I may say, nothing more fondly wanton: for she presenteth nothing to our eyes, and preacheth nothing to our eares, but sport and pastime. A sad and lowring looke plainly declareth, that that is not her haunt. Demetrius the Gramarian, finding a companie of Philosophers sitting close together in the Temple of Delphos, said unto them, ‘Either I am deceived, or by your ‘plausible and pleasant lookes, you are not in any serious ‘and earnest discourse amongst your selves’; to whom one of them named Heracleon the Megarian answered, ‘That ‘belongeth to them, who busie themselves in seeking, whether ‘future tense of the verbe *βάλλω* hath a double λ, or that ‘labour to find the derivation of the comparatives, *χείρων*, ‘*βελτίων*, and of the superlatives *χείριστον*, *βέλτιστον*, it is ‘they, that must chafe in intertaining themselves with their ‘science: as for discourses of Philosophie they are wont to ‘glad, rejoyce, and not to vex and molest those that use ‘them.’

CHAPTER  
XXV  
Of the institution and education of Children

*Deprendas animi tormentu latentis in ægro  
Corpore, deprendas et gaudia, sumit utrumque  
Inde habitum facies.*

IUVEN. Sat. ix.  
18.

You may perceive the torments of the mind,  
Hid in sicke bodie, you the joyes may find,  
The face such habit takes in either kind.

That mind which harboureth Philosophie, ought by reason of her sound health, make that bodie also sound and healthie: it ought to make her contentment to through-shine in all exterior parts: it ought to shapen and modell all outward demeanours to the modell of it: and by consequence arme

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XXV

Of the institution and education of Children

him that doth possesse it, with a gracious stoutnesse, and lively audacitic, with an active and pleasing gesture, and with a setled and cheerefull countenance. The most evident token, and apparant signe of true wisdome, is a constant, and unconstrained rejoycing, whose estate is like unto all things above the Moone, that is, ever cleare, alwaies bright. It is Baroco and Baralipton, that makes their followers prove so base and idle, and not Philosophie; they know her not, but by heare-say: what? Is it not shee, that cleereth all stormes of the mind? And teacheth miserie, famine, and sicknesse to laugh? Not by reason of some imaginarie Epicicles, but by naturall and palpable reasons. Shee aymeth at nothing but vertue: it is vertue shee seekes after; which as the schoole saith, is not pitcht on the top of an high, steepie, or inaccessible hill; for they that have come unto her, affirme, that cleane-contrarie, shee keeps her stand, and holds her mansion, in a faire, flourishing, and pleasant plaine, whence as from an high watch tower, she survaieth all things, to be subject unto her, to whom any man may with great facilitie come, if he but know the way or entrance to her palace: for, the pathes that lead unto her, are certaine fresh, and shadie greene allies, sweet and flowrie waies, whose ascent is even, easie, and nothing wearisome, like unto that of heavens-vaults. Forsomuch as they have not frequented this vertue, who gloriously, as in a throne of Majestie sits soveraigne, goodly, triumphant, lovely, equally delicious, and couragious, protesting her selfe to be a professed and irreconciliable enemie to all sharpnesse, austeritie, feare, and compulsion; having nature for her guide, fortune and voluptuousnesse for her companions; they according to their weaknesse have imaginarily fained her, to have a foolish, sad, grim, quareulous, spitefull, threatning, and disdainfull visage, with an horride and unpleasant looke; and have placed her, upon a craggie, sharpe, and unfrequented rocke, amidst desert clifles, and uncouth crags, as a skarcrow, or bug-bear, to affright the common people with. Now the tutour, which ought to know, that he should rather seek to fill the mind, and store the will of his disciple, as much, or rather more, with love and affection, than with awe, and reverence unto vertue, may shew and tell him, that

# THE FIRST BOOKE

Poets follow common humours, making him plainly to perceive, and as it were palpably to feele, that the Gods have rather placed labour and sweat at the entrances, which lead to Venus chambers, than at the doores, that direct to Pallas cabinets.

CHAPTER  
XXV  
Of the institution and  
education of  
Children

And when he shall perceive his scholler to have a sensible feeling of himselfe, presenting Bradamant, or Angelica before him, as a Mistresse to enjoy, embelished with a naturall, active, generous, and unspotted beautie, not uglye, or Giant-like, but blithe and livelie, in respect of a wanton, soft, affected, and artificiall-flaring beautie; the one attired like unto a young man, coyfed with a bright-shining helmet, the other disguised and drest about the head like unto an impudent harlot, with embroyderies, frizelings, and carcanets of pearles: he will no doubt deeme his owne love to be a man and no woman, if in his choice he differ from that effeminate shepherd of Phrygia. In this new kind of lesson, he shall declare unto him, that the prize, the glorie, and height of true vertue, consisted in the facilitie, profit, and pleasure of his exercises: so far from difficultie, and incumbrances, that children as well as men, the simple as soone as the wise, may come unto her. Discretion and temperance, not force or way-wardnesse are the instruments to bring him unto her. Socrates (vertues chiefe favorite) that he might the better walke in the pleasant, naturall, and open path, of her progresses, doth voluntarily and in good earnest, quit all compulsion. Shee is the nurse and foster-mother of all humane pleasures, who in making them just and upright, she also makes them sure and sincere. By moderating them, she keepeth them in ure and breath. In limiting and cutting them off, whom she refuseth; she whets us on toward those she leaveth unto us; and plenteously leaves us them, which Nature pleaseth, and like a kind mother giveth us over unto sacietie, if not unto wearisomnesse, unlesse we will peradventure say, that the rule and bridle, which stayeth the drunkard before drunkennesse, the glutton before surfetting, and the letcher before the losing of his haire, be the enemies of our pleasures. If common fortune faile her, it cleerely scapes her; or she cares not for her, or she frames another unto herselfe, altogether her owne, not



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXV  
Of the in-  
stitution and  
education of  
Children

so fleeting, nor so rowling. She knoweth the way how to be rich, mightie and wise, and how to lie in sweet-perfumed beds. She loveth life; she delights in beautie, in glorie, and in health. But her proper and particular office is, first to know how to use such goods temperately, and how to lose them constantly. An office much more noble, than severe, without which, all course of life is unnaturall, turbulent, and deformed, to which one may lawfully joyne those rocks, those incumbrances, and those hideous monsters. If so it happen, that his Disciple prove of so different a condition, that he rather love to give eare to an idle fable, than to the report of some noble voiage, or other notable and wise discourse, when he shall heare it; that at the sound of a Drum, or clang of a Trumpet, which are wont to rowze and arme the youthly heat of his companions, turneth to another that calleth him to see a play, tumbling, jugling tricks, or other idle lose-time sports; and who for pleasures sake doth not deeme it more delightsome to returne all sweatie and wearie from a victorious combat, from wrestling, or riding of a horse, than from a Tennis-court, or dancing schoole, with the prize or honour of such exercises; The best remedy I know for such a one, is, to put him prentise to some base occupation, in some good towne or other, yea, were he the sonne of a Duke; according to Platoes rule, who saith, 'That children must be placed, not according to their fathers conditions, but the faculties of their mind.' Since it is Philosophie that teacheth us to live, and that infancie as well as other ages, may plainly read her lessons in the same, why should it not be imparted unto young Schollers?

PERS. Sat. iii.  
23.

*Vdum et molle lutum est, nunc nunc properandus, et acri  
Fingendus sine fine rota.*

He's moist and soft mould, and must by and by  
Be cast, made up, while wheele whirl's readily.

We are taught to live, when our life is well-nigh spent. Many schollers have been infected with that loathsome and marrow-wasting disease, before ever they came to read Aristotles treatise of Temperance. Cicero was wont to say, 'That could he out-live the lives of two men, he should never find leasure to study the Lyrike Poets.' And I find



# THE FIRST BOOKE

these Sophisters both worse and more unprofitable. Our CHILDE is engaged in greater matters; And but the first CHAPTER  
fifteene or sixteene yeares of his life, are due unto Pedantisme, XXV  
the rest unto action: let us therefore imploy so short time, Of the in-  
as we have to live, in more necessarie instructions. It stitution and  
is an abuse; remove these thornie quiddities of Logike, education of  
whereby our life can no whit be amended, and betake our Children  
selves to the simple discourses of Philosophy; know how to  
chuse and fitly to make use of them: they are much more  
easie to be conceived than one of Bocace his tales. A childe  
comming from nurse is more capable of them, than he is to  
learne to read or write. Philosophy hath discourses, whereof  
infancie as well as decaying old-age may make good use.  
I am of Plutarkes mind, which is, that Aristotle did not so  
much amuse his great Disciple about the arts how to frame  
Syllogismes, or the principles of Geometrie, as he endeavoured  
to instruct him with good precepts, concerning valour,  
prowesse, magnanimitie, and temperance, and an undanted  
assurance not to feare any thing; and with such munition  
he sent him, being yet verie young, to subdue the Empire of  
the world, only with 30000 footmen, 4000 horsemen, and  
42000 Crownes in monie. As for other arts and sciences;  
he saith Alexander honored them, and commended their  
excellencie and comliness; but for any pleasure he tooke in  
them, his affection could not easily be drawne to exercise  
them.

—*petite hinc juvenesque senesque*  
*Finem animo certum, miserisque viatica canis.*

PERS. Sat. v.  
64.

Young men and old, draw hence (in your affaires)  
Your minds set marke, provision for gray haire.

It is that which Epicurus said in the beginning of his  
letter to Meniceus: 'Neither let the youngest shun, nor the  
'oldest wearie himselfe in philosophying, for who doth  
'otherwise seemeth to say, that either the season to live  
'happily is not yet come, or is already past.' Yet would  
I not have this young gentleman pent-up, nor carelesly  
cast-off to the heedlesse choler, or melancholy humour of  
the hasty Schoole-master. I would not have his budding  
spirit corrupted with keeping him fast-tied, and as it were  
labouring foureteene or fifteene houres a day poaring on

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER

XXV

Of the institution and education of Children

his booke, as some doe, as if he were a day-labouring man ; neither doe I thinke it fit, if at any time, by reason of some solitarie or melancholy complexion, he should be seene with an over-indiscreet application given to his booke, it should be cherished in him ; for, that doth often make him both unapt for civill conversation, and distracts him from better employments : How many have I seene in my daies, by an over-greedy desire of knowledge, become as it were foolish ? Carneades was so deeply plunged, and as I may say besotted in it, that he could never have leasure to cut his haire, or pare his nailes : nor would I have his noble manners obscured by the incivilitie and barbarisme of others. The French wisdome hath long since proverbially been spoken of, as verie apt to conceive study in her youth, but most unapt to keepe it long. In good truth, we see at this day, that there is nothing lovelier to behold, than the young children of France ; but for the most part, they deceive the hope which was fore-apprehended of them : for when they once become men, there is no excellencie at all in them. I have heard men of understanding hold this opinion, that the Colleges to which they are sent (of which there are store) doe thus besot them : whereas to our scholler, a cabinet, a gardin, the table, the bed, a solitarinesse, a companie, morning and evening, and all houres shall be alike unto him, all places shall be a study for him : for Philosophy (as a former of judgements, and modeler of customes) shall be his principall lesson, having the privilege to entermeddle her selfe with all things, and in all places. Isocrates the Orator, being once requested at a great banket to speake of his art, when all thought he had reason to answer, said, ‘It is not now time to doe what I can, and what should now be done, ‘I cannot doe it’ ; For, to present orations, or to enter into disputation of Rhetorike, before a companie assembled together to be merrie, and make good cheere, would be but a medly of harsh and jarring musicke. The like may be said of all other Sciences. But touching Philosophy, namely in that point where it treateth of man, and of his duties, and offices, it hath been the common judgement of the wisest, that in regard of the pleasantnesse of her conversation, she ought not to be rejected, neither at banquets, nor at

# THE FIRST BOOKE

sports. And Plato having invited her to his solemne feast, we see how kindly she entertaineth the companie with a milde behaviour, fitly suting her selfe to time and place, notwithstanding it be one of his learned'st and profitable discourses.

CHAPTER

XXV

Of the institution and education of Children

*Æquè pauperibus prodest, locupletibus æquè,  
Et neglecta æquè pueris senibusque nocebit.*

HOR. i. *Ep.*  
CXXV.

Poore men alike, alike rich men it easeth,  
Alike it scorned, old and young displeaseth.

So doubtlesse he shall lesse be idle than others; for even as the paces we bestow walking in a gallerie, although they be twice as many more, wearie us not so much as those we spend in going a set journey: So our lesson being past over, as it were, by chance, or way of encounter, without strict observance of time or place, being applied to all our actions, shall be digested, and never felt. All sports and exercises shall be a part of his study; running, wrestling, musicke, dancing, hunting, and managing of armes, and horses. I would have the exterior demeanor or decencie, and the disposition of his person to be fashioned together with his mind; for, it is not a mind, it is not a body that we erect, but it is a man, and we must not make two parts of him. And as Plato saith, ‘They must not be erected one without another, but equally be directed, no otherwise than a couple of horses matched to draw in one self-same teeme.’ And to heare him, doth he not seem to imploy more time and care in the exercises of his bodie: and to thinke that the mind is together with the same exercised, and not the contrarie? As for other matters, this institution ought to be directed by a sweet-severe mildnesse; Not as some do, who in lieu of gently-bidding children to the banquet of letters, present them with nothing but horror and crueltie. Let me have this violence and compulsion removed, there is nothing that, in my seeming, doth more bastardise and dizzie a wel-borne and gentle nature: If you would have him stand in awe of shame and punishment, doe not so much enure him to it: accustome him patiently to endure sweat and cold, the sharpnesse of the wind, the heat of the sunne, and how to despise all hazards. Remove from him

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XXV

Of the institution and education of Children

all nicenesse and quaintnesse in clothing, in lying, in eating, and in drinking: fashion him to all things; that he prove not a faire and wanton-puling boy, but a lustie and vigorous boy: When I was a child, being a man, and now am old, I have ever judged and believed the same. But amongst other things, I could never away with this kind of discipline used in most of our Colleges. It had peradventure been lesse hurtfull, if they had somewhat inclined to mildnesse, or gentle intreatie. It is a verie prison of captivated youth, and proves dissolute, in punishing it before it be so. Come upon them when they are going to their lesson, and you heare nothing but whipping and brawling, both of children tormented, and masters besotted with anger and chafing. How wide are they, which go about to allure a childs mind to go to his booke, being yet but tender and fearefull, with a stearne-frowning countenance, and with hands-full of rods? Oh wicked and pernicious manner of teaching! which Quintillian hath very wel noted, that this imperious kind of authoritie, namely, this way of punishing of children, drawes many dangerous inconveniences within. How much more decent were it, to see their school-houses and formes strewed with greene boughes and flowers, than with bloody burchen-twigs? If it lay in me, I would doe as the Philosopher Speusippus did, who caused the pictures of Gladnesse and Joy, of Flora, and of the Graces, to be set up round about his school-house. Where their profit lieth, there should also be their recreation. Those meats ought to be sugred over, that are healthfull for childrens stomackes, and those made bitter that are hurtfull for them. It is strange to see how carefull Plato sheweth himselfe in framing of his lawes about the recreation and pastime of the youth of his Citie, and how far he extends himselfe about their exercises, sports, songs, leaping, and dancing, wherof he saith, that severe antiquitie gave the conduct and patronage unto the Gods themselves, namely, to Apollo, to the Muses, and to Minerva. Marke but how far-forth he endevoreth to give a thousand precepts to be kept in his places of exercises both of bodie and mind. As for learned Sciences, he stands not much upon them, and seemeth in particular to commend Poesie, but for Musickes sake. All strangenesse and self-particu-



# THE FIRST BOOKE

laritie in our manners and conditions, is to be shunned, as an enemy to societie and civill conversation. Who would not be astonished at Demophons complexion, chiefe steward of Alexanders houshold, who was wont to sweat in the shadow, and quiver for cold in the sunne? I have seene some to startle at the smell of an apple, more than at the shot of a peece; some to be frighted with a mouse, some readie to cast their gorge at the sight of a messe of creame, and others to be scared with seeing a fetherbed shaken: as Germanicus, who could not abide to see a cock, or heare his crowing. There may haply be some hidden propertie of nature, which in my judgement might easilie be removed, if it were taken in time. Institution hath gotten this upon me (I must confesse with much adoe) for, except beere, all things else that are mans food agree indifferently with my taste. The bodie being yet souple, ought to be accommodated to all fashions and customes; and (alwaies provided, his appetites and desires be kept under) let a yong man boldly be made fit for al Nations and companies; yea, if need be, for al disorders and surfetings; let him acquaint himselfe with al fashions; That he may be able to do al things, and love to do none but those that are commendable. Some strict Philosophers commend not, but rather blame Calisthenes, for losing the good favour of his Master Alexander, only because he would not pledge him as much as he had drunke to him. He shall laugh, jest, dally, and debauch himselfe with his Prince. And in his debauching, I would have him out-go al his fellowes in vigor and constancie, and that he omit not to doe evill, neither for want of strength or knowledge, but for lacke of will. *Multum interest, utrum peccare quis nolit, aut nesciat:* ‘There is a great difference, whether one have no will, or no wit to doe amisse.’ I thought to have honoured a gentleman (as great a stranger, and as far from such riotous disorders as any is in France) by enquiring of him in verie good companie, how many times in all his life he had bin drunke in Germanie, during the time of his abode there, about the necessarie affaires of our King; who tooke it even as I meant it, and answered three times, telling the time and manner how. I know some, who for want of that qualitie, have been much

CHAPTER  
XXV  
Of the institution and education of Children

HOR. *Epist.*  
xvii. 23.



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XXV  
Of the institution and education of Children

perplexed when they have had occasion to converse with that nation. I have often noted with great admiration, that wonderfull nature of Alcibiades, to see how easilie he could sute himselfe to so divers fashions, and different humors, without prejudice unto his health ; sometimes exceeding the sumptuousnesse and pompe of the Persians, and now and then surpassing the austeritie and frugalitie of the Lacedemonians, as reformed in Sparta, as voluptuous in Ionia.

HOR. *Epist.*  
xvii. 25.

*Omnis Aristippum decuit color, et status, et res.*  
All colours, states, and things are fit  
For courtly Aristippus wit.

Such a one would I frame my Disciple,

*—quem duplici panno patientia velat,  
Mirabor, vitæ via si conversa decebit.*

Whom patience clothes with sutes of double kind,  
I muse, if he another way will find.

29.

*Personamque feret non inconcinnus utramque.*  
He not unfitly may,  
Both parts and persons play.

CIC. *Tusc. Qu.*  
iv.

Loe here my lessons, wherein he that acteth them, profiteth more, than he that but knoweth them, whom if you see, you heare, and if you heare him, you see him. God forbid, saith some bodie in Plato, that to Philosophize, be to learne many things, and to exercise the arts. *Hanc amplissimam omnium artium bene vivendi disciplinam, vita magis quàm litteris persequuti sunt.* ‘ This discipline of living well, which ‘ is the amplest of all other arts, they followed rather in ‘ their lives, than in their learning or writing.’ Leo Prince of the Phliasians, enquiring of Heraclides Ponticus, what art he professed, he answered, ‘ Sir, I professe neither art nor ‘ science ; but I am a Philosopher.’ Some reproved Diogenes, that being an ignorant man, he did neverthesse meddle with Philosophie, to whom he replied, ‘ so much the more ‘ reason have I, and to greater purpose doe I meddle with it.’ Hegesias praid him upon a time to reade some booke unto him ; ‘ You are a merry man,’ said he : ‘ As you chuse natur- ‘ all and not painted right and not counterfeit figges to eat,

# THE FIRST BOOKE

‘ why doe you not likewise chuse, not the painted and written, CHAPTER  
 ‘ but the true and naturall exercises ?’ He shall not so much XXV  
 repeat, as act his lesson. In his actions shall he make repe- Of the in-  
 tition of the same. We must observe, whether there bee stitution and  
 wisdom in his enterprises, integritie in his demeanor, mo- education of  
 destie in his jestures, justice in his actions, judgement and Children  
 grace in his speech, courage in his sicknesse, moderation in  
 his sports, temperance in his pleasures, order in the govern-  
 ment of his house, and indifferencie in his taste, whether it  
 be flesh, fish, wine, or water, or whatsoever he feedeth upon.  
*Qui disciplinam suam non ostentationem scientiæ, sed legem Cic. Tusc. Qu.*  
*vitiæ putet: quique obtemperet ipse sibi, et decretis pareat.* ii.  
 ‘ Who thinks his learning not an ostentation of knowledge,  
 ‘ but a law of life, and himselfe obayes himselfe, and doth  
 ‘ what is decreed.’

The true mirror of our discourses, is the course of our  
 lives. Xeuxidamus answered one that demaunded of him,  
 why the Lacedemonians did not draw into a booke, the ordi-  
 nances of prowess, that so their yong men might read them;  
 ‘ it is,’ saith he, ‘ because they would rather accustome them  
 ‘ to deeds and actions, than to bookes and writings.’ Com-  
 pare at the end of fifteene or sixteene yeares one of these  
 collegiall Latinizers, who hath imployed all that while onely  
 in learning how to speake, to such a one as I meane. The  
 world is nothing but babling and words, and I never saw man,  
 that doth not rather speake more than he ought, than lesse.  
 Notwithstanding halfe our age is consumed that way. We  
 are kept foure or five yeares learning to understand bare  
 words, and to joine them into clauses, then as long in pro-  
 portioning a great bodie extended into foure or five parts;  
 and five more at least ere we can succinctly know how to  
 mingle, joine, and interlace them handsomly into a subtil  
 fashion, and into one coherent orbe. Let us leave it to those,  
 whose profession is to doe nothing else. Being once on my  
 journey toward Orleans, it was my chance to meet upon  
 that plaine that lieth on this side Clery, with two Masters  
 of Arts, traveling toward Burdeaux, about fiftie paces one  
 from another; far off behind them, I descrie a troupe of  
 horsemen, their Master riding formost, who was the Earle  
 of Rochefocault; one of my servants enquiring of the

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXV  
Of the in-  
stitution and  
education of  
Children

first of those Masters of arts, what Gentleman he was that followed him; supposing my servant had meant his fellow-scholler, for he had not yet seen the Earles trainee, answered pleasantly, 'He is no gentleman, Sir, but a Gramarian, and 'I am a Logitian.' Now, we that contrariwise seek not to frame a Gramarian, nor a Logitian, but a compleat gentleman, let us give them leave to mispend their time; we have else-where, and somewhat else of more import to doe. So that our disciple be well and sufficiently stored with matter; words will follow apace, and if they will not follow gently, he shall hale them on perforce. I heare some excuse themselves, that they cannot expresse their meaning, and make a semblance that their heads are so full-stuff with many goodly things, but for want of eloquence they can neither utter nor make shew of them. It is a meere fopperie. And will you know what, in my seeming, the cause is? They are shadows and Chimeraes, proceeding of some formelesse conceptions, which they cannot distinguish or resolve within, and by consequence are not able to produce them, in asmuch as they understand not themselves: And if you but marke their earnestnesse, and how they stammer and labour at the point of their deliverie, you would deeme, that what they go withall, is but a conceiving, and therefore nothing neere downelying; and that they doe but licke that imperfect and shapelesse lump of matter. As for me, I am of opinion, and Socrates would have it so, that he who hath a cleare and lively imagination in his mind, may easilie produce and utter the same, although it be in Bergamask, or Welsh, and if he be dumbe, by signes and tokens.

HOR. *Art.*  
*Poet.* 311.

*Verbâque prævisam rem non invita sequentur.*

When matter we fore-know,  
Words voluntarie flow.

SEN. *Controv.*  
vii. *Proæ.*

As one said, as poetically in his prose, *Cùm res animum occupavere, verba ambiunt.* 'When matter hath possest their minds, they hunt after words:' and another: *Ipsæ res verba rapiunt.* 'Things themselves will catch and carry words:' He knowes neither Ablative, Conjunctive, Substantive, nor Gramar, no more doth his Lackey, nor any Oyster-wife about the streets, and yet if you have a mind to

# THE FIRST BOOKE

it, he will intertaine you your fill, and peradventure stumble as little and as seldome against the rules of his tongue, as the best Master of arts in France. He hath no skill in Rhetoricke, nor can he with a preface fore-stall and captivate the Gentle Readers good will: nor careth he greatly to know it. In good sooth, all this garish painting is easilie defaced, by the lustre of an in-bred, and simple truth; for these dainties and quaint devices, serve but to amuse the vulgar sort; unapt and incapable to taste the most solid and firme meat: As Afer verie plainly declareth in *Cornelius Tacitus*. The Ambassadors of Samos being come to Cleomenes King of Sparta, prepared with a long prolix Oration, to stir him up to war against the tyrant Policrates, after he had listned a good while unto them, his answer was: ‘Touching your Exordium or beginning I have forgotten it, the middle I remember not; and for your conclusion I will do nothing in it.’ A fit, and (to my thinking) a verie good answer; and the Orators were put to such a shift, as they knew not what to replie. And what said another? the Athenians from out two of their cunning Architects, were to chuse one to erect a notable great frame: the one of them more affected and selfe-presuming, presented himselfe before them, with a smooth fore-premeditated discourse, about the subject of that piece of worke, and thereby drew the judgements of the common people unto his liking; but the other in few words, spake thus: ‘Lords of Athens, what this man hath said, I will performe.’ In the greatest earnestnesse of Ciceroes eloquence many were drawn into a kind of admiration; But Cato jesting at it, said, ‘Have we not a pleasant Consull?’ A quicke cunning Argument, and a wittie saying, whether it go before, or come after, it is never out of season. If it have no coherence with that which goeth before, nor with what commeth after; it is good and commendable in it selfe. I am none of those that thinke a good Ryme, to make a good Poeme; let him hardly (if so he please) make a short syllable long, it is his wit and matter: if the invention be rare and good, and no great judgement have cunningly played their part. I will say to such a one; he is a good Poet, but an ill Versifier.

CHAPTER  
XXV  
Of the institution and  
education of  
Children



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER HOR. i. *Sat. Emunctæ naris, durus componere versus.*  
 XXV iv. 8. Lucil. A man whose sense could finely pierce,  
 Of the in- But harsh and hard to make a verse.  
 stitution and  
 education of Let a man (saith Horace) make his worke loose all  
 Children seames, measures, and joynts.

58. *Tempora certa modòsque, et quod prius ordine verbum est,*  
*Posterius facias, præponens ultima primis :*  
 62. *Invenias etiam disiecti membra Poetæ.*

Set times and moods, make you the first word last,  
 The last word first, as if they were new cast :  
 Yet find th' unjoynted Poets joints stand fast.

He shall for all that, nothing gain-say himselfe, every piece will make a good shew. To this purpose answered Menander those that chid him, the day being at hand, in which he had promised a Comedy, and had not begun the same, 'Tut-tut,' said he, 'it is already finished, there wanteth ' nothing but to adde the verse unto it : ' for, having ranged and cast the plot in his mind, he made small accompt of feet, of measures, or cadences of verses, which indeed are but of small import in regard of the rest. Since great Ronzarde and learned Bellay, have raised our French Poesie unto that height of honour, where it now is: I see not one of these petty-ballad-makers, or prentise-dogrell rymers, that doth not bumbast his labours with high-swelling and heaven-disimbowelling words, and that doth not marshall his cadences verie neere as they doe. *Plus sonat quàm valet.* 'The ' sound is more than the weight or worth.' And for the vulgar sort, there were never so many Poets, and so few good: but as it hath been easie for them to represent their rymes, so come they far short in imitating the rich descriptions of the one, and rare inventions of the other. But what shall he doe, if he be urged with sophisticall subtilties about a Sillogisme? A gammon of Bacon makes a man drink, drinking quencheth a mans thirst. Ergo, a gammon of bacon quencheth a mans thirst. Let him mock at it, it is more wittie to be mockt at, than to be answered. Let him borrow this pleasant counter-craft of Aristippus; 'Why ' shall I unbind that, which being bound doth so much ' trouble me?' Some one proposed certaine Logically quiddities against Cleanthes, to whom Chrisippus said; use such



# THE FIRST BOOKE

jugling tricks to play with children, and divert not the serious thoughts of an aged man to such idle matters. If such foolish wiles, *Contorta et aculeata sophismata*, 'Intricate and stinged sophismes,' must perswade a lie, it is dangerous; but if they proove void of any effect, and move him but to laughter, I see not why he shall beware of them. Some there are so foolish that will go a quarter of a mile out of the way to hunt after a quaint new word, if they once get in chace; *Aut qui non verba rebus aptant, sed res extrinsecus arcessunt, quibus verba convenient.* 'Or such as fit not words to matter, but fetch matter from abroad, whereto words be fitted.' And another, *Qui alicujus verbi decore placentis, vocentur ad id quod non proposuerunt scribere.* 'Who are allured by the grace of some pleasing word, to write that they intended not to write.' I doe more willingly winde up a wittie notable sentence, that so I may sew it upon me, than unwind me my thread to go fetch it. Contrariwise, it is for words to serve and wait upon the matter, and not for matter to attend upon words, and if the French tongue cannot reach unto it, let the Gaskonie, or any other. I would have the matters to surmount, and so fill the imagination of him that harkneth, that he have no remembrance at all of the words. It is a naturall, simple, and unaffected speech that I love, so written as it is spoken, and such upon the paper, as it is in the mouth, a pithie, sinnowie, full, strong, compendious and materiall speech, not so delicate and affected as vehement and piercing.

*Hæc demum sapiet dictio, quæ feriet.*

*Epitaph. Luc.*  
6.

In fine, that word is wisely fit,  
Which strikes the fence, the marke doth hit.

Rather difficult than tedious, void of affection, free, loose and bold, that every member of it seeme to make a bodie; not Pedanticall, nor Frier-like, nor Lawyer-like, but rather downe right, Souldier-like. As Suetonius calleth that of Iulius Cæsar, which I see no reason wherefore he calleth it. I have sometimes pleased my selfe in imitating that licentiousnesse or wanton humour of our youths, in wearing of their garments; as carelesly to let their cloaks hang downe over one shoulder; to weare their cloakes scarfe or baw-

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XXV  
Of the institution and education of Children

driekewise, and their stockings loose hanging about their legs. It represents a kind of disdainfull fiercenesse of these forraine embellishings, and neglect carelesnesse of art: But I commend it more being employed in the course and forme of speech. All manner of affectation, namely in the livelinesse and libertie of France, is unseemely in a Courtier. And in a Monarchie every Gentleman ought to addresse himselfe unto a Courtiers carriage. Therefore do we well somewhat to incline to a native and carelesse behaviour. I like not a contexture, where the seames and pieces may be seene: As in a well compact bodie, what need a man distinguish and number all the bones and veines severally? *Quæ veritati operam dat oratio, incomposita sit et simplex. Quis accuratè loquitur, nisi qui vult putidè loqui?* 'The speach that 'intendeth truth must be plaine and unpollisht: Who 'speaketh elaborately, but he that meanes to speake un- 'savouredly?' That eloquence offereth injurie unto things, which altogether drawes us to observe it. As in apparell, it is a signe of pusillanimitie for one to marke himselfe, in some particular and unusuall fashion: so likewise in common speech, for one to hunt after new phrases, and unaccustomed- quaint words, proceedeth of a scholasticall and childish ambition. Let me use none other than are spoken in the hals of Paris. Aristophanes the Gramarian was somewhat out of the way, when he reprov'd Epicurus, for the simplicitie of his words, and the end of his art oratorie, which was onely perspicuitie in speech. The imitation of speach, by reason of the facilitie of it, followeth presently a whole nation. The imitation of judging and inventing, comes more slow. The greater number of Readers, because they have found one selfe-same kind of gowne, suppose most falsly to holde one like bodie. Outward garments and cloakes may be borrowed, but never the sinews and strength of the bodie. Most of those that converse with me, speake like unto these Essayes; but I know not whether they thinke alike. The Athenians (as Plato averreth) have for their part great care to be fluent and eloquent in their speech; The Lacedemonians endeavour to be short and compendious; And those of Creet labour more to bee plentiful in conceits, than in language. And these are the best. Zeno was wont

SEN. *Epist.* xl.  
m.  
lxxv. p.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

to say, 'That he had two sorts of disciples; the one he called *φιλολόγους*, curious to learne things,' and those were his darlings, the other he termed *λογοφίλους*, who respected nothing more than the language. Yet can no man say, but that to speake well, is most gracious and commendable, but not so excellent as some make it: and I am grieved to see how we imploy most part of our time about that onely. I would first know mine owne tongue perfectly, then my neighbours with whom I have most commerce. I must needs acknowledge, that the Greeke and Latine tongues, are great ornaments in a Gentleman, but they are purchased at over-high a rate. Use it who list, I will tell you how they may be gotten better cheape, and much sooner than is ordinarily used, which was tried in my selfe. My late father, having by all the meanes and industrie, that is possible for man, sought amongst the wisest, and men of best understanding, to find a most exquisite and readie way of teaching, being advised of the inconveniences then in use; was given to understand, that the lingring while, and best part of our youth, that we imploy in learning the tongues, which cost them nothing, is the onely cause we can never attaine to that absolute perfection of skill and knowledge, of the Greekes, and Romanes. I doe not beleeeve that to be the onely cause. But so it is, the expedient my father found out, was this; that being yet at nurse, and before the first loosening of my tongue, I was delivered to a Germane (who died since, a most excellent Physitian in France) he being then altogether ignorant of the French tongue, but exquisitely readie and skilfull in the Latine. This man, whom my Father had sent for of purpose, and to whom he gave verie great entertainment, had me continually in his armes, and was mine onely overseer. There were also joyned unto him two of his countrymen, but not so learned; whose charge was to attend, and now and then, to play with me; and all these together did never entertaine me with other than the Latine tongue. As for others of his household, it was an inviolable rule, that neither himselfe, nor my mother, nor man, nor maid-servant, were suffered to speake one word in my companie, except such Latine words, as every one had learned to chat and prattle with me. It were strange to tell how every one in

CHAPTER  
XXV  
Of the institution and education of Children

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXV  
Of the in-  
stitution and  
education of  
Children

the house profited therein. My Father and my Mother learned so much Latine, that for a need they could understand it, when they heard it spoken, even so did all the household servants, namely such as were nearest and most about me. To be short, we were all so Latinized, that the townes round about us had their share of it; insomuch as even at this day, many Latine names both of workmen and of their tooles, are yet in use among them. And as for my selfe, I was about six yeares old, and could understand no more French or Perigordine, than Arabike, and that without art, without bookes, rules, or grammer, without whipping or whining. I had gotten as pure a Latine tongue as my Master could speake; the rather because I could neither mingle or confound the same with other tongues. If for an Essay they would give me a Theme, whereas the fashion in Colleges is, to give it in French, I had it in bad Latine, to reduce the same into good. And Nicholas Grucchi, who hath written, *De comitiis Romanorum*, William Guerenti, who hath commented Aristotele: Georg Buchanan, that famous Scottish Poet, and Marke-Antonie Muret, whom (while he lived) both France and Italie to this day, acknowledge to have been the best Orator: all which have beene my familiar tutors, have often told me, that in mine infancie I had the Latine tongue so readie and so perfect, that themselves feared to take me in hand. And Buchanan, who afterward I saw attending on the Marshall of Brissacke, told me, he was about to write a treatise of the institution of children, and that he tooke the model and patterne from mine: for, at that time he had the charge and bringing up of the young Earle of Brissack, whom since we have seene prove so worthy and so valiant a Captaine. As for the Greeke, wherein I have but small understanding, my father purposed to make me learne it by art; But by new and uncustomed meanes, that is, by way of recreation and exercise. We did tosse our declinations, and conjugations to and fro, as they doe, who by way of a certaine game at tables learne both Arithmetike and Geometrie. For, amongst other things he had especially beene perswaded to make me taste and apprehend the fruits of dutie and science by an unforced kinde of will, and of mine owne choice; and without any



# THE FIRST BOOKE

compulsion or rigor to bring me up in all mildnesse and libertie: yea with such kinde of superstition, that, whereas some are of opinion, that suddenly to awaken young children, and as it were by violence to startle and fright them out of their dead sleepe in a morning (wherein they are more heaue and deeper plunged than we) doth greatly trouble and distemper their braines, he would every morning cause me to be awakened by the sound of some instrument; and I was never without a servant; Who to that purpose attended upon me. This example may serve to judge of the rest; as also to commend the judgement and tender affection of so carefull and loving a father: who is not to be blamed, though hee reaped not the fruits answerable to his exquisite toyle, and painefull manuring. Two things hindered the same; first the barrennesse and unfit soyle: for howbeit I were of a sound and strong constitution, and of a tractable and yeelding condition, yet was I so heaue, so sluggish, and so dull, that I could not be rouzed (yea were it to goe to play) from out mine idle drowzinesse. What I saw, I saw it perfectly; and under this heavy, and as it were Lethe-complexion did I breed hardie imaginations, and opinions farre above my yeares. My spirit was very slow, and would goe no further than it was led by others; my apprehension blockish, my invention poore; and besides, I had a marvelous defect in my weake memorie: it is therefore no wonder, if my father could never bring me to any perfection. Secondly, as those that in some dangerous sicknesse, moved with a kind of hope-full and greedie desire of perfect health againe, give care to every Leach or Emperike, and follow all counsels, the good man being exceedingly fearefull to commit any oversight, in a matter he tooke so to heart, suffered himselfe at last to be led away by the common opinion, which like unto the Cranes, followeth ever those that go before, and yeelded to custome: Having those no longer about him, that had given him his first directions, and which they had brought out of Italie. Being but six yeares old I was sent to the Colledge of Guienne, then most flourishing and reputed the best in France, where it is impossible to adde any thing to the great care he had, both to chuse the best and most sufficient Masters, that could be found, to reade unto me, as also

CHAPTER  
XXV  
Of the institution and  
education of  
Children



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXV  
Of the in-  
stitution and  
education of  
Children

for all other circumstances partaining to my education; wherein contrary to usuall customes of Colleges, he observed many particular rules. But so it is, it was ever a College. My Latin tongue was forthwith corrupted, whereof by reason of discontinuance, I afterward lost all manner of use: which new kind of institution, stood me in no other stead, but that at my first admittance, it made me to over-skip some of the lower formes, and to be placed in the highest. For at thirteene yeares of age, that I left the College, I had read over the whole course of Philosophie (as they call it) but with so small profit, that I can now make no account of it. The first taste or feeling I had of bookes, was of the pleasure I tooke in reading the fables of Ovids *Metamorphosies*; for, being but seven or eight yeares old, I would steale and sequester my selfe from all other delights, only to reade them: Forsomuch as the tongue wherein they were written was to me naturall; and it was the easiest booke I knew, and by reason of the matter therein contained most agreeing with my young age. For of King Arthur, of Lancelot du Lake, of Amadis, of Huon of Burdeaux, and such idle time consuming, and wit-besotting trash of bookes wherein youth doth commonly amuse it selfe, I was not so much as acquainted with their names, and to this day know not their bodies, nor what they containe: So exact was my discipline. Whereby I became more carelesse to studie my other pre-script lessons. And well did it fall out for my purpose, that I had to deale with a very discreet Master, who out of his judgement could with such dexteritie winke at, and second my untowardlinesse, and such other faults that were in me. For by that meanes, I read over Virgils *Æneados*, Terence, Plautus, and other Italian Comedies, allured thereunto by the pleasantnesse of their severall subjects: Had be beene so foolishly-severe, or so severely froward as to crosse this course of mine, I thinke verily I had never brought any thing from the College, but the hate and contempt of Bookes, as doth the greatest part of our Nobilitie. Such was his discretion, and so warily did he behave himselfe, that he saw and would not see: hee would foster and increase my longing: suffering me but by stealth, and by snatches to glut my selfe with those Bookes; holding ever a gentle hand

# THE FIRST BOOKE

over me, concerning other regular studies. For, the chiefest thing my father required at their hands (unto whose charge he had committed me) was a kinde of well conditioned mildnesse, and facilitie of complexion. And, to say truth, mine had no other fault, but a certaine dull languishing, and heavie slothfulnesse. The danger was not, I should doe ill, but that I should doe nothing.

No man did ever suspect, I would prove a bad, but an unprofitable man: foreseeing in me rather a kind of idleness, than a voluntary craftinesse. I am not so self-conceited but I perceive what hath followed. The complaints that are daily buzzed in mine eares are these; that I am idle, cold, and negligent in offices of friendship, and dutie to my parents, and kinsfolkes; and touching publike offices, that I am over singular and disdainfull. And those that are most injurious cannot aske, wherefore I have taken, and why I have not paid? but may rather demand, why I doe not quit, and wherefore I doe not give? I would take it as a favour, they should wish such effects of supererogation in me. But they are unjust and over partiall, that will goe about to exact that from me, which I owe not, with more rigor than they will exact from themselves that which they owe; wherein if they condemne me, they utterly cancell both the gratifying of the action, and the gratitude, which thereby would be due to me. Whereas the active well doing should be of more consequence, proceeding from my hand, in regard I have no passive at all. Wherefore I may so much the more freely dispose of my fortune, by how much more it is mine, and of my selfe that am most mine owne. Notwithstanding, if I were a great blazoner of mine owne actions, I might peradventure barre such reproches, and justly upbraid some, that they are not so much offended, because I doe not enough, as for that I may, and it lies in my power to doe much more than I doe. Yet my minde ceased not at the same time to have peculiar unto it selfe well settled motions, true and open judgements concerning the objects which it knew; which alone, and without any helpe or communication it would digest. And amongst other things I verily beleeeve, it would have proved altogether incapable and unfit to yeeld unto force, or stoope unto

CHAPTER  
XXV  
Of the institution and education of Children

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER violence. Shall I account or relate this qualitie of my in-  
 XXV fancie, which was, a kinde of boldnesse in my lookes, and  
 Of the in- gentle softnesse in my voice, and affabilitie in my gestures,  
 stitution and and a dexteritie in conforming my selfe to the parts I under-  
 education of tooke? for before the age of the  
 Children

VIRG. *Buc.*  
*Ecl. viii. 39.*

*Alter ab undecimo tum me vix ceperat annus :*

Yeares had I (to make even)  
 Scarse two above eleven.

I have under-gone and represented the chiefeſt parts in the Latin Tragedies of Buchanan, Guerenti, and of Muret; which in great state were acted and plaid in our College of Guienne: wherein Andreas Goveanus our Rector principall; who as in all other parts belonging to his charge, was without comparison the chiefeſt Rector of France, and my selfe (without ostentation be it spoken) was reputed, if not a chiefe master, yet a principall Actor in them. It is an exercise I rather commend than disallow in young Gentlemen: and have seene some of our Princes (in imitation of some of former ages) both commendably and honestly, in their proper persons act and play some parts in Tragedies. It hath heretofore been esteemed a lawfull exercise, and a tolerable profession in men of honor, namely in Greece. *Aristoni tragico actori rem aperit: huic et genus et fortuna honesta erant: nec ars, quia nihil tale apud Græcos pudori est, ea deformabat.* 'He imparts the matter to Ariston a Player of tragedies, ' whose progenie and fortune were both honest; nor did his ' profession disgrace them, because no such matter is a dis- ' paragement amongst the Græcians.'

LIV. dec. iii. 4.

And I have ever accused them of impertinencie, that condemne and disallow such kindes of recreations, and blamed those of injustice, that refuse good and honest Comedians, or (as we call them) Players, to enter our good townes, and grudge the common people such publike sports. Politike and wel ordered commonwealths endeavor rather carefully to unite and assemble their Citizens together; as in serious offices of devotion, so in honest exercises of recreation. Common societie and loving friendship is thereby cherished and increased. And besides, they cannot have more formall and regular pastimes allowed them, than such as are acted

# THE FIRST BOOKE

and represented in open view of all, and in the presence of the magistrates themselves: And if I might beare sway, I would thinke it reasonable, that Princes should sometimes, at their proper charges, gratifie the common people with them, as an argument of a fatherly affection, and loving goodnesse towards them: and that in populous and frequented cities, there should be Theatres and places appointed for such spectacles; as a diverting of worse inconveniences, and secret actions. But to come to my intended purpose, there is no better way than to allure the affection, and to entice the appetite: otherwise a man shall breed but asses laden with Bookes. With jerkes of rods they have their satchels full of learning given them to keepe. Which to doe well, one must not only harbor in himselfe, but wed and mary the same with his minde.

CHAPTER  
XXV  
Of the institution and education of Children

## THE TWENTY-SIXTH CHAPTER

It is follie to referre Truth or Falshood to our sufficiencie.



It is not peradventure without reason, that we ascribe the facilitie of beleeving and easines of perswasion, unto simplicitie and ignorance: For me seemeth to have learnt heretofore, that beliefe was, as it were an impression conceived in our minde, and according as the same was found either more soft, or of lesse resistance, it was easier to imprint any thing therein. *Vt necesse est lancem in libra ponderibus impositis deprimi: sic animum perspicuis* Cic. Acad. Qu. iv.  
*cedere.* ‘As it is necessarie a scale must goe downe the ballance when weights are put into it, so must a minde yeeld to things that are manifest.’ Forasmuch therefore, as the minde being most emptie and without counterpoize, so much the more easily doth it yeeld under the burthen of the first perswasion. And that’s the reason why children, those of the common sort, women, and sickefolks, are so subject to be mis-led, and so easie to swallow gudgeons. Yet on the



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XXVI

It is follie to  
referre Truth  
or Falshood  
to our suffi-  
ciencie

other side it is a sottish presumption to disdaine and condemne that for false, which unto us seemeth to beare no shew of likelihood or truth: which is an ordinarie fault in those who perswade themselves to be of more sufficiency than the vulgar sort. So was I sometimes wont to doe, and if I heard any body speake, either of ghosts walking, of foretelling future things, of enchantments, of witchcrafts, or any other thing reported, which I could not well conceive, or that was beyond my reach.

HOR. ii. *Ep.* ii.  
208.

*Somnia, terrores magicos, miracula, sagas,  
Nocturnos lemures, portentaque Thessali.*

Dreames, magike terrors, witches, uncouth-wonders,  
Night-walking sprites, Thessalian conjur'd-thunders.

I could not but feele a kinde of compassion to see the poore and seely people abused with such follies. And now I perceive, that I was as much to be moaned mysele: Not that experience hath since made me to dicerne any thing beyond my former opinions: yet was not my curiositie the cause of it, but reason hath taught me, that so resolutely to condemne a thing for false, and impossible, is to assume unto himsele the advantage, to have the bounds and limits of Gods will, and of the power of our common mother Nature tied to his sleeve: And that there is no greater folly in the world, than to reduce them to the measure of our capacitie, and bounds of our sufficiency. If we terme those things monsters or miracles to which our reason cannot attaine, how many such doe daily present themselves unto our sight? Let us consider through what clouds, and how blinde-fold we are led to the knowledge of most things, that passe our hands: verily we shall finde, it is rather custome, than science that removeth the strangenesse of them from us:

LUCR. ii.

*—jam nemo fessus saturusque videndi,  
Suspiciere in cæli dignatur lucida templa.*

Now no man tir'd with glut of contemplation,  
Deignes to have heav'ns bright Church in admiration.

And that those things, were they newly presented unto us, wee should doubtlesse deeme them, as much, or more unlikely, and incredible, than any other.



# THE FIRST BOOKE

—*si nunc primum mortalibus adsint*  
*Ex improviso, ceu sint objecta, repente,*  
*Nil magis his rebus poterat mirabile dici,*  
*Aut minus ante quod auderent fore credere gentes.*

If now first on a sudden they were here  
 Mongst mortall men, object to eie or eare,  
 Nothing, than these things, would more wondrous bee,  
 Or that, men durst lesse thinke, ever to seee.

He who had never seene a river before, the first he saw, he thought it to be the Ocean: and things that are the greatest in our knowledge, we judge them to be the extremest that nature worketh in that kinde.

*Scilicet et fluvius qui non est maximus, ei est*  
*Qui non ante aliquem majorem vidit, et ingens*  
*Arbor homoque videtur, et omnia de genere omni*  
*Maxima quæ vidit quisque, hæc ingentia fingit.*

A streame none of the greatest, may so seeme  
 To him, that never saw a greater streame.  
 Trees, men, seeme huge, and all things of all sorts,  
 The greatest one hath seene, he huge reports.

*Consuetudine oculorum assuescunt animi, neque admirantur,* CIC. Nat. De.  
*neque requirunt rationes earum rerum, quas semper vident.* ii.

‘Minds are acquainted by custome of their eies, nor do they  
 ‘admire, or enquire the reason of those things which they  
 ‘continually behold.’ The novelty of things doth more incite us to search out the causes, than their greatnesse: we must judge of this infinit power of nature, with more reverence, and with more acknowledgement of our owne ignorance and weaknesse. How many things of small likelihood are there, witnessed by men, worthie of credit, whereof if we cannot be perswaded, we should at least leave them in suspence? For, to deeme them impossible, is by rash presumption to presume and know how farre possibilitie reacheth. If a man did well understand, what difference there is betweene impossibilitie, and that which is unwonted and betweene that which is against the course of nature, and the common opinion of men, in not beleeving rashly, and in not disbeleeving easily; the rule of ‘Nothing too-much,’ commanded by Chilon, should be observed. When we finde in Froysard, that the Earl of Foix, (being in Bearne) had knowledge of the defeature at Inberoth, of King John of

CHAPTER  
 XXVI  
 It is follie to  
 referre Truth  
 or Falshood  
 to our suffi-  
 ciencie  
 LUCR. ii. 1042.

vi. 671.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XXVI

It is follie to  
referre Truth  
or Falshood  
to our suffi-  
ciencie

Castile, the morrow next it hapned, and the meanes he alleageth for it, a man may well laugh at it: And of that which our Annales report, that Pope Honorius, the very same day that King Philip Augustus died at Mantes, caused his publike funerals to be solemnized, and commanded them to be celebrated throughout all Italie. For, the authoritie of the witnesses hath peradventure no sufficient warrant to restraints us. But what if Plutarke, besides divers examples which he alleageth of antiquitie, saith to have certainly knowne, that in 'Domitians time, the newes 'of the battle lost by Antonius in Germany many daies 'journeies thence, was published at Rome, and divulged 'through the world, the very same day it succeeded.' And if Cæsar holds, that it hath many times happened, that report hath foregone the accident: Shall we not say, that those simple people have suffered themselves to be cousened and seduced by the vulgar sort, because they were not as cleare-sighted as we? Is there any thing more daintie, more unspotted, and more lively than Plinies judgement, whensoever it pleaseth him to make shew of it? Is there any farther from vanitie? I omit the excellencie of his learning and knowledge, whereof I make but small reckoning: in which of those two parts doe we exceed him? Yet there is no scholler so meanely learned, but will convince him of lying, and read a lecture of contradiction against him upon the progresse of natures works. When wee read in Bouchet the myracles wrought by the reliques of Saint Hillarie, his credit is not sufficient to barre us the libertie of contradicting him: yet at random to condemne all such like histories, seemeth to me a notable impudencie. That famous man Saint Augustine witnesseth to have seene a blinde childe to recover his sight, over the reliques of Saint Gervase and Protaise at Milane: and a woman at Carthage, to have beene cured of a canker, by the signe of the holy Crosse, which a woman newly baptized made unto her: and Hesperius a familiar friend of his, to have expelled certaine spirits, that molested his house, with a little of the earth of our Saviours sepulcher; which earth being afterwards transported into a Church, a Paralitike man was immediately therewith cured: and a woman going in procession, having as she past

# THE FIRST BOOKE

by with a nose-gaie toucht the case wherein Saint Stevens CHAPTER  
bones were, and with the same afterward rubbed her eies, she XXVI  
recovered her sight, which long before she had utterly lost: It is follie to  
and divers other examples, where he affirmeth to have beene referre Truth  
an assistant himselfe. What shal we accuse him of, and two or Falshood  
other holy Bishops, Aurelius and Maximinus, whom he to our suffi-  
calleth for his witnesses? Shal it be of ignorance, of cience  
simplicity, of malice, of facility, or of imposture? Is any  
man living so impudent, that thinks he may be compared to  
them, whether it be in vertue or piety, in knowledge or  
judgement, in wisdom or sufficiency? *Qui ut rationem* CIC. Div. i.  
*nullam afferrent, ipsa autoritate me frangerent*: 'Who  
' though they alleaged no reason, yet might subdue me with  
' their very authoritie.' It is a dangerous fond hardnesse,  
and of consequence, besides the absurd temerity it drawes  
with it, to despise what we conceive not. For, after that  
according to your best understanding, you have established  
the limits of truth, and bounds of falshood, and that it is  
found, you must necessarily beleieve things, wherein is more  
strangenesse, than in those you deny; you have already  
bound your selfe to abandon them. Now that which me  
thinkes brings as much disorder in our consciences, namely  
in these troubles of religion wherein we are, is the dispensa-  
tion Catholikes make of their beliefe. They suppose to shew  
themselves very moderate and skilfull, when they yeeld their  
adversaries any of those articles now in question. But  
besides that, they perceive not what an advantage it is for  
him that chargeth you, if you but once begin to yeeld and  
give them ground; and how much that encorageth him to  
pursue his point: those articles which they chuse for the  
lightest, are oftentimes most important. Either a man  
must wholly submit himselfe to the authoritie of our  
Ecclesiasticall policie, or altogether dispence himselfe from  
it: It is not for us to determine what part of obedience we  
owe unto it. And moreover, I may say it, because I have  
made triall of it, having sometimes used this libertie of my  
choice, and particular election, not regarding certaine points  
of the observance of our Church, which seeme to beare a face,  
either more vaine, or more strange; comming to communicate  
them with wise men, I have found that those things have a

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER

XXVI

It is follie to  
referre Truth  
or Falshood  
to our suffi-  
ciencie

most solid and steadie foundation, and that it is but foolishnesse and ignorance, makes us receive them with lesse respect and reverence than the rest. Why remember we not, what, and how many contradictions we finde and feele even in our owne judgement? How many things served us but yesterday as articles of faith, which to day we deeme but fables?

Glory and curiositie are the scourges of our soules.

The latter induceth us to have an oare in every ship,  
and the former forbids us to leave any thing  
unresolved or undecided.

## THE TWENTY-SEVENTH CHAPTER

### Of Friendship.



CONSIDERING the proceeding of a Painters worke I have: a desire hath possessed mee to imitate him: He maketh choice of the most convenient place and middle of everie wall, there to place a picture, laboured with all his skill and sufficiencie; and all void places about it he filleth up with antike Boscage or Crotlesko works; which are fantastick pictures, having no grace, but in the variety and strangenesse of them. And what are these my compositions in truth, other than antike workes, and monstrous bodies, patched and hudled up together of divers members, without any certaine or well ordered figure, having neither order, dependencie, or proportion, but casuall and framed by chance?

HOR. *Art.*  
*Poet.* 4.

*Desinit in piscem mulier formosa superne.*

A woman faire for parts superior,  
Ends in a fish for parts inferior.

Touching this second point I goe as farre as my Painter, but for the other and better part I am farre behinde: for my sufficiency reacheth not so farre, as that I dare undertake, a rich, a polished, and according to true skill, and art-like table. I have advised my selfe to borrow one of Steven



# THE FIRST BOOKE

de la Boitie, who with this kinde of worke shall honour all the world. It is a discourse he entituled, 'Voluntary Servitude,' but those who have not knowne him, have since very properly rebaptized the same, 'The against one.' In his first youth he writ, by way of Essaie, in honour of libertie against Tyrants. It hath long since beene dispersed amongst men of understanding, not without great and well deserved commendations: for it is full of wit, and containeth as much learning as may be: yet doth it differ much from the best he can do. And if in the age I knew him in, he would have undergone my desigine, to set his fantasies downe in writing, we should doubtlesse see many rare things, and which would very neereley approach the honour of antiquity: for especially touching that part of natures gifts, I know none may be compared to him. But it was not long of him, that ever this Treatise came to mans view, and I beleeeve he never saw it since it first escaped his hands: with certaine other notes concerning the edict of Januarie, famous by reason of our intestine warre, which haply may in other places finde their deserved praise. It is all I could ever recover of his reliques (whom when death seized, he by his last will and testament, left with so kinde remembrance, heire and executor of his librarie and writings) besides the little booke, I since caused to be published: To which his pamphlet I am particularly most bounden, forsomuch as it was the instrumentall meane of our first acquaintance. For it was shewed me long time before I saw him; and gave me the first knowledge of his name, addressing, and thus nourishing that unspotted friendship, which we (so long as it pleased God) have so sincerely, so entire and inviolably maintained betweene us, that truly a man shall not commonly heare of the like; and amongst our moderne men no signe of any such is seene. So many parts are required to the erecting of such a one, that it may be counted a wonder, if fortune once in three ages contract the like. There is nothing to which Nature hath more addressed us than to societie. And Aristotle saith, 'that perfect Law-givers have had more regardfull care of friendship than of justice.' And the utmost drift of it's perfection is this. For generally, all those amities which are forged and nourished by voluptuousnesse or profit, publike or private need, are

CHAPTER  
XXVII  
Of Friendship



## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XXVII  
Of Friendship

thereby so much the lesse faire and generous, and so much the lesse true amities, in that they intermeddle other causes, scope, and fruit with friendship, than it selfe alone: Nor doe those foure ancient kindes of friendships, Naturall, sociall, hospitable, and venerian, either particularly or conjointly besecme the same. That from children to parents may rather be termed respect: Friendship is nourished by communication, which by reason of the over-great disparitie cannot bee found in them, and would happly offend the duties of nature: for neither all the secret thoughts of parents can be communicated unto children, lest it might engender an unbeseeing familiaritie betweene them, nor the admonitions and corrections (which are the chiefest offices of friendship) could be exercised from children to parents. There have nations beene found, where, by custome, children killed their parents, and others, where parents slew their children, thereby to avoid the hindrance of enter-bearing one another in after-times: for naturally one dependeth from the ruine of another. There have Philosophers beene found disdaining this naturall conjunction, witnesse Aristippus, who being urged with the affection he ought his children, as proceeding from his loynes, began to spit, saying, 'That also that excrement proceeded from him, and that also we 'engendred wormes and lice.' And that other man, whom Plutarke would have perswaded to agree with his brother, answered, 'I care not a straw the more for him, though he 'came out of the same wombe I did.' Verily the name of Brother is a glorious name, and full of loving kindnesse, and therefore did he and I terme one another sworne brother: but this commixture, dividence, and sharing of goods, this joyning wealth to wealth, and that the riches of one shall be the povertie of another, doth exceedingly distemper and distract all brotherly alliance, and lovely conjunction: If brothers should conduct the progresse of their advancement and thrift in one same path and course, they must necessarily oftentimes hinder and crosse one another. Moreover, the correspondencie and relation that begetteth these true and mutually perfect amities, why shall it be found in these? The father and the sonne may very well be of a farre differing complexion, and so many brothers: He is my sonne, he

# THE FIRST BOOKE

is my kinsman ; but he may be a foole, a bad, or a peevish-minded man. And then according as they are friendships, which the law and dutie of nature doth command us, so much the lesse of our owne voluntarie choice and libertie is there required unto it : And our genuine libertie hath no production more properly her owne, than that of affection and amitie. Sure I am, that concerning the same I have assaied all that might be, having had the best and most indulgent father that ever was, even to his extremest age, and who from father to sonne was descended of a famous house, and touching this rare-seene vertue of brotherly concord very exemplare :

CHAPTER  
XXVII  
Of Friendship

—*et ipse*  
*Notus in fratres animi paterni.*  
To his brothers knowne so kinde,  
As to beare a fathers minde.

HOR. ii. *Od.*  
ii. 6.

To compare the affection toward women unto it, although it proceed from our owne free choise, a man cannot, nor may it be placed in this ranke : Her fire, I confess it

(—*neque enim est dea nescia nostri*  
*Quæ dulcem curis miscet amaritatem.*)  
(Nor is that Goddess ignorant of me,  
Whose bitter-sweets with my cares mixed be.)

to be more active, more fervent, and more sharpe. But it is a rash and wavering fire, waving and divers : the fire of an ague subject to fits and stints, and that hath but slender hold-fast of us. In true friendship, it is a generall and universall heat, and equally tempered, a constant and settled heat, all pleasure and smoothnes, that hath no pricking or stinging in it, which the more it is in lustfull love, the more is it but a ranging and mad desire in following that which flies us,

*Come segue la lepre il cacciatore*  
*Al freddo, al caldo, alla montagna, al lito,*  
*Ne piu l'estima poi che presa vede,*  
*E sol dietro a chi fugge affretta il piede.*

ARIOST. can.  
x. st. 7.

Ev'n as the huntsman doth the hare pursue,  
In cold, in heat, on mountaines, on the shore,  
But cares no more, when he her ta'en espies,  
Speeding his pace, only at that which flies.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XXVII Of Friendship

As soone as it creepeth into the termes of friendship, that is to say, in the agreement of wils, it languisheth and vanisheth away: enjoying doth lose it, as having a corporall end, and subject to sacietie. On the other side, friendship is enjoyed according as it is desired, it is neither bred, nor nourished, nor increaseth but in ioyissance, as being spirituall, and the minde being refined by use and custome. Under this chiefe amitie, these fading affections have sometimes found place in me, lest I should speake of him, who in his verses speakes but too much of it. So are these two passions entred into me in knowledge one of another, but in comparison never: the first flying a high, and keeping a proud pitch, disdainfully beholding the other to passe her points farre under it. Concerning marriage, besides that it is a covenant which hath nothing free but the entrance, the continuance being forced and constrained, depending elsewhere than from our will, and a match ordinarily concluded to other ends: A thousand strange knots are therein commonly to be unknit, able to break the web, and trouble the whole course of a lively affection; whereas in friendship, there is no commerce or busines depending on the same, but it selfe. Seeing (to speake truly) that the ordinary sufficiency of women, cannot answer this conference and communication, the nurse of this sacred bond: nor seeme their mindes strong enough to endure the pulling of a knot so hard, so fast, and durable. And truly, if without that, such a genuine and voluntarie acquaintance might be contracted, where not only mindes had this entire ioyissance, but also bodies, a share of the alliance, and where a man might wholly be engaged: It is certaine, that friendship would thereby be more compleat and full: But this sex could never yet by any example attaine unto it, and is by ancient schooles rejected thence. And this other Greeke licence is justly abhorred by our customes, which notwithstanding, because according to use it had so necessarie a disparitie of ages, and difference of offices betweene lovers, did no more sufficiently answer the perfect union and agreement, which here we require: *Quis est enim iste amor amicitiae? cur neque deformem adolescentem quisquam amat, neque formosum senem?* ‘For, what love is this of friendship? why

CIC. *Tusc. Qu.*  
iv.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

‘doth no man love either a deformed young man, or a  
‘beautifull old man?’ For even the picture the Academie  
makes of it, will not (as I suppose) disavowe mee, to say  
thus in her behalfe: That the first furie, enspired by the son  
of Venus in the lovers hart, upon the object of tender  
youths-flower, to which they allow all insolent and passionate  
violences, an immoderate heat may produce, was simply  
grounded upon an externall beauty; a false image of cor-  
porall generation: for in the spirit it had no power, the  
sight whereof was yet concealed, which was but in his  
infancie, and before the age of budding. For, if this furie  
did seize upon a base minded courage, the meanes of it’s  
pursuit, where riches, gifts, favour to the advancement of  
dignities, and such like vile merchandice, which they reprove.  
If it fell into a most generous minde, the interpositions were  
likewise generous: Philosophicall instructions, documents to  
reverence religion, to obey the lawes, to die for the good of  
his countrie: examples of valor, wisdom and justice. The  
lover endeavoring and studying to make himselfe acceptable  
by the good grace and beauty of his minde (that of his body  
being long since decayed) hoping by this mentall societie to  
establish a more firme and permanent bargaine. When this  
pursuit attained the effect in due season, (for by not requir-  
ing in a lover, he should bring leasure and discretion in his  
enterprise, they require it exactly in the beloved; forasmuch  
as he was to judge of an internall beauty, of a difficile know-  
ledge, and abstruse discovery) than by the interposition of a  
spiritual beauty was the desire of a spiritual conception  
engendred in the beloved. The latter was here chiefest;  
the corporall, accidentall and second, altogether contrarie to  
the lover. And therefore doe they preferre the beloved,  
and verifie that the gods likewise preferre the same: and  
greatly blame the Poet Æschylus, who in the love betweene  
Achilles and Patroclus ascribeth the lovers part unto  
Achilles, who was in the first and beardlesse youth of his  
adolescence, and the fairest of the Græcians. After this  
generall communitie, the mistris and worthiest part of it,  
predominant and exercising her offices (they say the most  
availefull commodity did thereby redound both to the  
private and publike). That it was the force of countries

CHAPTER  
XXVII  
Of Friendship



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XXVII Of Friendship

Cic. *Tusc. Qu.*  
iv.

Cic. *Amic.*

received the use of it, and the principall defence of equitie and libertie: witnesse the comfortable loves of Hermodius and Aristogiton. Therefore name they it sacred and divine, and it concerns not them whether the violence of tyrants, or the demisnesse of the people be against them: To conclude, all can be alleaged in favour of the Academy, is to say, that it was a love ending in friendship, a thing which hath no bad reference unto the Stoical definition of love: *Amorem conatum esse amicitia facienda ex pulchritudinis specie*. 'That 'love is an endeavour of making friendship, by the shew of 'beautie.' I returne to my description in a more equitable and equall manner. *Omnino amicitia corroboratis jam confirmatisque ingeniis et atatibus judicanda sunt*. 'Clearly 'friendships are to be judged by wits, and ages already 'strengthened and confirmed.' As for the rest, those we ordinarily call friendes and amities, are but acquaintances and familiarities, tied together by some occasion or commodities, by meanes whereof our mindes are entertained. In the amitie I speake of, they entermixe and confound themselves one in the other, with so universall a commixture, that they weare out, and can no more finde the seame that hath conjoyned them together. If a man urge me to tell wherefore I loved him, I feele it cannot be expressed, but by answering; Because it was he, because it was my selfe. There is beyond all my discourse, and besides what I can particularly report of it, I know not what inexplicable and fatall power, a meane and Mediatrix of this indissoluble union. Wee sought one another, before we had seene one another, and by the reports we heard one of another; which wrought a greater violence in us, than the reason of reports may well beare: I thinke by some secret ordinance of the heavens, we embraced one another by our names. And at our first meeting, which was by chance at a great feast, and solemne meeting of a whole towneship, we found our selves so surprized, so knowne, so acquainted, and so combinedly bound together, that from thence forward, nothing was so neere unto us, as one unto another. He writ an excellent Latyne Satyre; since published; by which he excuseth and expoundeth the precipitation of our acquaintance, so suddenly come to her perfection; Sithence it must continue so short a



# THE FIRST BOOKE

CHAPTER  
XXVII  
Of Friendship

time, and begun so late (for we were both growne men, and he some yeares older than my selfe) there was no time to be lost. And it was not to bee modelled or directed by the paterne of regular and remisse friendship, wherein so many precautions of a long and preallable conversation are required. This hath no other Idea than of it selfe, and can have no reference but to it selfe. It is not one especiall consideration, nor two, nor three, nor foure, nor a thousand: It is I wot not what kinde of quintessence, of all this commixture, which having seized all my will, induced the same to plunge and lose it selfe in his, which likewise having seized all his will, brought it to lose and plunge it selfe in mine, with a mutuall greedinesse, and with a semblable concurrence. I may truly say, lose, reserving nothing unto us, that might properly be called our owne, nor that was either his, or mine. When Lelius in the presence of the Romane Consuls, who after the condemnation of Tiberius Gracchus, pursued all those that had beene of his acquaintance, came to enquire of Caius Blossius (who was one of his chiefest friends) what he would have done for him, and that he answered, ‘All things.’ ‘What? All things?’ replied he: ‘And what if he had willed thee to burne our Temples?’ Blossius answered, ‘He would never have commanded such a thing.’ ‘But what if he had done it?’ replied Lelius: The other answered, ‘I would have obeyed him.’ If hee were so perfect a friend to Gracchus, as Histories report, he needed not offend the Consuls with this last and bold confession, and should not have departed from the assurance hee had of Gracchus his minde. But yet those, who accuse this answer as seditious, understand not well this mysterie: and doe not presuppose in what termes he stood, and that he held Gracchus his will in his sleeve, both by power and knowledge. They were rather friends than Citizens, rather friends than enemies of their countrey, or friends of ambition and trouble. Having absolutely committed themselves one to another, they perfectly held the reines of one anothers inclination: and let this yoke be guided by vertue and conduct of reason (because without them it is altogether impossible to combine and proportion the same). The answer of Blossius was such as it should be. If their affections mis-

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XXVII Of Friendship

carried, according to my meaning, they were neither friends one to other, nor friends to themselves. As for the rest, this answer sounds no more than mine would doe, to him that would in such sort enquire of me; if your will should command you to kill your daughter, would you doe it? and that I should consent unto it: for, that beareth no witness of consent to doe it: because I am not in doubt of my will, and as little of such a friends will. It is not in the power of the worlds discourse to remove me from the certaintie I have of his intentions and judgements of mine: no one of it's actions might be presented unto me, under what shape soever, but I would presently finde the spring and motion of it. Our mindes have jumped so unitedly together, they have with so fervent an affection considered of each other, and with like affection so discovered and sounded, even to the very bottome of each others heart and entrails, that I did not only know his, as well as mine owne, but I would (verily) rather have trusted him concerning any matter of mine, than my selfe. Let no man compare any of the other common friendships to this. I have as much knowledge of them as another, yea of the perfectest of their kinde: yet wil I not perswade any man to confound their rules, for so a man might be deceived. In these other strict friendships a man must march with the bridle of wisdom and precaution in his hand: the bond is not so strictly tied, but a man may in some sort distrust the same. 'Love him' (said Chilon) 'as if you should one day hate him againe. Hate him as if you should love him againe.' This precept, so abominable in this soveraigne and mistris Amitie, is necessarie and wholesome in the use of vulgar and customarie friendships: toward which a man must employ the saying Aristotle was wont so often to repeat, 'Oh you my friends, there is no perfect friend.'

In this noble commerce, offices and benefits (nurses of other amities) deserve not so much as to bee accounted of: this confusion so full of our wills is cause of it: for even as the friendship I beare unto my selfe, admits no accrease, by any succour I give my selfe in any time of need, whatsoever the Stoickes alleage; and as I acknowledge no thanks unto my selfe for any service I doe unto my selfe, so the union of

## THE FIRST BOOKE

such friends, being truly perfect, makes them lose the feeling of such duties, and hate, and expell from one another these words of division, and difference; benefit, good deed, dutie, obligation, acknowledgement, prayer, thanks, and such their like. All things being by effect common betweene them; wils, thoughts, judgements, goods, wives, children, honour, and life; and their mutuall agreement, being no other than one soule in two bodies, according to the fit definition of Aristotle, they can neither lend or give ought to each other. See here the reason why Lawmakers, to honour marriage with some imaginary resemblance of this divine bond, inhibit donations betweene husband and wife; meaning thereby to inferre, that all things should peculiarly bee proper to each of them, and that they have nothing to divide and share together. If in the friendship whereof I speake, one might give unto another, the receiver of the benefit should binde his fellow. For, each seeking more than any other thing, to doe each other good, he who yeelds both matter and occasion, is the man sheweth himselfe liberall, giving his friend that contentment, to effect towards him what he desireth most. When the Philosopher Diogenes wanted money, he was wont to say; ‘That he re-demanded the same of his friends, and not that he demanded it’: And to shew how that is practised by effect, I will relate an ancient singular example. Eudamidas the Corinthian had two friends. Charixenus a Sycionian, and Aretheus a Corinthian; being upon his death-bed, and very poore, and his two friends very rich, thus made his last will and testament. ‘To Aretheus, I bequeath the keeping of my mother, and to maintaine her when she shall be old: To Charixenus the marrying of my daughter, and to give her as great a dowry as he may: and in case one of them shall chance to die before, I appoint the survivor to substitute his charge, and supply his place.’ Those that first saw this testament, laughed and mocked at the same; but his heires being advertised thereof, were very well pleased, and received it with singular contentment. And Charixenus one of them, dying five daies after Eudamidas, the substitution being declared in favour of Aretheus, he carefully and very kindly kept and maintained his mother, and of five talents that he

CHAPTER  
XXVII  
Of Friendship

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXVII  
Of Friendship

was worth, he gave two and a halfe in mariage to one only daughter he had, and the other two and a halfe to the daughter of Eudamidas, whom he married both in one day. This example is very ample, if one thing were not, which is the multitude of friends: For, this perfect amity I speake of, is indivisible; each man doth so wholly give himselfe unto his friend, that he hath nothing left him to divide elsewhere: moreover he is grieved that he is double, triple, or quadruple, and hath not many soules, or sundry wils, that he might conferre them all upon this subject. Common friendships may bee divided; a man may love beauty in one, facility of behaviour in another, liberality in one, and wisdom in another, paternity in this, fraternity in that man, and so forth: but this amitie which possesseth the soule, and swaies it in all soveraigntie, it is impossible it should be double. If two at one instant should require helpe, to which would you run? Should they crave contrary offices of you, what order would you follow? Should one commit a matter to your silence, which if the other knew would greatly profit him, what course would you take? Or how would you discharge your selfe? A singular and principall friendship dissolveth all other duties, and freeth all other obligations. The secret I have sworne not to reveale to another, I may without perjurie impart it unto him, who is no other but my selfe. It is a great and strange wonder for a man to double himselfe; and those that talke of tripling, know not, nor cannot reach unto the height of it. 'Nothing is extreme, that hath his like.' And he who shal presuppose, that of two I love the one as wel as the other, and that they enter-love one another, and love me as much as I love them: he multiplieth in brother-hood, a thing most singular, and alonely one, and than which one alone is also the rarest to be found in the world. The remainder of this history agreeth very wel with what I said; for, Eudamidas giveth as a grace and favor to his friends to employ them in his need: he leaveth them as his heires of his liberality, which consisteth in putting the meanes into their hands, to doe him good. And doubtlesse, the force of friendship is much more richly shewen in his deed, than in Aretheus. To conclude, they are imaginable effects, to him



# THE FIRST BOOKE

CHAPTER  
XXVII  
Of Friendship

that hath not tasted them; and which makes me wonder-fully to honor the answer of that young Souldier to Cyrus, who enquiring of him, what he would take for a horse, with which he had lately gained the prize of a race, and whether he would change him for a Kingdome? ‘No surely my Liege’ (said he) ‘yet would I willingly forgoe him to gaine a true ‘friend, could I but finde a man worthy of so precious an ‘alliance.’ He said not ill, in saying, ‘could I but finde.’ For, a man shall easily finde men fit for a superficiall acquaintance; but in this, wherein men negotiate from the very centre of their harts, and make no spare of any thing, it is most requisite, all the wards and springs be sincerely wrought, and perfectly true. In confederacies, which hold but by one end, men have nothing to provide for, but for the imperfections, which particularly doe interest and concerne that end and respect. It is no great matter what religion my Physician and Lawyer is of: this consideration hath nothing common with the offices of that friendship they owe mee. So doe I in the familiar acquaintances, that those who serve me contract with me. I am nothing inquisitive whether a Lackey be chaste or no, but whether he be diligent: I feare not a gaming Muletier, so much as if he be weake; nor a hot swearing Cooke, as one that is ignorant and unskilfull; I never meddle with saying what a man should doe in the world; there are over many others that doe it; but what my selfe doe in the world.

*Mihi sic usus est: Tibi, ut opus est facto, fuce.*

So is it requisite for me;  
Doe thou as needfull is for thee.

TER. Heau.  
act. i. scen. i.  
28.

Concerning familiar table-talk, I rather acquaint my selfe with, and follow a merry conceited humour, than a wise man: And in bed I rather prefer beauty, than goodnesse; and in society or conversation of familiar discourse, I respect rather sufficiency, though without *Preud'hommie*, and so of all things else. Even as he that was found riding upon an hobby-horse, playing with his children, besought him, who thus surprized him, not to speake of it, untill he were a father himselfe, supposing the tender fondnesse, and fatherly passion, which then would possesse his minde, should make



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXVII  
Of Friendship

him an impartiall judge of such an action. So would I wish to speake to such as had tried what I speake of: but knowing how far such an amitie is from the common use, and how seld seene and rarely found, I looke not to finde a competent judge. For, even the discourses, which sterne antiquitie hath left us concerning this subject, seeme to me but faint and forcelesse in respect of the feeling I have of it: And in that point the effects exceed the very precepts of Philosophie.

HOR. i. Sat. v.  
44.

*Nil ego contulerim jucundo sanus amico.*

For me, be I well in my wit,  
Nought, as a merry friend, so fit.

Ancient Menander accounted him happy, that had but met the shadow of a true friend: verily he had reason to say so, especially if he had tasted of any: for truly, if I compare all the rest of my forepassed life, which although I have by the meere mercy of God, past at rest and ease, and except the losse of so deare a friend, free from all grievous affliction, with an ever-quietnesse of minde, as one that have taken my naturall and originall commodities in good payment, without searching any others: if, as I say, I compare it all unto the foure yeares, I so happily enjoied the sweet company, and deare-deare society of that worthy man, it is nought but a vapour, nought but a darke and yrkesome light. Since the time I lost him,

VIRG. *Æn.* v.  
49.

*quem semper acerbum,  
Semper honoratum (sic Dii voluistis) habebo.*

Which I shall ever hold a bitter day,  
Yet ever honor'd (so my God t' obey).

I doe but languish, I doe but sorrow: and even those pleasures, all things present me with, in stead of yeelding me comfort, doe but redouble the grieffe of his losse. We were copartners in all things. All things were with us at halfe; me thinkes I have stolne his part from him.

TER. *Heau.*  
act. i. scen. i.  
97.

*—Nec fas esse ulla me voluptate hic frui  
Decrevi, tantisper dum ille abest meus particeps.*

I have set downe, no joy enjoy I may,  
As long as he my partner is away.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

I was so accustomed to be ever two, and so enured to be never single, that me thinks I am but halfe my selfe.

CHAPTER  
XXVII  
Of Friendship  
HOR. ii. *Od.*  
xvii. 5.

*Illam meæ si partem animæ tulit,  
Maturior vis, quid moror altera,  
Nec charus æquè nec superstes,  
Integer? Ille dies utramque  
Duxit ruinam.*

Since that part of my soule riper fate reft me,  
Why stay I heere the other part he left me?  
Nor so deere, nor entire, while heere I rest:  
That day hath in one ruine both opprest.

There is no action can betide me, or imagination possesse me, but I heare him saying, as indeed he would have done to me: for even as he did excell me by an infinite distance in all other sufficiencies and vertues, so did he in all offices and duties of friendship.

*Quis desiderio sit pudor aut modus,  
Tam chari capitis?*

IB. i. *Od.*  
xxiv. 1.

What modesty or measure may I beare,  
In want and wish of him that was so deare?

*O misero frater adempte mihi!  
Omnia tecum unà perierunt gaudia nostra,  
Quæ tuus in vita dulcis alebat amor.  
Tu mea, tu moriens fregisti commoda frater,  
Tecum unà tota est nostra sepulta anima,  
Cujus ego interitu tota de mente fugavi  
Hæc studia, atque omnes delicias animi.  
Alloquar? audiero nunquam tua verba loquentem?  
Nunquam ego te vita frater amabilior,  
Aspiciam posthac? at certè semper amabo.*

CATUL. *Eleg.*  
iv. 20, 92, 23,  
95.  
21.  
94.  
25.  
*Ib.* i. 9.

O brother reft from miserable me,  
All our delight's are perished with thee,  
Which thy sweet love did nourish in my breath.  
Thou all my good hast spoiled in thy death:  
With thee my soule is all and whole enshrinde,  
At whose death I have cast out of minde  
All my mindes sweet-meets, studies of this kinde;  
Never shall I, heare thee speake, speake with thee?  
Thee brother, than life dearer, never see?  
Yet shalt thou ever be belov'd of mee.

but let us a little heare this yong man speake, being but  
sixteene yeares of age.

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XXVII  
Of Friendship

Because I have found this worke to have since beene published (and to an ill end) by such as seeke to trouble and subvert the state of our common-wealth, nor caring whether they shall reforme it or no ; which they have fondly inserted among other writings of their invention, I have revoked my intent, which was to place it here. And lest the Authors memory should any way be interessd with those that could not thoroughly know his opinions and actions, they shall understand, that this subject was by him treated of in his infancie, only by way of exercise, as a subject, common, bare-worne, and wyer-drawne in a thousand bookes. I will never doubt but he beleevd what he writ, and writ as he thought: for hee was so conscientious, that no lie did ever passe his lips, yea were it but in matters of sport or play: and I know, that had it beene in his choyce, he would rather have beene borne at Venice, than at Sarlac; and good reason why: But he had another maxime deeply imprinted in his minde, which was, carefully to obey, and religiously to submit himselfe to the lawes, under which he was borne. There was never a better Citizen, nor more affected to the welfare and quietnesse of his cuntry, nor a sharper enemie of the changes, innovations, newfangles, and hurly-burles of his time: He would more willingly have imployed the utmost of his endeavours to extinguish and suppress, than to favour or further them: His minde was modelled to the patterne of other best ages. But yet in exchange of his serious treatise, I will here set you downe another, more pithie, materiall, and of more consequence, by him likewise produced in that tender age.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

## THE TWENTY-EIGHTH CHAPTER

Nine and twentie Sonnets of Steven de la  
Boetie, to the Lady of Grammont,  
Countesse of Guissen.



ADAME, I present you with nothing that is mine, either because it is already yours, or because I finde nothing therein worthy of you. But wheresoever these verses shall be seene, for the honour which thereby shall redound to them, by having this glorious Corisanda of Andoins for their guide, I thought it good to adorne them with your worthy name. I have deemed this present fit for your Ladiship, forsomuch as there are few Ladies in France, that either can better judge of Poesie, or fitter apply the use of it, than your worthy selfe: and since in these her drooping daies, none can give it more life, or vigorous spirit, than you, by those rich and high-tuned accords, wherewith amongst a million of other rare beauties, nature hath richly graced you. Madame, these verses deserve to be cherished by you: and I am perswaded you will be of mine opinion, which is, that none have come out of Gaskonie, that either had more wit, or better invention, and that witnesse to have proceeded from a richer veine. And let no jealousie possesse you, inasmuch as you have but the remainder of that, which whilome I caused to be printed under the name of my Lord of Foix, your worthy, noble and deare kinsman: For truly, these have a kinde of livenessse, and more piercing Emphasis than any other, and which I cannot well expresse: as hee that made them in his Aprils youth, and when he was enflamed with a noble glorious flame, as I will one day tell your honour in your eare. The other were afterward made by him in favour of his wife, at what time he wooed and solicited her for marriage, and began to feele I wot not what martiall-chilnesse, and husbands-coldnesse. And I am one

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXVIII  
Nine and  
twentie Son-  
nets of Steven  
de la Boetie

of those, whose opinion is, that divine Poesie doth no where  
fadge so well, and so effectually applaudeth, as in a youth-  
full, wanton, and unbridled subject. The above mentioned  
nine and twentie Sonnets of Boetie, and that in the former  
impressions of this booke were here set downe, have  
since beene printed with his other works.

## THE TWENTY-NINTH CHAPTER

### Of Moderation.



IF our sense of feeling were infected, wee  
corrupt by our touching, things that in  
themselves are faire and good. We may  
so seize on vertue, that if we embrace it  
with an over-greedy and violent desire,  
it may become vitious. Those who say,  
'There is never excesse in vertue, because  
'it is no longer vertue if any excesse be in  
'it,' doe but jest at words.

HOR. i. *Epist.*  
vi. 15.

*Insani sapiens nomen ferat, æquus iniqui,  
Vltra quàm satis est, virtutem si petat ipsam.*

A wise man mad, just unjust, may I name,  
More than is meet, ev'n vertue if he claime.

Philosophy is a subtile consideration. A man may love  
vertue too much, and excessively demeane himselfe in a good  
action. Gods holy word doth apply it selfe to this byase:  
'Be not wiser than you should, and be soberly wise.' I have  
seene some great men, blemish the reputation of their religion,  
by shewing themselves religious beyond the example of men  
of their qualitie. I love temperate and indifferent natures.  
Immoderation towards good, if it offend me not, it amazeth,  
and troubleth me how I should call it. Neither Pausanias  
his mother, who gave the first instruction, and for her sonnes  
death brought the first stone: Nor Posthumius the Dictator,  
that brought his owne sonne to his end, whom the heat and  
forwardnesse of youth, had haply before his ranke, made to  
charge his enemies, seeme so just as strange unto me. And



# THE FIRST BOOKE

I neither love to perswade or follow so savage and so deare a vertue. The Archer that overshoots his marke, doth no otherwise than he that shooteth short. Mine eies trouble me as much in climbing up toward a great light, as to goe downe in the darke. Callicles in Plato saith, The extremitie of Philosophy to bee hurtfull: and perswades no man to wade further into it, than the bounds of profit: And that taken with moderation, it is pleasant and commodius, but in the end it makes a man wilde and vicious, disdainfull of religion and of common lawes: an enemy of civill conversation: a foe to humane sensualitie, and worldly pleasures: incapable of all politike administration; and unfit to assist others or to helpe himselfe: apt to be without revenge buffeted, and baffled. He saith true: for in her excesse, she enthralleth our naturall libertie, and by an importunate wile, diverts us from the faire and plaine path, which nature traceth out for us. The love we beare to women, is very lawfull; yet doth Divinitie bridle and restraints the same. I remember to have read in Saint Thomas, in a place where he condemneth marriages of kinsfolkes in forbidden degrees, this one reason amongst others: that the love a man beareth to such a woman may be immoderate; for, if the wedlocke, or husband-like affection be sound and perfect, as it ought to be, and also surcharged with that a man oweth to alliance and kindred, there is no doubt, but that surcrease may easily transport a husband beyond the bounds of reason. Those Sciences that direct the manners of men, as Divinitie and Philosophy, meddleth with all things. There is no action so private and secret may be concealed from their knowledge and jurisdiction. Well doe they learne that search and censure their libertie. It is women communicate their parts as much as a man list to wantonize with them: but to phisicke them bashfulnesse forbids them. I will then in their behalfe teach husbands this, if there be any too much flesht upon them: which is, that the verie pleasures they have by the familiaritie of their wives, except moderately used; they are reprov'd: and not only in that, but in any other unlawfull subjects, a man may trespasse in licentiousnesse, and offend in excesse. Those shamelesse endearings, which the first heat suggests unto us in that sportfull delight,

CHAPTER  
XXIX  
Of Moderation

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

### CHAPTER XXIX Of Modera- tion

are not only undecently, but hurtfully employed towards our wives. Let them at least learne impudencie from another hand. They are ever broad-waking when wee need them. I have used no meanes but naturall and simple instruction. Marriage is a religious and devout bond: and that is the reason the pleasure a man hath of it, should be a moderate, staid and serious pleasure, and mixed with severitie, it ought to bee a voluptuousnesse somewhat circumspect and conscientious. And because it is the chieftest of generation, there are that make a question, whether it be lawfull to require them of copulation, as well when we have no hope of children, as when they are over-aged, or big with childe. It is an homicide, according to Plato. Certaine nations (and amongst others, the Mahometane) abhorre Conjunction with women great with childe. Many also with those that have their monethly disease. Zenobia received her husband but for one charge; which done, all the time of her conception, she let him goe at random, and that past, she gave him leave to begin againe: a notable and generous example of marriage.

Plato borroweth the narration (of some needy and hunger-starven Poet) of this sport. That Jupiter one day gave his wife so hot a charge, impatient to stay till she came to bed, hee laid her along upon the floore, and by the vehemence of his pleasure forgot the urgent and weighty resolutions lately concluded upon with the other gods of his cælestiall court; boasting he found it as sweet at that time, as he had done, when first he spoiled her of her virginitie, by stealth and unknowne to their parents. The Kings of Persia, called for their wives, when they went to any solemne feast, but when much drinking and wine began to heat them in good earnest, they sent them to their chambers, seeing they could no longer refrain, but must needs yeeld to sensualitie, lest they should be partakers of their immoderate lust; and in their stead sent for other women, whom this duty of respect might not concerne. All pleasures and gratifications are not well placed in all sorts of people. Epaminondas had caused a dissolute young man to be imprisoned: Pelopidas intreated him, that for his sake he would set him at libertie, but he refused him, and yeelded to free him at the request of an harlot of his, which likewise sued for his enlargement; say-

# THE FIRST BOOKE

ing, it was a gratification due unto a Courtizan, and not to a Captaine. Sophocles being partner with Pericles in the Pretorship, seeing by chance a faire boy to passe by: 'Oh what a beauteous boy goeth yonder!' said he to Pericles: 'That speech were more fitting another than a Pretor,' answered Pericles, 'who ought not only to have chaste hands, but also unpolluted eies.' Ælius Verus the Emperour, his wife complaining that he followed the love of other women, answered 'he did it for conscience sake, for so much as marriage was a name of honour, and dignity, and not of foolish and lascivious lust.' And our Ecclesiasticall Historie, hath with honour preserved the memorie of that wife, which sued to be divorced from her husband, because she would not second and consent to his over-insolent and lewde embracements. To conclude, there is no voluptuousnesse so just, wherein excesse and intemperance is not reprochfull unto us. But to speake in good sooth, is not a man a miserable creature? He is scarce come to his owne strength by his naturall condition, to taste one only compleate, entire and pure pleasure, but he laboreth by discourse to cut it off: he is not wretched enough, except by art and study he augment his miserie.

CHAPTER  
XXIX  
Of Modera-  
tion

*Fortunæ miseras auximus arte vias.*

Fortunes unhappie ill,  
We amplifie by skill.

PROPERT. iii.  
*El.* vii. 32.

Humane wisdom doth foolishly seeke to be ingenious in exercising her selfe to abate the number, and diminish the pleasure of sensualities, that pertaine to us: as it doth favorably and industriously in employing her devises, to paint and set a luster on evils, before our eies, and therewith to recreate our sense. Had I beene chiefe of a faction, I would have followed a more naturall course, which to say true, is both commodious and sacred, and should peradventure have made my selfe strong enough to limite the same. Although our spirituall and corporall Physitians: as by covenant agreed upon betweene them, finde no way of recoverie, nor remedies for diseases of body and minde, but by torment, griefe and paine, watching, fasting, haire-shirts, farre and solitarie exile, perpetuall prison, rodde and other

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XXIX Of Modera- tion

afflictions, have therefore beene invented : But so, that they be truly afflictions, and that there be some stinging sharpnesse in them : And that the successe be not as Gallios was, who having beene confined to the ile of Lesbos, newes came to Rome, that there he lived a merry life ; and what the Senate had laid upon him for a punishment, redounded to his commodity : whereupon they agreed to revoke him home to his owne house and wife, strictly enjoyning him to keepe the same, thereby to accommodate their punishment to his sense and feeling. For he to whom fasting should procure health and a merrie heart, or he to whom poison should be more healthy than meat, it would be no longer a wholesome receipt, no more than drugs in other medicines, are of no effect to him that takes them with appetite and pleasure. Bitternesse and difficultie are circumstances fitting their operation. That nature which should take Reubarbe as familiar, should no doubt corrupt the use of it ; it must be a thing that hurts the stomacke, if it shal cure it : and here the common rule failes, that infirmities are cured by their contraries : for one ill cureth another. This impression hath some reference to this other so ancient, where some thinke they gratifie both heaven and earth by killing and massacring themselves, which was universally embraced in all religions. Even in our fathers age ; Amurath at the taking of Isthmus, sacrificed six hundred young Græcians to his fathers soule : to the end their bloud might serve as a propitiation to expiate the sinnes of the deceased. And in the new countries discovered in our days yet uncorrupted, and virgins, in regard of ours, it is a custome well nigh received everie where. All their idolles are sprinkled with humane bloud, not without divers examples of horrible crueltie. Some are burnt alive, and halfe roasted drawne from the fire, that so they may pull out their hearts and entrails ; othersome, yea women are fleade quicke, and with their yet-bleeding skins, they invest and cover others. And no lesse of examples of constant resolution. For these wretched sacrificable people, old men, women and children, some daies before, goe themselves begging their almes, for the offering of their sacrifice, and all of full glee, singing, and dancing with the rest, they present themselves to the slaughter. The Ambassadors of the



# THE FIRST BOOKE

Kings of Mexico, in declaring and magnifying the greatnesse of their Master to Fernando Cortez, after they had told him, that he had thirtie vassals, whereof each one was able to levie a hundred thousand combatants, and that he had his residence in the fairest and strongest Citie under heaven, added moreover, that he had fiftie thousand to sacrifice for every yeare: verily some affirme that they maintaine continuall warres with certaine mightie neighbouring Nations, not so much for the exercise and training of their youth, as that they may have store of prisoners taken in warre to supply their sacrifices. In another province, to welcome the said Cortez, they sacrificed fiftie men at one clap. I will tell this one storie more: Some of those people having beene beaten by him, sent to know him, and to intreat him of friendship. The messengers presented him with three kinds of presents, in this manner: ‘Lord, if thou be a fierce God, that lovest  
‘to feed on flesh and bloud, here are five slaves, eat them,  
‘and we will bring thee more: if thou be a gently mild  
‘God, here is incense and feathers; but if thou be a  
‘man, take these birds and fruits, that here we  
‘present and offer unto thee.’

CHAPTER  
XXIX  
Of Modera-  
tion

## THE THIRTIETH CHAPTER

### Of the Caniballes.



At what time King Pirrhus came into Italie, after he had survaid the marshalling of the Armie, which the Romans sent against him: ‘I wot not,’ said he, ‘what barbarous men these are’ (for so were the Græcians wont to call all strange nations) ‘but the disposition of this Armie, which I see, is nothing barbarous.’ So said the Græcians of that which Flaminius sent into their countrie: And Philip viewing from a Tower the order and distribution of the Romane camp, in his kingdome under Publius Sulpitius Galba. Loe how a man ought to take heed, lest he over-weeningly follow vulgar opinions, which



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XXX  
Of the Caniballes

should be measured by the rule of reason, and not by the common report. I have had long time dwelling with me a man, who for the space of ten or twelve yeares had dwelt in that other world, which in our age was lately discovered in those parts where Villegaignon first landed, and surnamed Antartike France. This discoverie of so infinit and vast a countrie, seemeth worthy great consideration. I wot not whether I can warrant my selfe, that some other be not discovered hereafter, sithence so many worthy men, and better learned than we are, have so many ages beene deceived in this. I feare me our eies be greater than our bellies, and that we have more curiositie than capacitie. We embrace all, but we fasten nothing but wind. Plato maketh Solon to report, that he had learn't of the Priests of the cite of Says in Ægypt, that whilom, and before the generall Deluge, there was a great Iland called Atlantis, situated at the mouth of the strait of Gibraltar, which contained more firme land than Affrike and Asia together. And that the Kings of that countrie, who did not only possesse that Iland, but had so farre entred into the maine land, that of the bredth of Affrike, they held as farre as Ægypt; and of Europes length, as farre as Tuscanie: and that they undertooke to invade Asia, and to subdue all the nations that compasse the Mediterranean Sea, to the gulfe of Mare-Maggiore, and to that end they traversed all Spaine, France, and Italie, so farre as Grece, where the Athenians made head against them; but that a while after, both the Athenians themselves, and that great Iland, were swallowed up by the Deluge. It is verie likely this extreme ruine of waters wrought strange alterations in the habitations of the earth: as some hold that the Sea hath divided Sicilie from Italie,

VIRG. *Aen.* iii.  
414, 416.

*Hæc loca vi quondam, et vasta convulsa ruina  
Dissiluisse ferunt, cum protinus utraque tellus  
Vna foret.*

Men say, sometimes this land by that forsaken,  
And that by this, were split, and ruine-shaken,  
Whereas till then both lands as one were taken.

Cypres from Soria, the Iland of Negroponte from the maine land of Beotia, and in other places joyned lands that were

# THE FIRST BOOKE

sundred by the Sea, filling with mud and sand the chanel betweene them. CHAPTER

XXX

Of the Caniballes

HOR. Art. Poet.

65.

—*sterilisque diu palus aptaque remis*

*Vicinas urbes alit, et grave sentit aratrum.*

The fenne long barren, to be row'd in, now

Both feeds the neighbour townes, and feesles the plow.

But there is no great apparence, the said Iland should be the new world we have lately discovered; for, it well-nigh touched Spaine, and it were an incredible effect of inundation, to have removed the same more than twelve hundred leagues, as we see it is. Besides, our moderne Navigations have now almost discovered, that it is not an Iland, but rather firme land, and a continent, with the East Indias on one side, and the countries lying under the two Poles on the other; from which if it be divided, it is with so narrow a strait, and intervall, that it no way deserveth to be named an Iland: For, it seemeth there are certaine motions in these vast bodies, some naturall, and other some febricitant, as well as in ours. When I consider the impression my river of Dordogne worketh in my time, toward the right shoare of her descent and how much it hath gained in twentie yeares, and how many foundations of divers houses it hath overwhelmed and violently caried away; I confesse it to be an extraordinarie agitation: for, should it alwaies keepe one course, or had it ever kept the same, the figure of the world had ere this beene overthrowne: But they are subject to changes and alterations. Sometimes they overflow and spread themselves on one side, sometimes on another; and other times they containe themselves in their naturall beds or chanelles. I speak not of sudden inundations, whereof we now treat the causes. In Medoc amongst the Sea-coast, my brother the Lord of Arsacke, may see a towne of his buried under the sands, which the Sea casteth up before it: The tops of some buildings are yet to be discerned. His Rents and Demaines have beene changed into barren pastures. The inhabitants thereabouts affirme, that some yeares since, the Sea encrocheth so much upon them, that they have lost foure leagues of firme land: These sands are her fore-runners. And we see great hillocks of gravell moving, which march

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXX  
Of the Cani-  
balles

halfe a league before it, and usurpe on the firme land. The other testimonie of antiquitie, to which some will referre this discoverie, is in Aristotle (if at least that little booke of unheard of wonders be his) where he reporteth that certaine Carthaginians having failed athwart the Atlantike Sea, without the strait of Gibraltar, after long time, they at last discovered a great fertill Iland, all replenished with goodly woods, and watred with great and deepe rivers, farre distant from al land, and that both they and others, allured by the goodnes and fertility of the soile, went thither with their wives, children, and houshold, and there began to inhabit and settle themselves. The Lords of Carthage seeing their countrie by little and little to be dispeopled, made a law and expresse inhibition, that upon paine of death no more men should goe thither, and banished all that were gone thither to dwell, fearing (as they said) that in successe of time, they would so multiply as they might one day supplant them, and overthrow their owne estate. This narration of Aristotle hath no reference unto our new found countries. This servant I had, was a simple and rough-hewen fellow : a condition fit to yeeld a true testimonie. For, subtile people may indeed marke more curiously, and observe things more exactly, but they amplifie and glose them : and the better to perswade, and make their interpretations of more validitie, they cannot chuse but somewhat alter the storie. They never represent things truly, but fashion and maske them according to the visage they saw them in ; and to purchase credit to their judgement, and draw you on to beleieve them, they commonly adorne, enlarge, yea, and Hyperbolize the matter. Wherein is required either a most sincere Reporter, or a man so simple, that he may have no invention to build upon, and to give a true likelihood unto false devices, and be not wedded to his owne will. Such a one was my man ; who besides his owne report, hath many times shewed me divers Mariners, and Merchants, whom hee had knowne in that voyage. So am I pleased with his information, that I never enquire what Cosmographers say of it. We had need of Topographers to make us particular narrations of the places they have beene in. For some of them, if they have the advantage of us, that they have seene Palestine,

# THE FIRST BOOKE

will challenge a privilege, to tell us newes of all the world besides. I would have everie man write what he knowes, and no more: not only in that, but in all other subjects. For one may have particular knowledge of the nature of one river, and experience of the qualitie of one fountaine, that in other things knowes no more than another man: who nevertheless to publish this little scantling, will undertake to write of all the Physickes. From which vice proceed divers great inconveniences. Now (to returne to my purpose) I finde (as farre as I have beene informed) there is nothing in that nation, that is either barbarous or savage, unlesse men call that barbarisme which is not common to them. As indeed, we have no other ayme of truth and reason, than the example and Idea of the opinions and customes of the countrie we live in. There is ever perfect religion, perfect policie, perfect and compleat use of all things. They are even savage, as we call those fruits wilde, which nature of her selfe, and of her ordinarie progresse hath produced: whereas indeed, they are those which our selves have altered by our artificiall devices, and diverted from their common order, we should rather terme savage. In those are the true and most profitable vertues, and naturall properties most lively and vigorous, which in these we have bastardized, applying them to the pleasure of our corrupted taste. And if notwithstanding, in divers fruits of those countries that were never tilled, we shall finde, that in respect of ours they are most excellent, and as delicate unto our taste; there is no reason, art should gaine the point of honour of our great and puissant mother Nature. We have so much by our inventions surcharged the beauties and riches of her workes, that we have altogether overchoaked her: yet where ever her puritie shineth, she makes our vaine and frivolous enterprises wonderfully ashamed.

CHAPTER  
XXX  
Of the Caniballes

*Et veniunt hederæ sponte sua melius,  
Surgit et in solis formosior arbutus antris,  
Et volucres nulla dulcius arte canunt.*

PROPERT. i.  
El. ii. 10.

Ivies spring better of their owne accord,  
Unhanted plots much fairer trees afford.  
Birds by no art much sweeter notes record.



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXX  
Of the Cani-  
balles

All our endeavour or wit, cannot so much as reach to represent the nest of the least birdlet, it's contexture, beautie, profit and use, no nor the web of a seely spider. 'All things' (saith Plato) 'are produced, either by nature, by fortune, or by art. The greatest and fairest by one or other of the two first, the least and imperfect by the last.' Those nations seeme therefore so barbarous unto me, because they have received very little fashion from humane wit, and are yet neere their originall naturalitie. The lawes of nature doe yet command them, which are but little bastardized by ours, and that with such puritie, as I am sometimes grieved the knowledge of it came no sooner to light, at what time there were men, that better than we could have judged of it. I am sorie, Lyncurgus and Plato had it not: for me seemeth that what in those nations we see by experience, doth not only exceed all the pictures wherewith licentious Poesie hath proudly imbellished the golden age, and all her quaint inventions to faine a happy condition of man, but also the conception and desire of Philosophy. They could not imagine a genuitie so pure and simple, as we see it by experience; nor ever beleve our societie might be maintained with so little art and humane combination. It is a nation, would I answer Plato, that hath no kinde of traffike, no knowledge of Letters, no intelligence of numbers, no name of magistrate, nor of politike superioritie; no use of service, of riches or of povertie; no contracts, no successions, no partitions, no occupation but idle; no respect of kindred, but common, no apparell but naturall, no manuring of lands, no use of wine, corne, or mettle. The very words that import lying, falshood, treason, dissimulations, covetousnes, envie, detraction, and pardon, were never heard of amongst them. How dissonant would hee finde his imaginarie common-wealth from this perfection?

*Hos natura modos primùm dedit.*

Nature at first uprise,  
These manners did devise.

Furthermore, they live in a country of so exceeding pleasant and temperate situation, that as my testimonies have told me, it is verie rare to see a sicke body amongst



# THE FIRST BOOKE

them; and they have further assured me they never saw any man there, either shaking with the palsie, toothlesse, with eies dropping, or crooked and stooping through age. They are seated amongst the sea-coast, encompassed toward the land with huge and steepe mountaines, having betweene both, a hundred leagues or thereabout of open and champaigne ground. They have great abundance of fish and flesh, that have no resemblance at all with ours, and eat them without any sawces, or skill of Cookerie, but plaine boiled or broiled. The first man that brought a horse thither, although he had in many other voyages conversed with them, bred so great a horror in the land, that before they could take notice of him, they slew him with arrowes. Their buildings are very long, and able to containe two or three hundred soules, covered with barkes of great trees, fastned in the ground at one end, enterlaced and joyned close together by the tops, after the manner of some of our Granges; the covering whereof hangs downe to the ground, and steadeth them as a flanke. They have a kinde of wood so hard, that rying and cleaving the same, they make blades, swords, and grid-irons to broile their meat with. Their beds are of a kinde of cotten cloth, fastned to the house-roofe, as our ship-cabbanes: everie one hath his severall cowch; for the women lie from their husbands. They rise with the Sunne, and feed for all day, as soone as they are up: and make no more meales after that. They drinke not at meat, as Suidas reporteth of some other people of the East, which dranke after meales, but drinke many times a day, and are much given to pledge carowses. Their drinke is made of a certaine root, and of the colour of our Claret wines, which lasteth but two or three daies; they drinke it warme: It hath somewhat a sharpe taste, wholsome for the stomack, nothing heady, but laxative for such as are not used unto it, yet verie pleasing to such as are accustomed unto it. In stead of bread, they use a certaine white composition, like unto Corianders confected. I have eaten some, the taste wherof is somewhat sweet and wallowish. They spend the whole day in dancing. Their young men goe a hunting after wilde beasts with bowes and arrowes. Their women busie themselves therewhil'st with warming of their

CHAPTER  
XXX  
Of the Caniballes

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXX  
Of the Cani-  
balles

drinke, which is their chiefeſt office. Some of their old men, in the morning before they goe to eating, preach in common to all the houſhold, walking from one end of the houſe to the other, repeating one ſelfe ſame ſentence many times, till he have ended his turne (for their buildings are a hundred paces in length) he commendeth but two things unto his auditories, Firſt, valour againſt their enemies, then lovingneſſe unto their wives. They never miſſe (for their reſtraint) to put men in minde of this dutie, that it is their wives which keepe their drinke luke-warmed and well-seasoned. The forme of their beds, cords, ſwords, blades, and wooden bracelets, wherewith they cover their hand wiſts, when they fight, and great Canes open at one end, by the ſound of which they keepe time and cadence in their dancing, are in many places to be ſeene, and namely in mine owne houſe. They are ſhaven all over, much more cloſe and cleaner than wee are, with no other Razors than of wood or ſtone. They beleve their ſoules to be eternall, and thoſe that have deſerved well of their Gods, to be placed in that part of heaven where the Sunne riſeth, and the curſed toward the Weſt in oppoſition. They have certaine Prophets and Priests, which commonly abide in the mountaines, and very ſeldome ſhew themſelves unto the people; but when they come downe, there is a great feaſt prepared, and a ſolemne aſſembly of manie townſhips together (each Grange as I have deſcribed maketh a village, and they are about a French league one from another). The Prophet ſpeaketh to the people in publike, exhorting them to embrace vertue, and follow their dutie. All their morall diſcipline containeth but theſe two articles; firſt and undiſmaied reſolution to warre, then an inviolable affection to their wives. Hee doth alſo Prognosticate of things to come, and what ſucceſſe they ſhall hope for in their enterpriſes: hee either perſwadeth or diſſwadeth them from warre; but if he chance to miſſe of his divination, and that it ſucceed otherwiſe than hee foretold them, if hee be taken, he is hewen in a thouſand peeces, and condemned for a falſe Prophet. And therefore he that hath once miſreckoned himſelfe is never ſeene againe. Divination is the gift of God; the abuſing whereof ſhould be a puniſhable impoſture. When the Divines amongſt the

# THE FIRST BOOKE

Scythians had foretold an untruth, they were couched along upon hurdles full of heath or brushwood, drawne by oxen, and so maniced hand and foot, burned to death. Those which manage matters subject to the conduct of mans sufficiencie, are excusable, although they shew the utmost of their skill. But those that gull and conicatch us with the assurance of an extraordinarie facultie, and which is beyond our knowledge, ought to be double punished ; first because they performe not the effect of their promise, then for the rashnesse of their imposture and unadvisednesse of their fraud. They warre against the nations, that lie beyond their mountaines, to which they go naked, having no other weapons than bowes, or woodden swords, sharpe at one end, as our broaches are. It is an admirable thing to see the constant resolution of their combats, which never end but by effusion of blood and murther : for they know not what feare or rowts are. Every Victor brings home the head of the enemy he hath slaine as a Trophey of his victorie, and fastneth the same at the entrance of his dwelling place. After they have long time used and entreated their prisoners well, and with all commodities they can devise, he that is the Master of them ; summoning a great assembly of his acquaintance ; tieth a corde to one of the prisoners armes, by the end whereof he holds him fast, with some distance from him, for feare he might offend him, and giveth the other arme, bound in like manner, to the dearest friend he hath, and both in the presence of all the assembly kill him with swords : which done, they roast, and then eat him in common, and send some slices of him to such of their friends as are absent. It is not as some imagine, to nourish themselves with it, (as anciently the Scythians wont to doe,) but to represent an extreme, and inexpiable revenge. Which we prove thus ; some of them perceiving the Portugales, who had confederated themselves with their adversaries, to use another kinde of death, when they tooke them prisoners ; which was, to burie them up to the middle, and against the upper part of the body to shoot arrowes, and then being almost dead, to hang them up ; they supposed, that these people of the other world (as they who had sowed the knowledge of many vices amongst their neighbours, and were

CHAPTER  
XXX  
Of the Caniballes

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXX  
Of the Cani-  
balles

much more cunning in all kindes of evils and mischiefe than they) under-tooke not this manner of revenge without cause, and that consequently it was more smartfull, and cruell than theirs, and thereupon began to leave their old fashion to follow this. I am not sorie we note the barbarous horror of such an action, but grieved, that prying so narrowly into their faults we are so blinded in ours. I thinke there is more barbarisme in eating men alive, than to feed upon them being dead; to mangle by tortures and torments a body full of lively sense, to roast him in peeces, to make dogges and swine to gnaw and teare him in mammockes (as wee have not only read, but seene very lately, yea and in our owne memorie, not amongst ancient enemies, but our neighbours and fellow-citizens; and which is worse, under pretence of pietie and religion) than to roast and eat him after he is dead. Chrysippus and Zeno, arch-pillers of the Stoicke sect, have supposed that it was no hurt at all, in time of need, and to what end soever, to make use of our carrion bodies, and to feed upon them, as did our forefathers, who being besieged by Cæsar in the Citie of Alexia, resolved to sustaine the famine of the siege, with the bodies of old men, women, and other persons unserviceable and unfit to fight.

IUV. Sat. xv.  
93.

*Vascones (fama est) alimentis talibus usi  
Produxere animas.*

Gascoynes (as fame reports)  
Liv'd with meats of such sorts.

And Physitians feare not, in all kindes of compositions availefull to our health, to make use of it, be it for outward or inward applications: But there was never any opinion found so unnaturall and immodest, that would excuse treason, treacherie, disloyaltie, tyrannie, crueltie, and such like, which are our ordinarie faults. We may then well call them barbarous, in regard of reasons rules, but not in respect of us that exceed them in all kinde of barbarisme. Their warres are noble and generous, and have as much excuse and beautie, as this humane infirmitie may admit: they ayme at nought so much, and have no other foundation amongst them, but the meere jealousie of vertue. They contend not for the gaining of new lands; for to this day they yet enjoy that



# THE FIRST BOOKE

CHAPTER  
XXX  
Of the Cani-  
balles

naturall ubertie and fruitfulnessse, which without labouring toyle, doth in such plenteous abundance furnish them with all necessary things, that they need not enlarge their limits. They are yet in that happy estate, as they desire no more, than what their naturall necessities direct them: whatsoever is beyond it, is to them superfluous. Those that are much about one age, doe generally enter-call one another brethren, and such as are younger, they call children, and the aged are esteemed as fathers to all the rest. These leave this full possession of goods in common, and without division to their heires, without other claime or title, but that which nature doth plainely impart unto all creatures, even as shee brings them into the world. If their neighbours chance to come over the mountaines to assaile or invade them, and that they get the victorie over them, the Victors conquest is glorie, and the advantage to be and remaine superior in valour and vertue: else have they nothing to doe with the goods and spoyles of the vanquished, and so returne into their countrie, where they neither want any necessarie thing, nor lacke this great portion, to know how to enjoy their condition happily, and are contented with what nature affoordeth them. So doe these when their turne commeth. They require no other ransome of their prisoners, but an acknowledgement and confession that they are vanquished. And in a whole age, a man shall not finde one, that doth not rather embrace death, than either by word or countenance remissely to yeeld one jot of an invincible courage. There is none seene that would not rather be slaine and devoured, than sue for life, or shew any feare: They use their prisoners with all libertie, that they may so much the more hold their lives deare and precious, and commonly entertaine them with threats of future death, with the torments they shall endure, with the preparations intended for that purpose, with mangling and slicing of their members, and with the feast that shall be kept at their charge. All which is done, to wrest some remisse, and exact some faint-yeelding speech of submission from them, or to possesse them with a desire to escape or run away; that so they may have the advantage to have danted and made them afraid, and to have forced their constancie. For certainly true victorie consisteth in that only point.



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER CLAUD. vi.  
XXX Cons. Hon.  
Of the Canibales Paneg. 245.

—*Victoria nulla est*  
*Quàm quæ confessos animo quoque subjugat hostes.*

No conquest such, as to suppress  
Foes hearts, the conquest to confesse.

The Hungarians, a most warre-like nation, were whilome wont to pursue their prey no longer than they had forced their enemy to yeeld unto their mercie. For, having wrested this confession from him, they set him at libertie without offence or ransome, except it were to make him sweare, never after to beare armes against them. Wee get many advantages of our enemies, that are but borrowed and not ours: It is the qualitie of porterly-rascall, and not of vertue, to have stronger armes, and sturdier legs; Disposition is a dead and corporall qualitie. It is a trick of fortune to make our enemy stoope, and to bleare his eyes with the Sunnes-light: It is a pranke of skill and knowledge to be cunning in the art of fencing, and which may happen unto a base and worthlesse man. The reputation and worth of a man consisteth in his heart and will: therein consists true honour: Constancie is valour, not of armes and legs, but of minde and courage? it consisteth not in the spirit and courage of our horse, nor of our armes, but in ours. He that obstinately faileth in his courage, *Si succiderit, de genu pugnât*, ‘If hee slip or fall, he fights upon his knee.’ He that in danger of imminent death, is no whit danted in his assurednesse; he that in yeelding up his ghost beholding his enemy with a scornewfull and fierce looke, he is vanquished, not by us, but by fortune: he is slaine, but not conquered. The most valiant, are often the most unfortunate. So are there triumphant losses in envie of victories. Not those foure sister victories, the fairest that ever the Sunne beheld with his all-seeing eye, of Salamis, of Plateæ, of Micalæ, and of Sicilia, durst ever dare to oppose all their glorie together, to the glorie of the King Leonidas his discomfiture and of his men, at the passage of Thermopylæ: what man did ever run with so glorious an envie, or more ambitious desire to the goale of a combat, than Captaine Ischolas to an evident losse and overthrow? who so ingeniously or more politikelly did ever assure himselfe of his welfare, than he of his ruine?

# THE FIRST BOOKE

He was appointed to defend a certaine passage of Peloponesus against the Arcadians, which finding himselfe altogether unable to performe, seeing the nature of the place, and inequalitye of the forces, and resolving, that whatsoever should present it selfe unto his enemie, must necessarily be utterly defeated: On the other side, deeming it unworthy both his vertue and magnanimitie, and the Lacedemonian name, to faile or faint in his charge, betweene these two extremities he resolved upon a meane and indifferent course, which was this. The youngest and best disposed of his troupe, he reserved for the service and defence of their countrie, to which hee sent them backe; and with those whose losse was least, and who might best be spared, hee determined to maintaine that passage, and by their death to force the enemie, to purchase the entrance of it as deare as possibly he could; as indeed it followed. For being suddenly environed round by the Arcadians: After a great slaughter made of them, both himselfe and all his were put to the sword. Is any Trophey assigned for conquerours, that is not more duly due unto these conquered? A true conquest respecteth rather an undanted resolution, and honourable end, than a faire escape, and the honour of vertue doth more consist in combating than in beating. But to returne to our historie, these prisoners, howsoever they are dealt withall, are so farre from yeelding, that contrariwise during two or three moneths that they are kept, they ever carry a cheerefull countenance, and urge their keepers to hasten their triall, they outrageously defie, and injure them. They upbraid them with their cowardlinesse, and with the number of battels, they have lost againe theirs. I have a song made by a prisoner, wherein is this clause, Let them boldly come altogether, and focke in multitudes, to feed on him; for with him they shall feed upon their fathers, and grandfathers, that heretofore have served his body for food and nourishment: These muscles, (saith he) this flesh, and these veines, are your owne; fond men as you are, know you not that the substance of your forefathers limbes is yet tied unto ours? Taste them well, for in them shall you finde the relish of your owne flesh: An invention, that hath no shew of barbarisme. Those that paint them dying, and that represent this action, when

CHAPTER  
XXX  
Of the Caniballes

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXX  
Of the Cani-  
balles

they are put to execution, delineate the prisoners spitting in their executioners faces, and making mowes at them. Verily, so long as breath is in their body, they never cease to brave and defie them, both in speech and countenance. Surely, in respect of us these are very savage men: for either they must be so in good sooth, or we must be so indeed: There is a wondrous distance betweene their forme and ours. Their men have many wives, and by how much more they are reputed valiant, so much the greater is their number. The manner and beautie in their marriages is wondrous strange and remarkable: For, the same jealousie our wives have to keepe us from the love and affection of other women, the same have theirs to procure it. Being more carefull for their husbands honour and content, than of any thing else: They endeavour and apply all their industrie, to have as many rivals as possibly, they can, forasmuch as it is a testimonie of their husbands vertue. Our women would count it a wonder, but it is not so: It is vertue properly Matrimoniall; but of the highest kinde. And in the Bible, Lea, Rachell, Sara, and Iacobs wives, brought their fairest maiden servants unto their husbands beds. And Livia seconded the lustfull appetites of Augustus to her great prejudice. And Stratonica the wife of King Dejotarus did not only bring a most beauteous chamber-maide, that served her, to her husbands bed, but very carefully brought up the children he begot on her, and by all possible meanes aided and furthered them to succeed in their fathers roialtie. And least a man should thinke, that all this is done by a simple, and servile, or awe-full dutie unto their custome, and by the impression of their ancient customes authoritie, without discourse or judgement, and because they are so blockish, and dull spirited, that they can take no other resolution, it is not amisse, wee alleage some evidence of their sufficiencie. Besides what I have said of one of their warlike songs, I have another amorous canzonet, which beginneth in this sence: ‘Adder stay, stay ‘good adder, that my sister may by the patterne of thy ‘partie-coloured coat drawe the fashion and worke of a rich ‘lace, for me to give unto my love; so may thy beautie, thy ‘nimblenesse or disposition be ever preferred before all other ‘serpents.’ The first couplet is the burthen of the song. I

# THE FIRST BOOKE

am so conversant with Poesie, that I may judge, this invention hath no barbarisme at all in it, but is altogether Anacreontike. Their language is a kinde of pleasant speech, and hath a pleasing sound, and some affinitie with the Greeke terminations. Three of that nation, ignorant how deare the knowledge of our corruptions will one day cost their repose, securitie, and happinesse, and how their ruine shall proceed from this commerce, which I imagine is already well advanced, (miserable as they are to have suffered themselves to be so cosoned by a desire of new-fangled novelties, and to have quit the calmenesse of their climate, to come and see ours) were at Roane in the time of our late King Charles the ninth, who talked with them a great while. They were shewed our fashions, our pompe, and the forme of a faire Citie; afterward some demanded their advise, and would needs know of them what things of note and admirable they had observed amongst us: they answered three things, the last of which I have forgotten, and am very sorie for it, the other two I yet remember. They said, 'First, they found it 'very strange, that so many tall men with long beards, 'strong and well armed, as it were about the Kings person ' (it is very likely they meant the Switzers of his guard) 'would submit themselves to obey a beardlesse childe, and 'that we did not rather chuse one amongst them to command the rest.' Secondly (they have a manner of phrase whereby they call men but a moytie one of another.) 'They 'had perceived, there were men amongst us full gorged with 'all sortes of commodities, and others which hunger-starved, 'and bare with need and povertie, begged at their gates: 'and found it strange, these moyties so needy could endure 'such an injustice, and that they tooke not the others by 'the throte, or set fire on their houses.' I talked a good while with one of them, but I had so bad an interpreter, and who did so ill apprehend my meaning, and who through his foolishnesse was so troubled to conceive my imaginations, that I could draw no great matter from him. Touching that point, wherein I demanded of him, what good he received by the superioritie he had amongst his countriemen (for he was a Captaine and our Marriners called him King) he told me, it was to march formost in any charge of warre:

CHAPTER  
XXX  
Of the Caniballes



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER further, I asked him, how many men did follow him, hee  
XXX shewed me a distance of place, to signifie they were as many  
Of the Cani- as might be contained in so much ground, which I guessed  
balles to be about 4 or 5 thousand men: moreover I demanded,  
if when warres were ended, all his authoritie expired; he  
answered, that hee had only this left him, which was, that  
when he went on progresse, and visited the villages depend-  
ing of him, the inhabitants prepared paths and high-waies  
athwart the hedges of their woods, for him to passe  
through at ease. All that is not verie ill; but  
what of that? They weare no kinde of  
breeches nor hosen.

## THE THIRTY-FIRST CHAPTER

That a man ought soberly to meddle with judging  
of divine lawes.



THINGS unknowne are the true scope of  
imposture, and subject of Legerdemaine:  
forasmuch as strangenesse it selfe doth  
first give credit unto matters, and not  
being subject to our ordinarie discourses,  
they deprive us of meanes to withstand  
them. To this purpose, said Plato, 'it is  
'an easie matter to please, speaking of  
'the nature of the Gods, than of mens.' For the Auditors  
ignorance lends a faire and large carriere, and free libertie, to  
the handling of secret hidden matters. Whence it followeth,  
that nothing is so firmly beleaved, as that which a man  
knoweth least; nor are there people more assured in their  
reports, than such as tell us fables, as Alchumists, Prognosti-  
cators, Fortune-tellers, Palmesters, Physitians, *id genus omne*,  
'and such like.' To which, if I durst, I would joyne a rable  
of men, that are ordinarie interpreters and controulers of  
Gods secret desseignes, presuming to finde out the causes of  
every accident, and to prie into the secrets of Gods divine  
will, the incomprehensible motives of his works. And how-  
beit, the continuall varietie and discordance of events drive



# THE FIRST BOOKE

them from one corner to another, and from East to West, they will not leave to follow their bowle, and with one small pensill drawe both white and blacke. There is this commendable observance in a certaine Indian nation, who if they chance to be discomfited in any skirmish or battel, they publickly beg pardon of the Sunne, who is their God, as for an unjust action, referring their good or ill fortune to divine reason, submitting their judgement and discourses unto it. It suffiseth a Christian to beleieve, that all things come from God, to receive them from his divine and inscrutable wisdome with thanksgiving, and in what manner soever they are sent him, to take them in good part. But I utterly disallow a common custome amongst us, which is to ground and establish our religion upon the prosperitie of our enterprises. Our beleefe hath other sufficient foundations, and need not be authorized by events. For the people accustomed to these plausible arguments, and agreeing with his taste, when events sort contrarie and disadvantageous to their expectation, they are in hazard to waver in their faith: As in the civil warres, wherein we are now for religions sake, those which got the advantage, at the conflict of Rochelabeille, making great joy and bone-fires for that accident, and using that fortune, as an assured approbation of their faction: when afterward they come to excuse their disaster of Mont-contour and Iarnac, which are scourges and fatherly chastisements: if they have not a people wholly at their mercy, they will easily make him perceive, what it is to take two kinds of corne out of one sacke: and from one and the same mouth to blow both hot and cold. It were better to entertaine it with the true foundations of veritie. It was a notable Sea-battel, which was lately gained against the Turkes, under the conduct of Don John of Austria. But it hath pleased God to make us at other times both see and feele other such, to our no small losse and detriment. To conclude, it is no easie matter to reduce divine things unto our ballance, so they suffer no impeachment: And he that would yeeld a reason, why Arrius and Leo his Pope, chiefe Principals, and maine supporters of this heresie, died both at severall times, of so semblable and so strange deaths (for being forced through a violent belly-ach to goe from their

CHAPTER XXXI

That a man ought soberly to meddle with judging of divine lawes

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XXXI

That a man  
ought soberly  
to meddle  
with judging  
of divine  
lawes

disputations to their close-stoole, both suddenly yeelded up their ghosts on them) and exaggerate that divine vengeance by the circumstance of the place, might also adde the death of Heliogabalus unto it, who likewise was slaine upon a privie. But what? Ireneus is found to be engaged in like fortune: Gods intent being to teach us, that the good have some thing else to hope for, and the wicked somewhat else to feare, than the good or bad fortune of this world: He manageth and applieth them according to his secret disposition: and depriveth us of the meanes, thereby foolishly to make our profit. And those, that according to humane reason will thereby prevaile, doe but mocke themselves. They never give one touch of it, that they receive not two for it. S. Augustine giveth a notable triall of it upon his adversaries. It is a conflict, no more decided by the armes of memorie, than by the weapons of reason. A man should be satisfied with the light, which it pleaseth the Sunne to communicate unto us by vertue of his beames; and he that shall lift up his eies to take a greater within his body, let him not thinke it strange, if for a reward of his over-weening and arrogancie he loseth his sight. *Quis hominum potest scire consilium Dei? aut quis poterit cogitare, quid velit dominus?*

Wisd. ix. 13.

'Who amongst men can know Gods counsell, or  
'who can thinke what God will doe?'

## THE THIRTY-SECOND CHAPTER

To avoid voluptuousnesse in regard of life.



HAVE noted the greatest part of ancient opinions to agree in this: That when our life affords more evill than good, it is then time to die: and to preserve our life to our torment and incommoditie, is to spurre and shocke the very rules of nature: as say the old rules.

Gnom. Græc. θ.

ἢ ζῆν ἀλύπως ἢ θανεῖν εὐδαιμόνως.

Or live without distresse,  
Or die with happinesse.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

Καλὸν τὸ θνήσκειν οἷς ὕβριν τὸ ζῆν φέρει. *Gnom. Græc. θ.* CHAPTER XXXII

'Tis good for them to die,  
Whom life brings infamie.

Κρεῖσσον τὸ μὴ ζῆν ἐστίν, ἢ ζῆν ἀθλίως.

'Tis better not to live,  
Than wretchedly not thrive.

To avoid voluptuousnesse  
in regard  
of life

SOPH. STOB.  
*Serm.* 118.

But to drive off the contempt of death to such a degree, as to imploy it to distract, and remove himselfe from honours, riches, greatnesse, and other goods and favours, which wee call the goods of fortune: as if reason had not enough to doe, to perswade us to forgoe and leave them, without adding this new surcharge unto it, I had neither seene the same commanded nor practised untill such time as one place of Seneca came to my hands, wherein counselling Lucilius (a man mightie and in great authoritie about the Emperour) to change this voluptuous and pompous life, and to withdraw himselfe from this ambition of the world, to some solitarie, quiet and philosophical life: about which Lucilius alleaged some difficulties: 'My advice is' (saith he) 'that either thou leave and quit that life, or thy life altogether: But I perswade thee to follow the gentler way, and rather to untie than breake what thou hast so ill knit: alwaies provided thou breake it, if thou canst not otherwise untie the same.' There is no man so base minded, that loveth not rather to fall once, than ever to remaine in feare of falling. I should have deemed this counsell agreeing with the Stoickes rudenes: But it is more strange it should be borrowed of Epicurus, who to that purpose writeth this consonant unto Idomeneus. 'Yet thinke I to have noted some such like thing amongst our owne people, but with Christian moderation. Saint Hilarie Bishop of Poitiers, a famous enemy of the Arrian heresie, being in Syria, was advertised that Abra his only daughter whom hee had left at home with her mother, was by the greatest Lords of the countrie solicited and sued unto for marriage, as a damosell very well brought up, faire, rich, and in the prime of her age: he writ unto her (as we see) that she should remove her affections, from all the pleasures and advantages might be presented her: for, in his voyage he had found a greater and worthier match or husband of

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXXII  
To avoid vo-  
luptuousnesse  
in regard  
of life

‘ far higher power and magnificence, who should present and  
‘ endow her with roabes and jewels of unvaluable price.  
‘ His purpose was to make her lose the appetite and use of  
‘ worldly pleasures, and wholly to wed her unto God. To  
‘ which, deeming his daughters death the shortest and most  
‘ assured way, he never ceased by vowes, prayers, and orisons,  
‘ humbly to beseech God to take her out of this world, and  
‘ to call her to his mercie, as it came to passe; for shee  
‘ deceased soone after his returne: whereof he shewed manifest  
‘ tokens of singular gladnesse.’ This man seemeth to endeere  
himselfe above others, in that at first sight he addresseth  
himselfe to this meane, which they never embrace but sub-  
sidiarily, and sithence it is towards his only daughter. But  
I will omit the successe of this storie, although it be not to  
my purpose. Saint Hilaries wife, having understood by him,  
how her daughters death succeeded with his intent and will,  
and how much more happy it was for her to be dislodged from  
out this world, than still to abide therein, conceived so lively  
an apprehension of the eternall and heavenly blessednesse,  
that with importunate instancie she solicited her husband,  
to doe as much for her. And God, at their earnest entreatie,  
and joynt-common prayers, having soone after taken her  
unto himselfe: it was a death embraced with singular  
and mutuall contentment to both.

## THE THIRTY-THIRD CHAPTER

That fortune is oftentimes met withall in pursuit  
of reason.



HE inconstancie of Fortunes diverse waver-  
ing, is the cause shee should present us  
with all sorts of visages. Is there any  
action of justice more manifest that this?  
Cæsar Borgia Duke of Valentinois, having  
resolved to poison Adrian Cardinall of  
Cornetto, with whom Pope Alexander the  
sixth, his father and he were to sup that  
night in Vaticane, sent certaine bottles of empoysoned wine



# THE FIRST BOOKE

before, and gave his Butler great charge to have a special care of it. The Pope comming thither before his sonne, and calling for some drinke; the butler supposing the Wine had beene so carefully commended unto him for the goodnesse of it, immediately presented some unto the Pope, who whilst he was drinking, his sonne came in and never imagining his bottles had beene toucht, tooke the cup and pledged his father, so that the Pope died presently; and the sonne, after he had long time beene tormented with sicknesse, recovered to another worse fortune. It sometimes seemeth, that when we least think on her, shee is pleased to sport with us. The Lord of Estree, then guidon to the Lord of Vandosme, and the Lord of Liques, Lieutenant to the Duke of Ascot, both servants to the Lord of Fountaines sister, albeit of contrarie factions (as it hapneth among neighbouring bordurers) the Lord of Liques got her to wife: But even upon his wedding day, and which is worse, before his going to bed, the bridegroome desiring to breake a staffe in favour of his new Bride and Mistris, went out to skirmish neere to Saint Omer, where the Lord of Estree being the stronger tooke him prisoner, and to endear his advantage, the Lady her selfe was faine,

CHAPTER  
XXXIII  
That fortune  
is oftentimes  
met withall in  
pursuit of  
reason

*Conjugis ante coacta novi dimittere collum,  
Quam veniens una atque altera rursus hyems  
Noctibus in longis avidum saturasset amorem,*

CATUL. *Eleg.*  
iv. 81.

Her new feeres necke for't was she to forgoe,  
Ere winters one and two returning sloe,  
In long nights had ful-fil'd  
Her love so eager wil'd,

in courtesie, to sue unto him for the deliverie of his prisoner, which he granted; the French Nobilitie never refusing Ladies any kindnesse. Seemeth she not to be a right artist? Constantine the sonne of Helen founded the Empire of Constantinople, and so, many ages after, Constantine the sonne of Helen ended the same. She is sometimes pleased to envie our miracles: we hold an opinion, that King Clovis besieging Angoulesme, the wals by a divine favour fell of themselves. And Bouchet borroweth of some author, that King Robert beleagring a Citie, and having secretly stolne away from the siege to Orleans, there to solemnize the feasts of Saint Aignan, as he was in his earnest devotion, upon a certaine



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXXIII  
That fortune  
is oftentimes  
met withall in  
pursuit of  
reason

passage of the Masse, the walles of the towne besieged, without any batterie, fell flat to the ground. She did altogether contrarie in our warres of Millane: For, Capitaine Rense, beleagring the Citie of Eronna for us, and having caused a forcible mine to be wrought under a great curtine of the walles, by force whereof, it being violently flowne up from out the ground, did notwithstanding, whole and unbroken, fall so right into his foundation againe, that the besieged found no inconvenience at all by it. She sometimes playeth the Physitian. 'Iason Phereus being utterly forsaken of all Physitians, by reason of an impostume he had in his breast, and desirous to be rid of it, though it were by death, as one of the forlorne hope, rusht into a battel amongst the thickest throng of his enemies, where he was so rightly wounded acrosse the body, that his impostume brake, and he was cured. Did shee not exceed the Painter Protogenes in the skill of his trade? who having perfected the image of a wearie and panting dog, and in all parts over-tired, to his content, but being unable, as he desired, lively to represent the drivel or slaver of his mouth, vexed against his owne worke, took his sponge, and moist as it was with divers colours, threw it at the picture, with purpose to blot and deface all hee had done: fortune did so fitly and rightly carrie the same toward the dogs chaps, that there it perfectly finished, what his art could never attaine unto.' Doth she not sometimes addresse and correct our counsels? Isabell Queene of England, being to repasse from Zeland into her Kingdome with an armie, in favour of her sonne against her husband, had utterly beene cast away, had she come unto the Port intended, being there expected by her enemies: But fortune against her will, brought her to another place, where shee safely landed. And that ancient fellow, who hurling a stone at a dog, misst him, and therewithall hit and slew his stepdame, had she not reason to pronounce this verse,

*Ταυτόματον ἡμῶν καλλίω βουλεύεται.*

Chance of it selfe, than wee,  
Doth better say and see?

Fortune hath better advice than wee. Icetes had practised and suborned two souldiers to kill Timoleon, then

# THE FIRST BOOKE

residing at Adrane in Sicily. They appointed a time to doe, as he should be assisting at some sacrifice; and scattering themselves amongst the multitude, as they were winking one upon another, to shew how they had a verie fit opportunitie to doe the deed: Loe here a third man, that with a huge blow of a sword, striketh one of them over the head, and fells him dead to the ground and so runs away. His fellow supposing himselfe discovered and undone, runs to the altar, suing for sanctuarie, with promise to confesse the truth; Even as he was declaring the conspiracie, behold the third man, who had likewise beene taken, whom as a murtherer the people tugged and haled through the throng toward Timoleon and the chiefest of the assembly, where he humbly calleth for mercy, alleaging that he had justly murthered the murtherer of his father, whom his good chance was to finde there, averring by good witnesses, before them all, that in the Citie of the Leontines, his father had beene proditoriously slaine by him, on whom he had now revenged himselfe. In meede whereof, because he had beene so fortunate (in seeking to right his fathers untimely death) to save the common father of the Sicilians from so imminent a danger, he had ten Attike mines awarded him. This fortune in her directions exceedeth all the rules of humane wisdom. But to conclude, is not an expresse application of her favour, goodnesse, and singular pietie manifestly discovered in this action? Ignatius the Father and the Sonne, both banished by proscription by the Triumvirs of Rome, resolved on this generous act, to yeeld their lives one into anothers hands, and thereby frustrate the Tyrants cruelty. They furiously with their keene rapiers drawne, ran one against another: Fortune so directed their points, that each received his mortall stroke; adding to the honour of seld-seene an amity, that they had just so much strength left them, to draw their armed and bloody hands from out their goared wounds, in that plight, so fast to embrace, and so hard to claspe one another, that the hangmen were forced, at one stroke, and together, to cut off both their heads; leaving their bodies for ever tied in so honourable a knot, and their wounds so joynd, that they lovingly drew and suckt each others blood, breath, and life.

CHAPTER  
XXXIII  
That fortune  
is oftentimes  
met withall in  
pursuit of  
reason

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## THE THIRTY-FOURTH CHAPTER

Of a defect in our policies.



Y whilome-father, a man who had no helpe but from experience, and his owne nature, yet of an unspotted judgement, hath heretofore told me, that he much desired to bring in this custome, which is, that in all cities there should be a certaine appointed place, to which, whosoever should have need of any thing, might come and cause his businesse to be registred by some officer appointed for that purpose: As for example, if one have pearles to sell, he should say, I seeke to sell some pearls: and another, I seeke to buy some pearls: Such a man would faine have companie to travell to Paris; Such a one enquireth for a servant of this or that qualitie; Such a one seeketh for a Master; another a workman; Some this; some that; every man as he needed. And it seemeth that this meanes of enter-warning one another would bring no small commoditie unto common commerce and societie; For there are ever conditions that enter-seeke one another, and because they understand not one another, they leave men in great necessitie. I understand, to the infamous reproach of our age, that even in our sight, two most excellent men in knowledge, have miserably perished for want of food and other necessities: Lilius Gregorius Giraldus in Italy, and Sebastianus Castalio in Germanie: And I verily beleieve there are many thousands, who had they knowne or understood their wants, would either have sent for them, and with large stipends entertained them, or would have convaied them succour, where ever they had beene. The world is not so generally corrupted, but I know some, that would earnestly wish, and with harty affections desire, the goods which their forefathers have left them, might, so long as it shall please fortune they may enjoy them, be employed for the reliefe of rare, and supply of excellent mens necessitie, and such as for any kind of worth and vertue are remarkable; many of



# THE FIRST BOOKE

which are daily seene to be pursued by ill fortune even to the utmost extremitie, and that would take such order for them, as had they not their ease and content, it might only be imputed to their want of reason or lacke of discretion.

CHAPTER  
XXXIV  
Of a defect in  
our policies

In this Oeconomicke or houshold order my father had this order, which I can commend, but no way follow: which was, that besides the day-booke of houshold affaires, wherein are registred at least expences, paiments, gifts, bargains and sales, that require not a Notaries hand to them, which booke a receiver had the keeping of: he appointed another journall-booke to one of his servants, who was his clerke, wherein he should insert and orderly set downe all accidents worthy the noting, and day by day register the memories of the historie of his house: A thing very pleasant to read, when time began to weare out the remembrance of them, and fit for us to passe the time withall, and to resolve some doubts: when such a worke was begun, when ended, what way or course was taken, what accidents hapned, how long it continued; all our voyages, where, and how long we were from home; our marriages, who died, and when; the receiving of good or bad tidings, who came, who went, changing or removing of houshold officers, taking of new, or discharging of old servants, and such like matters. An ancient custome, and which I would have all men use and bring into fashion againe in their severall homes: and I repent my selfe, I have so foolishly neglected the same.

## THE THIRTY-FIFTH CHAPTER

Of the use of Apparell.

**W**HATSOEVER I ayme at, I must needs force some of customes contradictions, so carefully hath she barred all our entrances. I was devising in this chil-cold season, whether the fashion of these late discovered Nations to go naked, be a custome forced by the hot temperature of the ayre, as we say of the Indians and Moores, or whether it be an originall manner of mankind. Men of



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XXXV Of the use of Apparell understanding, forasmuch as whatsoever is contained under heaven (as saith the holy writ) is subject to the same lawes, are wont in such like considerations, where naturall lawes are to be distinguished from those invented by man, to have recourse to the generall policie of the world, where nothing that is counterfet can be admitted. Now all things being exactly furnished else-whence with all necessities to maintaine this being, it is not to be imagined that we alone should be produced in a defective and indigent estate, yea, and in such a one, as cannot be maintained without forrain helpe. My opinion is, that even as all plants, trees, living creatures, and whatsoever hath life, is naturally seene furnished with sufficient furniture to defend it selfe from the injurie of all wethers :

LUCR. iv. 932.

*Propterea que feré res omnes, aut corio sunt,  
Aut seta, aut conchis, aut callo, aut cortice tectæ.*

Therefore all things almost we cover'd marke,  
With hide, or haire, or shels, or brawne, or barke.

Even so were we : But as those who by an artificiall light extinguish the brightnesse of the day, we have quenched our proper meanes, by such as wee have borrowed. And wee may easily discern, that only custome makes that seeme impossible unto us, which is not so : For of those nations that have no knowledge of cloaths, some are found situated under the same heaven, and climate, or paralell, that we are in, and more cold and sharper than ours. Moreover, the tenderest parts of us are ever bare and naked, as our eyes, face, mouth, nose, and eares ; and our cuntry-swaines (as our forefathers wont) most of them at this day goe bare-breasted downe to the navill. Had we beene borne needing petti-coats and breeches, there is no doubt, but nature would have armed that which she hath left to the batterie of seasons, and furie of wethers, with some thicker skin or hide, as shee hath done our fingers ends, and the soales of our feet. Why seemes this hard to be believed ? Betweene my fashion of apparell, and that of one of my cuntry-clownes, I find much more difference betweene him and me, than betweene his fashion, and that of a man who is cloathed but with his bare skin. How many men (especially in Turkie,) go ever

# THE FIRST BOOKE

naked for devotions sake? A certaine man demanded of one of our loytring rogues, whom in the deep of frosty Winter, he saw wandering up and downe with nothing but his shirt about him, and yet as blithe and lusty as an other that keepes himselfe muffled and wrapt in warme furies up to the eares; how he could have patience to go so. ‘And have not you, good Sir,’ (answered he) ‘your face all bare?’ ‘Imagine I am all face.’ The Italians report (as far as I remember) of the Duke of Florence his foole, who when his Lord asked him, how being so ill clad, he could endure the cold, which he hardly was able to doe himselfe; To whom the foole replied; ‘Master, use but my receipt, and put all the cloaths you have upon you, as I doe all mine; you shall feele no more cold than I doe.’ King Massinissa, even in his eldest daies, were it never so cold, so frosty, so stormie, or sharpe wether, could never be induced, to put something on his head, but went alwaies bare-headed. The like is reported of the Emperor Severus. In the battels that past betweene the Ægyptians, and the Persians, Herodotus saith, that both himselfe and divers others tooke speciall notice, that of such as lay slaine on the ground, the Ægyptians sculs were without comparison much harder than the Persians: by reason that these go ever with their heads covered with coifs and turbants, and those from their infancie ever shaven and bare-headed. And King Agesilaus, even in his decrepit age, was ever wont to weare his cloaths both Winter and Summer alike. Suetonius affirmeth, that Cæsar did ever march formost before his troupes, and most commonly bare-headed, and on foot, whether the sunne shone, or it rained. The like is reported of Hanniball,

CHAPTER  
XXXV  
Of the use of  
Apparell

—*tum vertice nudo,*  
*Excipere insanos imbres, cœlique ruinam.*

SYL. ITAL. 250.

Bare-headed then he did endure,  
Heav'ns ruine and mad-raging showre.

A Venetian that hath long dwelt amongst them, and who is but lately returned thence, writeth, that in the Kingdome of Pegu, both men and women, having all other parts clad, goe ever bare-footed, yea, and on horse-backe also. And Plato for the better health and preservation of the body doth earnestly

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXXV  
Of the use of  
Apparell

perswade, that no man should ever give the feet and the head other cover, than Nature hath allotted them. He whom the Polonians chuse for their King next to ours, who may worthily be esteemed one of the greatest Princes of our age, doth never weare gloves, nor what wether soever it be, winter or summer, other bonnet abroad than in the warme house. As I cannot endure to goe unbuttoned or untrussed, so the husband-men neighbouring about me, would be, and feele themselves as fettered or hand-bound, with going so. Varro is of opinion, that when we were appointed to stand bare headed before the gods, or in presence of the Magistrates, it was rather done for our health, and to enure and arme us against injuries of the wether, than in respect of reverence. And since we are speaking of cold, and are French-men, accustomed so strangely to array our selves in party-coloured sutes (not I, because I seldome weare any other then blacke or white, in imitation of my father) let us adde this one thing more, which Captaine Martyn du Bellay relateth in the voyage of Luxemburg, where hee saith to have seene so hard frosts, that their munition-wines were faine to be cut and broken with hatchets and wedges, and shared unto the Souldiers by weight, which they caried away in baskets; and Ovid,

OID. *Trist.*  
iii. El. x. 23.

*Nudâque consistunt formam servantia testæ  
Vina, nec hausta meri, sed data frustra bibunt.*

Bare wines, still keeping forme of caske, stand fast,  
Not gulps, but gobbets of their wine they taste.

The frosts are so hard and sharpe in the emboguing of the Meotis fennes, that in the very place where Mithridates Lieutenant had delivered a battel to his enemies, on hard ground, and drie-footed, and there defeated them; the next summer, he there obtained another sea-battel against them. The Romanes suffered a great disadvantage in the fight they had with the Carthaginians neere unto Placentia, for so much as they went to their charge with their bloud congealed, and limbes benumbed, through extreme cold: whereas Hanniball had caused many fires to be made through-out his campe, to warme his souldiers by, and a quantitie of oile to be distributed amongst them, that therewith anointing

# THE FIRST BOOKE

themselves, they might make their sinewes more supple and nimble, and harden their pores against the bitter blasts of cold wind, which then blew, and nipping piercing of the ayre. The Græcians retreat from Babilon into their countrie, is renowned, by reason of the many difficulties and encombrances they encountred withall, and were to surmount: whereof this was one, that in the mountaines of Armenia, being surprised and encircled with so horrible and great quantitie of snow, that they lost both the knowledge of the countrie, and the wayes: wherewith they were so straitly beset, that they continued a day and a night without eating or drinking; and most of their horses and cattell died: of their men a great number also deceased; many with the glittering and whitenesse of the snow, were stricken blinde: divers through the extremitie were lamed, and their limbes shrunken up, many starke stiffe, and frozen with colde, although their senses were yet whole. Alexander saw a nation, where in winter they burie their fruit-bearing trees under the ground, to defend them from the frost: a thing also used amongst some of our neighbours. Touching the subject of apparell: the King of Mexico was wont to change and shift his clothes foure times a day, and never wore them againe, employing his leavings and cast-sutes for his continuall liberalities and rewards; as also neither pot nor dish, nor any implement of his kitchin or table were twice brought before him.

CHAPTER  
XXXV  
Of the use of  
Apparell

## THE THIRTY-SIXTH CHAPTER

Of Cato the younger.



AM not possessed with this common errour, to judge of others according to what I am my selfe. I am easie to beleeeve things differing from my selfe. Though I be engaged to one forme, I doe not tie the world unto it, as every man doth? And I beleeeve and conceive a thousand manners of life, contrarie to the common sort: I more easily admit and receive difference, than



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXXVI  
Of Cato the  
younger

resemblance in us. I discharge as much as a man will, another being of my conditions and principles, and simply consider of it in my selfe without relation, framing it upon it's owne modell. Though my selfe be not continent, yet doe I sincerely commend and allow the continencie of the Capuchins and Theatines, and highly praise their course of life. I doe by imagination insinuate my selfe into their place: and by how much more they bee other than my selfe, so much the more doe I love and honour them. I would gladly have every man judged apart, and not be drawne my selfe in consequence by others examples. My weaknesse doth no way alter the opinions I should have of the force and vigor of those that deserve it. *Sunt, qui nihil suadent, quàm quod se imitari posse confidunt.* 'There be such as advise to nothing, 'but what they trust themselves can imitate.' Crawling on the face of the earth, I cease not to marke, even into the clouds, the inimitable height of some heroicke minds. It is much for me to have a formall and prescript judgement, if the effects bee not so, and at least to maintaine the chiefe part exempted from corruption. It is something to have a good minde, when my forces faile me. The age we live in (at least our climate) is so dull and leaden, that not only the execution, but the very imagination of vertue is farre to seeke, and seemes to be no other thing than a College supposition, and a gibrish word.

HOR. vi. *Epi.*  
i. 31.

—*virtutem verba putant, ut*  
*Lucum ligna :*

Vertue seemes words to these,  
As trees are wood, or woods are trees.

*Quam vereri deberent, etiam si percipere non possent.*  
'Which yet they should reverence, though they could not 'reach unto.' It is an eare-ring or pendent to hang in a cabinet, or at the tongues end, as well as at an eare for an ornament. There are no more vertuous actions knowne; those that beare a shew of vertue, have no essence of it: for profit, glorie, custome, feare, and other like strange causes direct us to produce them. Justice, valour, integritie, which we then exercise, may by others consideration, and by the countenance they publikely beare, be termed so: but with

# THE FIRST BOOKE

the true workman, it is no vertue at all. There is another end proposed; another efficient cause. Vertue alloweth of nothing, but what is done by her, and for her alone. In that great battell at Potidæa which the Græcians under Pausanias gained of Mardonius and the Persians, the victors following their custome, comming to share the glorie and prise of the victorie betweene them, ascribed the pre-excellencie of valor in that conflict to the Spartane nation. The Spartanes impartiall Judges of vertue, when they came to decide, to what particular man of their countrie, the honour to have done best in that day, should of right belong, they found that Aristodemus had most courageously engaged and hazarded himselfe: Yet gave him not the prise of honour of it, because his vertue had beene therunto incited, by an earnest desire to purge himselfe from the reproch and infamie, which hee had incurred in the action at Thermopyles, and from all daring ambition to die courageously, thereby to warrant his former imputation. Our judgements are yet sicke, and follow the depravations of our customes. I see the greatest part of our spirits to affect wit, and to shew themselves ingenious, by obscuring and detracting from the glorie of famous and generall ancient actions, giving them some base and malicious interpretation, fondly and enviously charging them with vaine causes, and frivolous occasions. A subtile invention no doubt. Let any man present me, with the most excellent and blamelesse action, and I will oppose it with fiftie vicious and bad intentions, all which shall carrie a face of likeli-hood. God knowes (to him that will extend them) what diversitie of images our internal will doth suffer: They doe not so maliciously as grosely and rudely endeavour to be ingenious with all their railing and detraction. The same paine a man taketh to detract from these noble and famous names, and the verie same libertie, would I as willingly take to lend them my shoulders to extoll and magnifie them. I would endeavour to charge these rare and choise figures, selected by the consent of wise men, for the worlds example, as much, and as high, as my invention would give me leave with honour, in a plausible interpretation, and favourable circumstance. And a man must thinke, that the diligent labours of our invention, are farre beyond their

CHAPTER  
XXXVI  
Of Cato the  
younger

# MONTAIGNE S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXXVI  
Of Cato the  
younger

merit. It is the part of honest minded men to pourtray vertue, as faire as possible faire may be. A thing which would no whit be mis-seeming or undecent, if passion should transport us to the favour and pursuit of so sacred formes, what these doe contrarie, they either doe it through malice or knaverie, with purpose to reduce and sute their beleefe to their capacitie, whereof I lately spake: or rather as I thinke, because their sight is not of sufficient power or clearnes, nor addressed to conceive or apprehend the farre-shining brightness of vertue in naturall and genuine puritie: As Plutarke saith, that in his time, some imputed the cause of Cato the youngers death to the feare he had conceived of Cesar: whereat he hath some reason to be moved: by which a man may judge, how much more he would have bene offended with those that have ascribed the same unto ambition. Oh foolish people! Hee would no doubt have performed a faire action, so generous and so just, rather with ignominie, than for glorie. This man was truly a patterne, whom nature chose to shew how farre humane vertue may reach, and mans constancie attaine unto. But my purpose is not here to treat this rich argument: I will only confront together the sayings of five Latin Poets upon Catoes commendations, and for the interest of Cato, and by incidencie for theirs also. Now ought a gentleman well-bred, in respect of others, finde the two former somewhat languishing. The third more vigorous, but suppressed by the extravagancie of force. He will judge there were yet place for one or two degrees of invention, to reach unto the fourth, in consideration of which he will through admiration joyne hands for the last (yet first in some degree and space, but which space he will sweare can by no humane spirit be filled up) he will be much amazed, he will be much amated. Loe here are wonders, we have more Poets than judges and interpreters of poesie. It is an easier matter to frame it, than to know it: Being base and humble, it may be judged by the precepts and art of it: But the good and loftie, the supreme and divine, is beyond rules, and above reason. Whosoever discerneth her beautie, with a constant, quicke-seeing, and setled looke, he can no more see and comprehend the same than the splendor of a lightening flash. It hath no communitie with our judgement;

# THE FIRST BOOKE

but ransacketh and ravisheth the same. The furie which prickes and moves him that can penetrate her, doth also stricke and wound a third man, if he heare it either handled or recited, as the Adamant stone drawes, not only a needle, but infuseth some of her facultie in the same to draw others: And it is more apparently seene in theaters, that the sacred inspiration of the Muses, having first stirred up the Poet with a kinde of agitation unto choler, unto griefe, unto hatred, yea and beyond himselfe, whither and howsoever they please, doth also by the Poet strike and enter into the Actor, and consequently by the Actor, a whole auditorie or multitude. It is the ligament of our senses depending one of another. Even from my infancie, Poesie hath had the vertue to transpierce and transport me. But that lively and feeling-moving that is naturally in me, hath diversly beene handled, by the diversitie of formes, not so much higher or lower (for they were ever the highest in every kind) as different in colour. First a blithe and ingenious fluiditie, then a quaint-wittie, and loftie conceit. To conclude, a ripe and constant force. Ovid, Lucan, and Virgil, will better declare it. But here our Gallants are in their full cariere.

CHAPTER  
XXXVI  
Of Cato the  
younger

*Sit Cato dum vivit sanè vel Cæsare major.*

MART. *Epig.*  
xxxii. 5.

Let Cato Iunior, while he  
doth live, greater than Cæsar be.

Saith one.

*—et invictum devictâ morte Catonem:*

MANIL. *Astr.*  
iv. 87.

Cato unconquered, death being vanquished.

Saith another: And the third speaking of the civill warres betweene Cæsar and Pompey.

*Victrix causa Diis placuit, sed victa Catoni.*

LUCAN. *Bel.*  
*Civ.* i. 127.

The cause that overcame with Gods was greater;  
But the cause overcome pleasd Cato better.

And the fourth upon Cæsars commendations:

*Et cuncta terrarum subacta,  
Præter atrocem animum Catonis.*

HOR. ii. *Od.* i.  
23.

Of all the earth all parts intrhalled,  
Catoes minde only unappalled.



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XXXVI And the harts-master, after he hath enstalled the names  
Of Cato the younger of the greatest Romanes in his picture, endeth thus :

VIRG. *Æn.*  
viii. 670.

—*his dantem jura Catonem.*

Chiefe justice Cato doe decree  
Lawes that for righteous soules should be.

## THE THIRTY-SEVENTH CHAPTER

How we weepe and laugh at one  
selfe-same thing.

PLUT. *Vit.*  
*Pyrrh. f.*



WHEN we reade in Histories, that Antigonus was highly displeased with his sonne, at what time he presented unto him the head of King Pirrhus his enemy, slaine but a little before in fight against him ; which he no sooner saw, but hee burst forth a weeping. And that Renate Duke of Loraine, wept for the death of Charles Duke of Burgundie, whom hee had eftsoones discomfited, and was as an assistant mourner at his funeralls : And that in the battel of Auroy (which the Earle of Montfort had gained against the faction of Charles de Blois, for the Dutchy of Britanie) the victorious conqueror met with the body of his enemy deceased, mourned very grievously for him ; a man must not suddenly exclaime.

*E cosie auvien', che l'animo ciascuna  
Sua passion, sotto contrario manto  
RicuoPRE, con la vista hor chiara, hor bruna.*

So happens it, the minde covers each passion  
Under a cloake of colours opposite,  
To sight now cleare, now darke, in diuers fashion.

When Cæsar was presented with Pompeis head, Histories report that he turn'd his looks aside, as from a ghastly and unpleasing spectacle. There hath beene so long a correspondence and societie in the managing of publike affaires,

# THE FIRST BOOKE

mutually betweene them, such a communitie of fortunes, so many reciprocall offices and bonds of alliance, that a man cannot thinke his countenance to have beene forced, false, and wily, as this other supposeth.

—*tutumque putavit*  
*Iam bonus esse socer, lacrymas non sponte cadentes*  
*Effudit gemitusque expressit pectore læto.*

CHAPTER XXXVII  
 How we weepe and laugh at one selfe-same thing  
 LUCAN. ix.  
 1040.

Now to be kinde indeed he did not doubt  
 Father in law, teares, which came hardly out  
 He shed, and grones exprest  
 From inward pleased brest.

For certainly, howbeit the greatest number of our actions bee but masked and painted over with dissimulation, and that it may sometimes be true,

*Hæredis fletus sub persona risus est.*

The weeping of an heire, is laughing under a visard or disguise.

AUL. GELL.  
*Noct. Att.* xvii.  
 c. 14.

Yet must a man consider by judging of his accidents, how our mindes are often agitated by divers passions; For (as they say) there is a certaine assembly of divers humors in our bodies, whereof she is soveraigne mistris, who most ordinarily, according to our complexions doth command us: so in our minde, although it containe severall motions that agitate the same, yet must one chiefly be predominant. But it is not with so full an advantage, but for the volubilitie and supplenesse of our minde, the weakest may by occasion reobtaine the place againe, and when their turne commeth, make a new charge, whence we see, not only children, who simply and naturally follow nature, often to weepe and laugh at one selfe-same thing; but none of us all can vaunt himselfe, what wished for, or pleasant voyage soever he undertake, but that taking leave of his family and friends, he shall feele a chilling and panting of the heart, and if he shed not teares, at least he puts his foot in the stirrop with a sad and heavie cheere. And what gentle flame soever doth warme the heart of young virgins, yet are they hardly drawne to leave and forgoe their mothers, to betake them to their husbands: whatsoever this good fellow say:

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XXXVII

How we weepe  
and laugh at  
one selfe-same  
thing

CATUL. *Eleg.*

ii. 15.

*Est ne novis nuptis odio Venus, anne parentum  
Frustrantur falsis gaudia lacrymulis,  
Vbertim thalami quas intra limina fundunt?  
Non, ita me divi, vera gemunt, juverint.*

Doe young Birds hate indeed fresh Venus toys,  
Or with false teares delude their parents joyes,  
Which in their chambers they powre out amaine?  
So helpe me God, they doe not true complaine.

So is it not strange to mourne for him dead, whom a man by no meanes would have alive againe. When I chide my boy, I doe it with the best heart I have: They are true and not fained imprecations: but that fit past over, let him have need of me, I will gladly doe him all the good I can, and by and by I turne over another leafe. If I chance to call one knave or asse, my purpose is not for ever to enfeoffe him with those nick-names; nor doe I thinke to say, tong thou liest, if immediatly after I call him an honest man. No qualitie doth embrace us purely and universally. If it were not the countenance of a foole to speake alone, or to him selfe, there would scarce be day, or houre, wherein some body should not heare me mutter and grumble to my selfe, and against my selfe. A ( ) in the fooles teeth, yet doe not I thinke it to be my definition. He that seeth me sometimes to cast a frowning looke upon my wife, or sometimes a loving countenance, and thinkes, that either of them is but fained, he is a foole. Nero taking leave of his mother, whom hee sent to be drowned, felt notwithstanding the emotion of that motherly farewell, and at one instant was stricken with horror and pitie. It is said, that the Sunnes-light is not of one continued piece, but that it so uncessantly, and without intermission doth cast so thicke new raies, one in the necke of another upon us, that wee cannot perceive the space betweene them.

LUCR. v. 281.

*Largus enim liquidi fons luminis æthereus sol,  
Inrigat assidue cælum candore recenti,  
Suppeditâtque novo confestim lumine lumen.*

Heav'ns Sunne the plenteous spring of liquid light  
Still heav'n bedewes with splendor fresh and bright,  
Still light supplies with light of fresher sight.

So doth our minde cast her points diversly and imper-  
252

# THE FIRST BOOKE

ceptibly. Artabanus surprised Xerxes his nephew, and chid him for the sudden changing of his countenance. He was to consider the unmeasurable greatnesse of his forces at the passage of Hellespont, for the enterprise of Greece. First he was suddenly assailed by an excessive joy, to see so many thousands of men at his service, and witnessed the same by the alacritie and cheerefulness of his countenance: And immediately at the verie moment, his thoughts suggesting, how so many lives were to be consumed, and should come to nothing (at the furthest, within one age) he gan to frowne his browes, and grew so pensive, that he wept. We have with a resolute and inexorable minde pursued the revenge of an injurie, and felt a singular content for the victorie; yet upon better advice doe we weepe: it is not that we weepe for: the thing is as it was, there is nothing changed: But that our minde beholds the thing with another eie, and under an other shape it presents it selfe unto us. For every thing hath divers faces, sundry byases, and severall lustres. Alliance, kinred, old acquaintances, and long friendship seize on our imagination, and at that instant, passionate the same according to their qualitic, but the turne or change of it, is so violent, that it escapes us.

CHAPTER  
XXXVII  
How we weepe  
and laugh at  
one selfe-same  
thing

*Nil adeo fieri celeri ratione videtur,  
Quàm si mens fieri proponit et inchoat ipsa.  
Ocius ergo animus quàm res se perciet ulla,  
Ante oculos quarum in promptu natura videtur.*

LUCR. iii. 183.

Nothing in so quicke sort seemes to be done,  
As minde set on a thing, and once begun,  
The minde that swifter stirres before our eies,  
Than any thing, whose forme we soone comprize.

And therefore, intending to continue one body of all this pursuit, we deceive our selves. When Timoleon weepeth the murther he hath perpetrated with so mature and generous a determination, he weepeth not for the libertie restored to his countrie, nor the tyrant, but he weepeth for his brother. One part of his dutie is acted, let us permit him to play the other.



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## THE THIRTY-EIGHTH CHAPTER

### Of Solitarinesse.



LET us leave apart this outworne comparison, betweene a solitarie and an active life: And touching that goodly saying under which ambition and avarice shroud themselves; that we are not borne for our particular, but for the publike good: Let us boldly refer our selves to those that are engaged; and let them beat their conscience, if on the contrarie, the states, the charges, and this trash of the world, are not rather sought and sued for to draw a private commoditie from the publike. The bad and indirect meanes wherethrough in our age men canvase and toyle to attaine the same, doe manifestly declare the end thereof to be of no great consequence. Let us answer ambition, that herselfe gives us the taste of solitarinesse. For what doth she shun so much as company? What seeketh shee more than elbow-roome? There is no place, but there are meanes and waies to doe well or ill. Neverthelesse if the saying of Bias be true; 'That the worst part is the 'greatest': Or that which Ecclesiastes saith, 'That of a 'thousand there is not one good.'

IUVEN. *Sat.*  
xiii. 26.

*Rari quippe boni, numero vix sunt totidem, quot  
Thebarum portæ, vel divitis ostia Nili:*

Good men are rare, so many scarce (I feare)  
As gates of Thebes, mouths of rich Nilus were.

Contagion is very dangerous in a throng. A man must imitate the vicious, or hate them: both are dangerous: for to resemble them is perilous, because they are many, and to hate many is hazzardous, because they are dissemblable, and Merchants that travell by sea, have reason to take heed, that those which goe in the same ship, be not dissolute, blasphemers, and wicked, judging such company unfortunate. Therefore Bias said pleasantly to those, that together with him passt the danger of a great storme, and called to the Gods

# THE FIRST BOOKE

for helpe: 'Peace my masters, lest they should heare, that 'you are here with me.' And of a more militarie example, Albubquerque, Viceroy in India for Emanuel King of Portugall, in an extreme danger of a sea-tempest, tooke a young boy upon his shouldiers, for this only end, that in the common perill his innocencie might be his warrant, and recommending to Gods favour, to set him on shore: yet may a wise man live every where contented, yea and alone, in the throng of a Pallace: but if he may chuse, he will (saith he) 'Avoid 'the sight of it.' If need require, he will endure the first: but if he may have his choice, he will chuse the latter. He thinks he hath not sufficiently rid himselfe from vices, if he must also contest with other mens faults. Charondas punished those for wicked, that were convicted to have frequented lewd companies. There is nothing so dis-sociable and sociable as man, the one for his vice, the other for his nature. And I think Antisthenes did not satisfie him that upbraided him with his conversation with the wicked, saying, 'That Physicians live amongst the sick.' Who if they stead sick-mens healths, they empaire their owne, by the infection, continuall visiting, touching and frequenting of diseases. Now (as I suppose) the end is both one, thereby to live more at leasure, and better at ease. But man doth not alwaies seeke the best way to come unto it, who often supposeth to have quit affaires, when he hath but changed them. There is not much lesse vexation in the government of a private family, than in the managing of an entire state: wheresoever the minde is busied, there it is all. And though domesticall occupations be lesse important, they are as importunate. Moreover, though we have freed our selves from the court, and from the market, we are not free from the principall torments of our life.

CHAPTER  
XXXVIII  
Of Solitari-  
nesse

—*ratio et prudentia curas,*  
*Non locus effusi latè maris arbiter aufert.*

HOR. i. *Epist.*  
xi. 25.

Reason and wisdom may set cares aside,  
Not place the Arbiter of seas so wide.

Shift we, or change we places never so often, ambition,  
avarice, irresolution, feare and concupiscences never leave us.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XXXVIII Of Solitari- nesse

HOR. iii. *Et post equitem sedet atra cura.*

Od. i. 39. Care looking grim and blacke, doth sit  
Behinde his backe that rides from it.

They often follow us, even into immured cloisters, and into schooles of Philosophy; nor doe hollow rocks, nor wearing of haire-shirts, nor continuall fastings rid us from them.

VIRG. *Æn.* iv.  
73.

*Hæret lateri lethalis arundo.*

The shaft that death implide  
Sticks by the flying side.

It was told Socrates, that one was no whit amended by his travell: 'I beleevc it well' (said he) 'for he carried him- selfe with him.'

HOR. ii. *Od.*  
xvi. 18.

*Quid terras alio calentes*

*Sole mutamus? patriâ quis exul*

*Se quoque fugit?*

Why change we soyles warm'd with another Sunne?  
Who from home banisht hath himselfe out-runne?

If a man doe not first discharge both himselfe and his minde from the burthen that presseth her, removing from place to place will stirre and presse her the more; as in a ship, wares well stowed, and closely piled, take up least roome, you doe a sicke-man more hurt than good, to make him change place, you settle an evill in removing the same; as stakes or poles, the more they are stirred and shaken, the faster they sticke, and sinke deeper into the ground. Therefore is it not enough, for a man to have sequestred himselfe from the concourse of people: it is not sufficient to shift place, a man must also sever himselfe from the popular conditions, that are in us. A man must sequester and recover himselfe from himselfe.

PERS. *Sat.* v.  
158.

*—rupi jam vincula, dicas,*

*Nam luctata canis nodum arripit, attamen illa  
Cum fugit, à collo trahitur pars longa catenæ. †*

You will say haply I my bonds have quit,  
Why so the striving dog the knot hath bit;  
Yet when he flies, much chaine doth follow it.

We carry our fetters with us: is it not an absolute libertie;

# THE FIRST BOOKE

we still cast backe our lookes towards that we have left behinde : our minde doth still run on it ; our fansie is full of it.

—*nisi purgatum est pectus, quæ prælia nobis  
Atque pericula tunc ingratis insinuandum?  
Quantæ conscindunt hominem cupidinis acres  
Sollicitum curæ, quantique perinde timores?  
Quidve superbia, spurcitia, ac petulantia, quantas  
Efficiunt clades, quid luxus desidiesque?*

CHAPTER XXXVIII  
Of Solitari-  
nesse  
LUCR. v. 44.

Unlesse our breast be purg'd, what warres must wee  
What perils then, though much displeased, see?  
How great feares, how great cares of sharpe desire  
Doe carefull man distract, torment, enfire?  
Uncleanesse, wantonnesse, sloth, riot, pride,  
How great calamities have these implide?

Our evill is rooted in our minde : and it cannot scape from it selfe.

*In culpa est animus, qui se non effugit unquam.*

HOR. i. *Epist.*  
xiv. 13.

The minde in greatest fault must lie,  
Which from it selfe can never flie.

Therefore must it be reduced and brought into it selfe : It is the true solitarinesse, and which may be enjoyed even in the frequence of peopled Cities, and Kings courts : but it is more commodiously enjoyed apart. Now sithence wee undertake to live solitarie, and without companie, let us cause our contentment to depend of our selves : Let us shake off all bonds that tie us unto others : Gaine we that victorie over us, that in good earnest we may live solitarie, and therein live at our ease. Stilphon having escaped the combustion of his Citie, wherein he had lost, both wife, and children, and all his goods ; Demetrius Poliorcetes seeing him in so great a ruine of his Countrie, with an unaffrighted countenance, demanded of him, whether he had received any losse ; He answered, 'No : and that (thanks given to God) he had lost ' nothing of his owne.' It is that, which Antisthenes the Philosopher said very pleasantly, 'That man ought to provide himselfe with munitions, that might float upon the ' water, and by swimming escape the danger of shipwracke ' with him.' Verily, 'a man of understanding hath lost ' nothing, if he yet have himselfe.' When the Citie of Nola



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XXXVIII Of Solitari- nesse

was over-run by the Barbarians, Paulinus Bishop thereof, having lost all he had there, and being their prisoner, prayed thus unto God: 'Oh Lord deliver me from feeling of this losse: for thou knowest as yet they have toucht nothing that is mine.' The riches that made him rich, and the goods which made him good, were yet absolutely whole. Behold what it is to chuse treasures well, that may be freed from injurie; and to hide them in a place, where no man may enter, and which cannot be betrayed but by our selves. A man that is able, may have wives, children, goods, and chiefly health, but not so tie himselfe unto them, that his felicitie depend on them. We should reserve a store-house for our selves, what need soever chance; altogether ours, and wholly free, wherein we may hoard up and establish our true libertie, and principall retreat and solitarinesse, wherein we must go alone to our selves, take our ordinarie entertainment, and so privately, that no acquaintance or communication of any strange thing may therein find place: there to discourse, to meditate and laugh, as, without wife, without children, and goods, without traine, or servants; that if by any occasion they be lost, it seeme not strange to us to passe it over; we have a mind moving and turning in it selfe; it may keep it selfe companie; it hath wherewith to offend and defend, wherewith to receive, and wherewith to give. Let us not feare that we shall faint and droop through tedious and mind-tyring idlenesse in this solitarinesse.

*In solis sistibi turba locis.*

Be thou, when with thee is not any,  
As good unto thy selfe as many.

Vertue is contented with it selfe, without discipline, without words, and without effects. In our accustomed actions, of a thousand there is not one found that regards us: he whom thou seest so furiously, and as it were besides himselfe, to clamber or crawle up the citie wals, or breach, as a point-blank to a whole volley of shot, and another all wounded and skarred, crazed and faint, and wel-nie hunger-starven, resolved rather to die, than to open his enimie the gate, and give him entrance; doest thou think he is there for himselfe? No verily, It is peradventure for such a one, whom neither he,

# THE FIRST BOOKE

nor so many of his fellowes ever saw, and who haply takes no care at all for them; but is there-whilst wallowing up to the cares in sensualitie, slouth, and all manner of carnal delights. This man whom about mid-night, when others take their rest, thou seest come out of his study meagre-looking, with eyes-trilling, flegmatike, squalide, and spauling, doest thou thinke, that plodding on his books he doth seek how he shall become an honest man; or more wise, or more content? There is no such matter. He wil either die in his pursuit, or teach posteritie the measure of Plautus verses, and the true Orthography of a Latine word. Who doth not willingly chop and counter-change his health, his ease, yea, and his life for glorie, and for reputation? The most unprofitable, vaine, and counterfet coine, that is in use with us. Our death is not sufficient to make us afraid, let us also charge our selves with that of our wives, of our children, and of our friends, and people. Our owne affaires doe not sufficiently trouble and vex us; Let us also drudge, toile, vex, and torment our selves with our neighbours and friends matters.

CHAPTER  
XXXVIII  
Of Solitari-  
nesse

*Vah quemquámne hominem in animum instituere, aut  
Parare, quod sit charius, quàm ipse est sibi?*

TER. *Adel.* act  
i. sc. i. 13.

Fie, that a man should cast, that ought, than he  
Himselfe of himselfe more belov'd should be.

Solitarinesse mee seemeth hath more apparance and reason in those which have given their most active and flourishing age unto the world, in imitation of Thales. We have lived long enough for others, live we the remainder of our life unto our selves: let us bring home our cogitations and inventions unto our selves, and unto our ease. It is no easie matter to make a safe retreat: it doth over-much trouble us with joyning other enterprises unto it. Since God gives us leasure to dispose of our dislodging, let us prepare our selves unto it, packe wee up our baggage. Let us betimes bid our companie farewell. Shake we off these violent hold-fasts, which else-where engage us, and estrange us from our selves. These so strong bonds must be untied, and a man may eft-soones love this or that, but wed nothing but himselfe; That is to say, let the rest be our owne: yet not so combined and glued together, that it may not be sundred,

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XXXVIII Of Solitari- nesse

without fleeing us, and therewithall, pull away some peece of our owne. The greatest thing of the world, is for a man to know how to be his owne. It is high time to shake off societie, since we can bring nothing to it. And he that cannot lend, let him take heed of borrowing. Our forces faile us: retire we them, and shut them up into our selves. He that can suppress and confound in himselfe the offices of so many amities, and of the company, let him doe it. In this fall, which makes us inutile, irkesome, and importunate to others, let him take heed he be not importunate, irkesome, and unprofitable to himselfe. Let him flatter, court, and cherish himselfe, and above all let him governe himselfe, respecting his reason and fearing his conscience, so that he may not without shame stumble or trip in their presence. *Rarum est enim, ut satis se quisque vereatur.* 'For it is a 'rare matter, that every man sufficiently should stand in 'awe and reverence of himselfe.' Socrates saith, 'That 'young men ought to be instructed, and men exercised in 'well doing; and old men withdraw themselves from all 'civill and military negotiations, living at their owne discretion, without obligation to any certaine office.' There are some complexions, more proper for these precepts of retreit than others. Those which have a tender and demisse apprehension, a squemish affection, a delicate will, and which cannot easily subject or imploy it selfe (of which both by naturall condition and propense discourse I am one) wil better apply themselves unto this counsell than active minds, and busie spirits; which imbrace all, every where engage, and in all things passionate themselves; that offer, that present, and yeeld themselves to all occasions. A man must make use of all these accidentall commodities, and which are without us, so long as they be pleasing to us; but not make them our principall foundation: It is not so, nor reason, nor nature permit it. Why should we against their lawes subject our contentment to the power of others? Moreover, to anticipate the accidents of fortune; for a man to deprive himselfe of the commodities he hath in possession, as many have done for devotion, and some Philosophers by discourse; to serve themselves, to lie upon the hard ground, to pull out their own eyes, to cast their riches into the Sea, to seeke for

# THE FIRST BOOKE

paine and smart (some by tormenting this life, for the happinesse of another; othersome placing themselves on the lowest step, thereby to warrant themselves from a new fall) is the action of an excessive vertue. Let sterner and more vigorous complexions make their lurking glorious and more exemplar.

CHAPTER  
XXXVIII  
Of Solitari-  
nesse

—*tuta et parvula laudo,  
Cum res deficiunt, satis inter vilia fortis:  
Verum ubi quid melius contingit et unctius, idem  
Hos sapere, et solos aio bene vivere, quorum  
Conspicitur nitidis fundata pecunia villis.*

HOR. i. *Epist.*  
xv. 42.

When riches faile, I praise the safe estate,  
Though small; base things doe not high thoughts abate.  
But when tis better, finer with me, I  
They only live well, and are wise, doe crie,  
Whose coine in faire farmes doth well-grounded lie.

There is worke enough for me to doe without going so far. It sufficeth me under fortunes favour, to prepare my selfe for her disfavour; and being at ease, as far as imagination may attaine unto, to represent the evill to come unto my selfe: Even as we enure our selves to Tilts and Tourneyes, and counterfeit warre in time of peace. I esteeme not Arcesilaus the Philosopher lesse reformed, because I know him to have used houshold implements of gold and silver, according as the condition of his fortune gave him leave. I rather value him the more, than if he had not done it, forsomuch as he both moderately and liberally made use of them. I know unto what limits naturall necessitie goeth; and I consider the poore almesman begging at my doore, to be often more plumb-cheekt, in better health and liking than I am: Then doe I enter into his estate, and assay to frame and sute my mind unto his byase. And so over-running other examples, albeit I imagine death, povertie, contempt, and sicknesse to be at my heeles, I easily resolve my selfe, not to apprehend any feare of that, which one of lesse worth than my selfe doth tolerate and undergoe with such patience: And I cannot beleieve, that the basenesse or shallownesse of understanding, can doe more than vigor and far-seeing, or that the effects and reason of discretion, cannot reach to the effects of custome and use. And knowing



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XXXVIII Of Solitari- nesse

what slender hold-fast these accessorie commodities have, I omit not in full joyssance of them, humbly to beseech God of his mercie (as a soveraigne request) to make me contented with my selfe, and with the goods proceeding from me. I see some gallantly-disposed young men, who notwithstanding their faire-seeming shew, have many boxes full of pills in their coffers at home, to take when the rhume shall assaile them; which so much the lesse they feare, when they thinke the remedy to be at hand. So must a man doe: as also if he feele himselfe subject to some greater infirmitie, to store himselfe with medicaments that may asswage, supple, and stupifie the part grieved. The occupation a man should chuse for such a life, must neither be painfull nor tedious, otherwise, in vaine should we accompt to have sought our abiding there, which depends from the particular taste of every man. Mine doth no way accommodate it selfe to husbandrie. Those that love it, must with moderation apply themselves unto it.

HOR. *Epist.* i.  
19.

*Conentur sibi res, non se submittere rebus.*

Endevour they things to them to submit,  
Not them to things (if they have Horace wit).

Husbandrie is otherwise a servile office, as Salust termeth it: It hath more excusable parts, as the care of gardening, which Xenophon ascribeth to Cyrus: A meane or mediocritie may be found, betweene this base and vile carking care, extended and full of toiling labor, which we see in men that wholly plunge themselves therein, and that profound and extreme retchlesnesse to let all things goe at six and seven, which is seen in others.

*Ib.* xii. 12.

—*Democriti pecus edit agellos*  
*Cultaque, dum peregrè est animus sine corpore velox.*

Cattle destroyd Democritus his sets,  
While his mind bodillesse vagaries fets.

But let us heare the counsell, which Plinie the younger giveth to his friend Cornelius Rufus, touching this point of Solitarinesse: 'I perswade thee in this full-gorged and fat  
' retireit, wherein thou art, to remit this base and abject  
' care of husbandrie unto thy servants, and give thy selfe to

# THE FIRST BOOKE

‘ the study of letters, whence thou maist gather something, CHAPTER  
 ‘ that may altogether be thine owne’; He meaneth reputa- XXXVIII  
 tion: like unto Ciceroes humor, who saith, ‘That he will Of Solitari-  
 ‘ imploy his solitarinesse and residence from publike affaires, nesse  
 ‘ to purchase unto himselfe by his writings an immortal life.’

—*usque adeone*  
*Scire tuum nihil est, nisi te scire hoc sciat alter?*

PERS. *Sat.* i.  
 27.

Is it then nothing worth that thou doost know,  
 Unlesse what thou doost know, thou others show?

It seemeth to be reason, when a man speaketh to withdraw himselfe from the world, that one should looke beyond him. These doe it but by halfes. Indeed, they set their match against the time they shall be no more: but pretend to reap the fruit of their dessignes, when they shall be absent from the world, by a ridiculous contradiction. The imagination of those, who through devotion seeke solitarinesse, filling their minds with the certaintie of heavenly promises, in the other life, is much more soundly consorted. They propose God as an object infinit in goodness, and incomprehensible in power, unto themselves. The soule hath therein, in all free libertie, wherewith to glut her selfe. Afflictions and sorrowes redound to their profit, being imployed for the purchase and attaining of health, and eternall gladnesse. Death, according to ones wish, is a passage to so perfect an estate. The sharpnesse of their rules, is presently made smooth and easie by custome; and carnall concupiscences, rejected, abated, and lulled asleep by refusing them; for nothing entertaineth them but use and exercise. This only end of another life, blessedly immortal, doth rightly merit we should abandon the pleasures and commodities of this our life. And he that can enlighten his soule with the flame of a lively faith and hope, really and constantly, in his solitarinesse, doth build unto himselfe a voluptuous and delicious life, far surmounting all other lives. Therefore doth neither the end nor middle of this counsell please me. We are ever falling into a relaps, from an ague to a burning fever. This plodding occupation of bookes, is as painfull as any other, and as great an enemy unto health, which ought principally to be considered. And a man

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XXXVIII Of Solitari- nesse

should not suffer himselfe to be inveigled by the pleasure he takes in them: It is the same pleasure, that loseth the thriving husband-man, the greedy-covetous, the sinning-voluptuous, and the puffed-up ambitious. The wisest men teach us sufficiently to beware and shield us from the treasons of our appetites, and to discern true and perfect pleasures, from delights blended and entermingled with more paine. For, most pleasures (say they) tickle, fawne upon, and embrace us, with purpose to strangle us, as did the theeves whom the Ægyptians termed Philistas: And if the head-ach would seize upon us before drunkennesse, we would then beware of too much drinking: but sensualitie the better to entrap us, marcheth before, and hideth her tracke from us. Bookes are delightfull; but if by continuall frequenting them, we in the end lose both health and cheerefulness (our best parts) let us leave them. I am one of those who thinke their fruit can no way countervaille this losse. As men that have long time felt themselves enfeebled through some indisposition, doe in the end yeeld to the mercie of Physicke, and by art have certaine rules of life prescribed them, which they will not transgresse: So he that with-drawes himselfe, as distasted and over-tired with the common life, ought likewise to frame and prescribe this unto the rules of reason; direct and range the same by pre-meditation, and discourse. He must bid all manner of travell farewell, what shew soever it beare; and in generall shun all passions that any way impeach the tranquillitie of mind and body, and follow the course best agreeing with his humour.

PROPERT. ii.  
El. xxv. 38.

*Vnusquisque sua noverit ire via.*

His owne way every man  
Tread-out directly can.

A man must give to thriving husbandrie, to laborious study, to toilesome hunting, and to every other exercise, the utmost bounds of pleasure; and beware he engage himselfe no further, if once paine begin to intermeddle it selfe with her; we should reserve businesse and negotiations, only for so much as is behoovefull to keepe us in breath, and to warrant us from the inconveniences which the other extre-

# THE FIRST BOOKE

mitie of a base, faint-harted idlenesse drawes after it. There are certaine barren and thornie sciences, which for the most part are forged for the multitude: they should be left for those, who are for the service of the world. As for my selfe, I love no books, but such as are pleasant, and casie, and which tickle me, or such as comfort and counsell me, to direct my life and death.

CHAPTER  
XXXVIII  
Of Solitari-  
nesse

—*tacitum sylvas inter reptare salubres*  
*Curantem quidquid dignum sapiente bonoque est.*

HOR. i. *Epist.*  
iv. 4.

Silently creeping midst the wholesome wood  
With care what's for a wise man and a good.

The wiser sort of men, having a strong and vigorous mind, may frame unto themselves an altogether spirituall life. But mine being common, I must help to uphold my selfe by corporall commodities: And age having eftsoones dispoiled me of those that were most sutable to my fantasie, I instruct and sharpen my appetite to those remaining most sortable this other season. We must tooth and naile retaine the use of this lives pleasures, which our yeares snatch from us, one after another:

*Carpamus dulcia, nostrum est,*  
*Quòd vivis: cinis et manes et fabula fies.*

PERS. *Sat.* v.  
155.

Plucke we sweet pleasures: we thy life give thee.  
Thou shalt a tale, a ghost, and ashes be.

Now concerning the end of glorie, which Plinie, and Cicero propose unto us, it is far from my discourse: The most opposite humour to solitarie retiring, is ambition. 'Glorie and rest, are things that cannot squat in one same forme': as far as I see, these have nought but their armes and legs out of the throng, their mind and intent is further and more engaged in them than ever it was.

*Tun' vetule auriculis alienis colligis escas?*

*Ib.* i. 22.

Gatherst thou dotard at these yeares,  
Fresh baits, fine food, for others eares?

They have gone backe that they might leape the better, and with a stronger motion make a nimbler offer amidst the multitude. Will you see how they shoot-short by a cornes breadth? let us but counterpoise the advice of two Philoso-



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XXXVIII Of Solitari- nesse

phers, and of two most different sects: The one writing to Idomeneus, the other to Lucilius their friends, to divert them from the managing of affaires and greatnesse, unto a solitarie kind of life. 'You have' (say they) 'lived hitherto swimming ' and floating adrift, come and die in the haven; you have ' given the past of your life unto light, give the remainder ' unto darknesse. It is impossible to give over occupations, ' if you doe not also give over the fruits of them: Therefore ' cleare your selfe from all care and glorie. There is great ' danger, lest the glittering of your fore-passed actions should ' over-much dazle you, yea, and follow you even to your den. ' Together with other concupiscences, shake off that which ' commeth from the approbation of others. And touching ' your knowledge and sufficiencie, take you no care of them, ' they will lose no whit of their effect; if your selfe be any ' thing the better for them. Remember but him, who being ' demanded, to what purpose he toyled so much about an ' Art, which could by no meanes come to the knowledge of ' many. "Few are enow for me; one will suffice, yea, lesse ' " than one will content me, answered he." He said true: you and another are a sufficient theatre one for another; or you to your selfe alone. Let the people be one unto you, and one be all the people to you: It is a base ambition to goe about to draw glorie from ones idlenesse, and from ones lurking hole. A man must doe as some wilde beasts, which at the entrance of their caves, will have no manner of footing seene. You must no longer seeke, what the world saith of you, but how you must speake unto your selfe: withdraw your selfe into your selfe; but first prepare your selfe to receive your selfe: it were folly to trust to your selfe, if you cannot governe your selfe. A man may as well faile in solitarinesse, as in companie, there are waies for it, untill such time as you have framed your selfe such, that you dare not halt before your selfe, and that you shall be ashamed of, and beare a kind of respect unto your selfe, *Obversentur species honestæ animo*: 'Let honest Ideaes still represent ' themselves before your mind': Ever present Cato, Phocion, SEN. *Epist.* xi. and Aristides unto your imagination, in whose presence even fooles would hide their faults, and establish them as controulers of all your intentions. If they be disordered and

# THE FIRST BOOKE

untuned, their reverence will order and tune them againe: they will containe you in a way, to be contented with your selfe; to borrow nothing but from your selfe, to settle and stay your mind in assured and limited cogitations, wherein it may best please it selfe, and having gotten knowledge of true felicities, which according to the measure a man understands them, he shall accordingly injoy, and with them rest satisfied, without wishing a further continuance, either of life or name. Loe heere the counsell of truly-pure, and purely-true philosophie, not of a vaine-glorious, boasting, and prating philosophie, as is that of the two first.

CHAPTER  
XXXVIII  
Of Solitari-  
nesse

## THE THIRTY-NINTH CHAPTER

A consideration upon Cicero.



ONE word more in comparison of these two. There are gathered out of Ciceroes writings and from Plinies, (in mine opinion little agreeing with his unckle) infinite testimonies of a nature beyond measure ambitious. Amongst others, that they openly solicit the Historians of their times, not to forget them in their writings: and fortune, as it were in spight, hath made the vanitie of their request to continue even to our daies, and long since the histories were lost. But this exceedeth all hearts-basenesse in persons of that stampe, to have gone about to draw some principall glorie from prating and speaking, even to imploy their private Epistles written to their friends; in such sort, as some missing the opportunitie to be sent, they notwithstanding cause them to be published, with this worthy excuse, that they would not lose their travell and lucubrations. Is it not a seemly thing in two Romane Consuls, chiefe magistrates of the common-wealth, Empresse of the world, to spend their time in wittily devising, and closely hudling up of a quaint missive or wittie epistle, therby to attaine the reputation, that they perfectly understand their

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXXIX  
A considera-  
tion upon  
Cicero.

mother tongue? What could a seely School-master, who gets his living by such trash, doe worse? If the acts of Xenophon, or of Cæsar had not by much exceeded their eloquence, I cannot beleeeve, they would ever have written them. They have endeavored to recommend unto posterity, not their sayings, but their doings. And if the perfection of well-speaking might bring any glorie sutable unto a great personage, Scipio and Lelius would never have resigned the honour of their Comedies, and the elegancies, and smooth-sportfull conceits of the Latine tongue, unto an Affrican servant: For, to prove this labour to be theirs, the exquisit eloquence, and excellent invention thereof doth sufficiently declare it: and Terence himselfe doth avouch it: And I could hardly be removed from this opinion. It is a kind of mockerie and injurie, to raise a man to worth, by qualities mis-seeming his place, and unfitting his calling, although for some other respects praise-worthy; and also by qualities that ought not to be his principall object. As he that would commend a King to be a cunning Painter, or a skilfull Architect, or an excellent Harquibuzier, or a never missing runner at the Ring. These commendations acquire a man no honour, if they be not presented altogether with those that are proper and convenient unto him, that is to say, justice, and the skill to governe, and knowledge to direct his people both in peace and warre. In this sort doth Agriculture honour Cyrus, and Eloquence Charlemaine, together with his knowledge in good letters. I have in my time seen some, who by writing did earnestly get both their titles and living, to disavow their aprentissage, mar their pen, and affect the ignorance of so vulgar a qualitie; and which our people holds, to be seldome found amongst wise men, endeavouring to be commended for better qualities. Demosthenes his companions in their ambassage to Philip, praised their Prince to be faire, eloquent, and a good quaffer. Demosthenes said, they were commendations rather fitting a woman, an advocate, and a sponge, than a King.

HOR. *Car.*  
*Secul.* 51.

*Imperet bellante prior, jacentem  
Lenis in hostem.*

Better he rule, who mercifull will rue  
His foe subdued, than he that can subdue.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

It is not his profession to know, either how to hunt cunningly, or to dance nimbly. CHAPTER XXXIX

*Orabunt causas alii, cœlique meatus  
Describent radio, et fulgentia sidera dicent ;  
Hic regere imperio populos sciat.*

Others shall causes plead, describe the skies  
Motion by instrument, say how stars rise :  
But let him know to rule (just, valiant, wise).

A considera-  
tion upon  
Cicero

VIRG. *Æn.* vi.  
850.

Plutarke saith moreover, ‘That to appeare so absolutely excellent in these lesse-necessarie parts, is to produce a witnesse against himselfe, to have ill spent his houres, and fondly bestowed his study, which might better have beene employed to more behoovefull and profitable use.’ So that Philip King of Macedon, having heard great Alexander his sonne sing at a feast and vic with the best Musitians: ‘Art thou not ashamed’ (said he unto him) ‘to sing so well?’ And to the same Philip, said a Musitian, gainst whom he contended about his Art, ‘God forbid, my Sovereigne, that ever so much hurt should befall you, that you should understand these things better than my selfe.’ A King ought to be able to answer, as Ipicrates did the Orator who in his invective urged him in this manner: ‘And what art thou thou shouldst so brave it? Art thou a man at Armes? Art thou an Archer? Art thou a Pike-man?’ ‘I am none of all those, but I am he who command all those.’ And Antisthenes made it as an argument of little valour in Ismenias, when some commended him to be an excellent Flutist. Well I wot, that when I heare some give themselves to imitate the phrase of my Essayes, I would rather have them hold their peace: They doe not so much raise the words, as depresse the sense; so much the more sharply, by how much more obliquely. Yet am I deceived if some others take not more hold on the matter; and how well or ill soever, if any writer hath scattered the same, either more materiall, or at least thicker on his paper: That I may collect the more, I doe but huddle up the arguments or chiefe heads. Let me but adde what followes them, I shall daily increase this volume. And how many stories have I glanced at therein, that speake not a word, which who-soever shal unfold, may from them draw infinite Essayes?



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XXXIX  
A consideration upon  
Cicero

Nor they, nor my allegations doe ever serve simply for examples, authoritie, or ornament. I doe not only respect them for the use I draw from them. They often (beyond my purpose) produce the seed of a richer subject, and bolder matter, and often collaterally, a more harmonious tune, both for me, that will expresse no more in this place, and for them that shall hit upon my tune.

SEN. *Epist.*  
CXV. P.

But returning to vertue, I find no great choice, betweene him that can speake nothing but evill, and one that can talke nothing but to talke well. *Non est ornamentum virile concinnitas.* 'Finenesse is no great grace for a man.' Wise men say, that in respect of knowledge, there is nothing but Philosophy, and in regard of effects but Vertue; which is generally fit for all degrees, and for al orders. Something there is alike in these two other Philosophers; for they also promise eternitie to the Epistles, they write to their friends. But after another fashion, and to a good purpose, accommodating themselves to others vanitie; For they send them word, that if care to make themselves known unto future ages, and respect of renowne, doth yet retaine them in the managing of affaires, and makes them feare solitarinesse, and a retired life, to which they would call them, that they take no more paines for it: forasmuch as they have sufficient credit with posteritie, by answering them; and were it but by the Epistles they write unto them, they will make their name as famous, and as farre known, as all their publike actions might doe. Besides this difference, they are not frivolous, idle, and triviall Epistles, and only compact and held together with exquisite choise words, huddled-up and ranged to a just smoothe cadence, but stufft and full of notable sayings, and wise sentences; by which a man doth not only become more eloquent, but more wise, and that teach us, not to say well, but to doe well. Fie on that eloquence, which leaves us with a desire of it, and not of things: unlesse a man will say, that Ciceroes being so exceedingly perfect, doth frame it selfe a body of perfection. I will further alleage a storie, which to this purpose we reade of him, to make us palpably feele his naturall condition. He was to make an Oration in publike, and being urged betimes to prepare himselfe for it, Eros one of his servants came to

# THE FIRST BOOKE

tel him, the Auditorie was deferred till the morrow next; he was so glad of it, that for so good newes he gave him his libertie. Touching this subject of Epistles, thus much I will say; It is a worke wherein my friends are of opinion I can doe something: And should more willingly have undertaken to publish my gifts, had I had who to speake unto. It had beene requisite (as I have had other times) to have had a certaine commerce to draw me on, to encourage me, and to uphold me. For, to goe about to catch the winde in a net, as others doe, I cannot; and it is but a dreame. I am a sworne enemie to all falsifications. I should have beene more attentive, and more assured, having a friendly and strong direction, than to behold the divers images of a whole multitude: and I am deceived, if it had not better succeeded with me. I have naturally a comical and familiar stile: But after a maner peculiar unto my self, inept to all publike Negotiations, answering my speech, which is altogether close, broken, and particular: I have no skill in ceremonious letters, which have no other substance, but a faire contexture of complemental phrases and curteous words. I have no taste nor faculty of these tedious offers of service and affection. I believe not so much as is said, and am nothing pleased to say more than I believe. It is farre from that which is used now adaies: For, there was never so abject and servile a prostitution of presentations; life, soule, devotion, adoration, servant, slave; all these words are so generally used, that when they would expresse a more emphaticall intent and respective will, they have no meanes left them to expresse it. I deadly hate to heare a flatterer: which is the cause I naturally affect a pithy, sinnowie, dric, round, and harsh kind of speach; which, of such as have no further acquaintance with me, is judged to encline to disdaine. I honor them most, whom I seeme to regard least: And where my mind marcheth most cheerefully, I often forget the steps of gravitie: And I offer my selfe but faintly and rudely to those whose I am indeed, and present my selfe least, to such as I have most given my selfe. Me thinkes they should read it in my heart, and that the expression of my words, wrongeth my conception. To welcome, to take leave, to bid farewell, to give thanks, to salute, to present my service,

CHAPTER  
XXXIX  
A consideration upon  
Cicero

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XXXIX  
A considera-  
tion upon  
Cicero

and such verball complements of the ceremoniall lawes of our civilitie, I know no man so sottishly-barren of speech, as my selfe. And I was never employed to indite Letters of favour or commendatorie, but he for whom they were, judged them drie, barren, and faint. The Italians are great Printers of Epistles, whereof I thinke I have a hundred severall Volumes. I deeme those of Hanniball Caro to be the best. If all the paper I have heretofore scribled for Ladies were extant, at what time my hand was truly transported by my passion, a man should haply find some page worthy to be communicated unto idle and fond-doting youth, embabuinized with this furie. I ever write my letters in post-hast, and so rashly-head long, that howbeit I write intolerably ill, I had rather write with mine owne hand, than imploy another: for I find none that can follow me, and I never copy them over againe. I have accustomed those great persons that know me, to endure blots, blurs, dashes, and botches, in my letters, and a sheete without folding or margine. Those that cost me, either most labour or studie, are they that are least worth. When I once begin to traile them, it is a signe my mind is not upon them. I commonly begin without project: the first word begets the second. Our moderne letters are more fraught with borders, and prefaces, than with matter, as I had rather write two, than fold and make up one, which charge I commonly resigne to others: So likewise when the matter is ended, I would willingly give another the charge, to adde these long orations, offers, praiers, and imprecations, which we place at the end of them, and wish hartily, some new fashion would discharge us of them. As also to superscribe them with a legend of qualities, titles, and callings, wherein, lest I might have tripped, I have often times omitted writing, especially to men of Justice, Lawyers, and Financiers. So many innovations of offices, so difficult a dispensation and ordinance of divers names and titles of honour, which being so dearely bought, can neither be exchanged or forgotten without offence. I likewise find it gracelesse and idly-fond, to charge the front and inscription of the many bookes and pamphlets, which we daily cause to be imprinted with them.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

## THE FORTIETH CHAPTER

That the taste of goods or evils doth greatly depend  
on the opinion we have of them.



‘MEN’ (saith an ancient Greeke sentence) ‘are  
‘tormented by the opinions they have of  
‘things, and not by things themselves.’ It  
were a great conquest for the ease of our  
miserable humane condition, if any man  
could establish every where this true propo-  
sition. For if evils have no entrance  
into us, but by our judgement, it seemeth  
that it lieth in our power, either to contemne or turne them  
to our good. If things yeeld themselves unto our mercie,  
why should we not have the fruition of them, or apply them  
to our advantage? If that which we call evill and torment,  
be neither torment, nor evill, but that our fancie only gives it  
that qualitie, it is in us to change it: and having the choice  
of it, if none compell us, we are very fooles, to bandy for  
that partie, which is irkesome unto us: and to give infir-  
mities, indigence, and contempt, a sharpe and ill taste, if we  
may give them a good: And if fortune simply affoord us  
the matter, it lieth in us to give it the forme. Now that  
that which we terme evill, is not so of it selfe, or at least,  
such as it is, that it depends of us to give it another taste,  
and another countenance (for all comes to one) let us see  
whether it can be maintained. If the originall being of  
those things we feare, had the credit of it’s owne authoritie  
to lodge it selfe in us, alike and semblable would it lodge in  
all: For men be all of one kind, and except the most or  
least, they are furnished with like meanes to judge, and in-  
struments to conceive. But the diversitie of opinions, which  
we have of those things, doth evidently shew, that but by  
composition they never enter into us. Some one peradventure  
doth lodge them in himselfe, as they are in essence, but a  
thousand others give them a new being, and a contrarie.  
We accompt of death, of povertie, and of sorrow, as of our  
chiefest parts. Now death, which some of all horrible things



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XL  
 That the taste of goods or evils doth greatly depend on the opinion we have of them

call the most horrible, who knowes not, how others call it, the only haven of this lives-torments? the soveraigne good of nature? the only staie of our libertie? and the ready and common receipt of our evils? And as some doe fearefully-trembling, and senslesly-affrighted, expect her comming, others endure it more easily than life: And one complaineth of her facilitie:

*Mors utinam pavidos vitæ subducere nolles,  
 Sed virtus te sola daret!*

LUCAN. iv.  
 580.

O death! I would thou would'st let cowards live,  
 That resolv'd valour might thee only give!

But let us leave these glorious minds: Theodorus answered Lysimachus, who threatned to kill him: 'Thou shalt doe a great exploit to come to the strength of a Cantharides.' The greatest number of Philosophers are found to have either by designe prevented, or hastned and furthered their deaths. How many popular persons are seen brought unto death, and not to a simple death, but entermixt with shame, and sometimes with grievous torments, to embrace it with such an undaunted assurance; some through stubborne wilfulnesse, other some through a naturall simplicitie, in whom is nothing seene changed from their ordinarie condition; settling their domesticall affaires, recommending themselves unto their friends, preaching, singing, and entertaining the people: yea, and sometimes uttering words of jesting and laughter, and drinking to their acquaintance, as well as Socrates? One who was led to the gallowes, desired it might not be thorow such a street, for feare a Merchant should set a Serjant on his backe, for an old debt. Another wished the hang-man not to touch his throat, lest hee should make him sworne with laughing, because he was so ticklish. Another answered his confessor, who promised him he should sup that night with our Saviour in heaven, 'Goe thither your selfe to supper, for I use to fast a nights.' Another upon the Gibbet calling for drinke, and the hang-man drinking first, said, hee would not drinke after him, for feare hee should take the pox of him. Everie man hath heard the tale of the Piccard, who being upon the ladder ready to be throwen downe, there was a wench presented unto him, with this offer (as in some cases

# THE FIRST BOOKE

our law doth sometimes tolerate) that if hee would marrie her, his life should be saved, who after he had a while beheld her, and perceiving that she halted, said hastily, ‘Away, away, ‘good hang-man, make an end of thy busines, she limps.’ The like is reported of a man in Denmarke, who being adjudged to have his head cut off, and being upon the scaffold, had the like condition offered him, but refused it, because the wench offered him was jaw-falne, long cheekt, and sharpenosed. A young lad at Tholous, being accused of heresie, in all points touching his beleefe, referred himselfe wholly to his Masters faith, (a young scholar that was in prison with him) and rather chose to die, than hee would be perswaded his Master could erre. We reade of those of the Towne of Arras, at what time King Lewis the eleventh tooke it, that amongst the common people many were found, who rather than they would say, ‘God save the King,’ suffered themselves to be hanged. And of those base-minded jesters or buffons, some have beene seene, that even at the point of death, would never leave their jesting and scoffing. He whom the heads-man threw off from the Gallowes, cried out, ‘Row the ‘Gally,’ which was his ordinarie by-word. Another, who being at his last gaspe, his friends had laid him upon a pallet alongst the fire-side, there to breathe his last, the Physitian demanding where his grieve pained him? answered, ‘Betweene ‘the bench and the fire’: And the Priest to give him the last unction, seeking for his feet, which by reason of his sicknesse were shrunk up, he told him, ‘My good friend you ‘shal finde them at my legges ends, if you looke well.’ To another that exhorted him to recommend himselfe to God, he asked, ‘Who is going to him?’ And the fellow answering, ‘Your selfe shortly:’ ‘If it be his good pleasure, I would to God ‘it might be to morrow night,’ replied he: ‘Recommend but ‘your selfe to him,’ said the other, ‘and you shall quickly be ‘there’: ‘It is best then,’ answered he, ‘that my selfe carry mine ‘owne commendations to him.’ In the kingdome of Narsinga, even at this day their Priests wives are buried alive with the bodies of their dead husbands. All other wives are burnt at their husbands funerals, not only constantly, but cheerfully. When their King dieth, his wives, his concubines, his minions, together with al his officers and servants, which

CHAPTER  
XL

That the  
taste of goods  
or evils doth  
greatly de-  
pend on the  
opinion we  
have of  
them

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER

### XL

That the  
taste of goods  
or evils doth  
greatly de-  
pend on the  
opinion we  
have of  
them

make a whole people, present themselves so merrily unto the fire, wherein his body is burned, that they manifestly seeme to esteeme it as a great honour, to accompanie their deceased master to his ashes. During our last warres of Millaine, and so many takings, losses, miseries, and calamities of that Citie, the people impatient of so many changes of fortune, tooke such a resolution unto death, that I have heard my father say, he kept accompt of five and twentie chiefe housholders, that in one weeke made them-selves away: An accident which hath some affinitie with that of the Xanthians, who being besieged by Brutus, did pell-mell-headlong, men, women, and children precipitate them-selves into so furious a desire of death, that nothing can be performed to avoid death, which these did not accomplish to avoid life: So that Brutus had much adoe, to save a verie small number of them. Every opinion is of sufficient power to take hold of a man in respect of life. The first Article of that couragious oath, which the Countrie of Greece did sweare, and keepe, in the Median warre, was, that every particular man should rather change his life unto death, than the Persian lawes for theirs. What a world of people are daily seene in the Turkish warres, and the Græcians, more willing to embrace a sharpe, a bitter, and violent death, than to be uncircumcized and baptized? An example whereof no religion is incapable. The Kings of Castile having banished the Jewes out of their Countrie, King Iohn of Portugall for eight crownes a man, sold them a retreit in his dominion, for a certaine time, upon condition (the time expired) they should avoid, and he find them ships to transport them into Affrike. The day of their departure come, which past, it was expressed, that such as had not obeyed, should for ever remaine bond-slaves; ships were provided them, but very scarce and sparingly: And those which were imbarcked, were so rudely, churlishly, and villainously used, by the passengers and marriners; who besides infinite other indignities, loitred so long on the seas, now forward, now backward, that in the end, they had consumed all their victuals, and were forced, if they would keepe themselves alive, to purchase some of them, at so excessive a rate, and so long, that they were never set a shore, till they had

# THE FIRST BOOKE

brought them so bare, that they had nothing left them but their shirts. The newes of this barbarous inhumanitie being reported to those that were yet on land, most of them resolved to yeeld and continue bond-slaves: whereof some made a semblance to change their religion. Emanuel that immediately succeeded Iohn, being come to the Crowne, first set them at libertie, then changing his minde, commanded them to depart out of his dominions, and for their passages assigned them three ports. He hoped, as Bishop Osorius reporteth, (a Latine Historian of our ages, not to be despised) that the favor of the libertie, to which he had restored them, having failed to convert them unto Christianitie, the difficultie to commit themselves unto marriners and pyrates robberies, to leave a Countrie where they were settled with great riches, for to goe seeke unknownen and strange regions, would bring them into Portugall againe. But seeing all his hopes frustrate, and that they purposed to passe away, hee cut off two of the three ports he had promised them, that so the tedious distance and incommoditie of the passage might retaine some, or rather that he might have the meane to assemble them all together in one place, for a fitter opportunitie of the execution he intended, which was this. Hee appointed that all their children under fourteene yeares of age, should be taken from out the hands of their parents, and removed from their sight and conversation, to some place where they might be brought up, and instructed in our religion. He saith that this effect caused an horrible spectacle: The naturall affection betweene the fathers and the children; moreover the zeale unto their ancient faith, striving against this violent ordinance. Divers fathers and mothers were ordinarily seene to kill themselves, and with a more cruell example through compassion and love, to throw their young children into pitts and wells, thereby to shun the Law. The terme which he had prefixed them being expired, for want of other meanes, they yeelded unto thraldome. Some became Christians, from whose faith and race, even at this day (for it is an hundred yeares since) few Portugalls assure themselves; although custome, and length of time be much more forcible counsellors unto such mutations, than any other compulsion. In the Towne of Castelnaw Darry, more than fifty Albigeois, all heretikes, at

CHAPTER  
XL  
That the  
taste of goods  
or evils doth  
greatly de-  
pend on the  
opinion we  
have of  
them



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER

### XL

That the  
taste of goods  
or evils doth  
greatly de-  
pend on the  
opinion we  
have of  
them

Cic. *Tusc. Qu.*  
i.

one time, with a determined courage, suffred themselves to be burned alive, all in one same fire, before they would recant and disavow their opinions. *Quoties non modò ductores nostri, sed universi etiam exercitus, ad non dubiam mortem concurrerunt?* ‘How often have, not only our Leader’ (saith Tully) ‘but also our whole armies run roundly together to ‘an undoubted death?’ I have seene one of my familiar friends runne furiously on death, with such, and so deeply in his heart rooted affection, by divers visages of discourse, which I could never suppress in him, and to the first that offered it selfe masked with a lustre of honour, without apprehending any sharpe or violent end, therein to precipitate himselfe. We have many examples in our daies, yea in very children, of such as for feare of some slight incommoditie have yeelded unto death. And to this purpose saith an ancient Writer, what shall we not feare, if we feare that, which cowardise it selfe hath chosen for her retrait? Heere to huddle up a long bead-rowle of those of all sexes, conditions, sects, in most happy ages, which either have expected death most constantly, or sought for it voluntarily, and not only sought to avoid the evils of this life, but some, only to shun the sacietie of living any longer: and some, for the hope of a better condition elsewhere, I should never have done. The number is so infinite, that verily it would be an easier matter for me to reckon up those that have feared the same. Only this more. Pirro the Philosopher, finding himselfe upon a very tempestuous day in a boat, shewed them whom he perceived to be most affrighted through feare, and encouraged them by the example of an hog, that was amongst them, and seemed to take no care at all for the storme: Shall wee then dare to say, that the advantage of reason, whereat we seeme so much to rejoyce, and for whose respect we account our selves Lords and Emperours of all other creatures, hath bene infused into us for our torment? ‘What availeth the knowledge of things, if through them ‘we become more demisse?’ If thereby wee lose the rest and tranquillitie wherein we should be without them? and if it makes us of worse condition than was Pirrhos hog? Shall we employ the intelligence, heaven hath bestowed upon us for our greatest good, to our ruine? repugning natures

# THE FIRST BOOKE

desseigne and the universall order and vicissitude of things, which implieth that every man should use his instruments and meanes for his owne commoditie? Wel (will some tell me) let your rule fit you against death; but what will you say of indigence and necessitie? what will you also say of minde-grieving sorrow, which Aristippus, Hieronymus, and most of the wisest have judged the last evill? and those which denied the same in words, confessed the same in effect? Possidonium being extremely tormented with a sharpe and painfull sicknesse, Pompey came to see him, and excused himselfe he had chosen so unfit an houre to heare him discourse of Philosophy: ‘God forbid’ (answered Possidonium) ‘that ever paine should so farre usurpe upon me, as to hinder me from discoursing of so worthy a subject.’ And thereupon began to speake of the contempt of paine. But there whilst she plaied her part, and uncessantly pinched and urged him; gainst whom hee exclaimed: ‘Paine, doe what thou list, I shall never be drawne to say, that thou art an evill.’ That saying, which they would make of such consequence, what doth it inferre against the contempt of paine? it contends but for the word. And if the pangs thereof move him not there-whilst, why breakes he off his discourse for it? Why thinks he to worke a great exploit, not to call it an evill? All doth not consist in imagination. Heere we judge of the rest. It is assured learning that here doth play her part, our owne senses are Judges of it.

CHAPTER XL

That the taste of goods or evils doth greatly depend on the opinion we have of them

*Qui nisi sunt veri; ratio quoque falsa sit omnis.*

LUCR. iv. 487.

Which senses if they be not true,  
All reason's false, it must ensue.

Shall we make our skin beleieve, the stripes of a whip doe tickle it? and perswade our taste, that Aloes be wine of Graves? Pirrhos hog is here in our predicament. He is nothing danted at death, but if you beat him, he will grunt, erie and torment himselfe. Shall wee force the generall law of nature, which in all living creatures under heaven is seene to tremble at paine? The very trees seeme to groane at offences. Death is but felt by discourse, because it is the motion of an instant.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER

### XL

That the  
taste of goods  
or evils doth  
greatly de-  
pend on the  
opinion we  
have of  
them

*Aut fuit, aut veniet, nihil est præsentis in illa.*

Death hath come, or it will not misse ;  
But in it nothing present is.

OVID. *Epist.* *Morsque minus pænæ, quàm mora mortis habet.*

*Ariad.* 82.

Deaths pain's lesse, roundly acted,  
Than when death is protracted.

A thousand beasts, a thousand men, are sooner dead than threatned. Besides, what wee principally call feare in death, it is paine her customarie fore-runner. Neverthelesse if we must give credit to an ancient father, *Malam mortem non facit, nisi quod sequitur mortem.* 'Nothing, but what follows 'death, makes death to be evill.' And I might more truly say, that neither that which goeth before, nor that which commeth after, is no appurtenance of death, we falsely excuse our selves. And I find by experience, that it is rather the impatience of the imagination of death, that makes us impatient of the paine, and that we feele it two-fold grievous, forasmuch as it threats us to die. But reason accusing our weaknesse, to feare so sudden a thing, so unavoidable, so insensible ; we take this other more excusable pretence. All evils that have no other danger, but of the evill, we count them dangerlesse. The tooth-ach, the paine of the gowt, how grievous soever, because they kill not, who reckoneth them in the number of maladies ? Well, suppose that in death wee especially regard the paine : As also povertie hath nothing to be feared for, but what she casteth upon us through famine, thirst, cold, heat, and other miseries, it makes us feele and endure. So have we nothing to doe but with paine. I will willingly grant them, that it is the worst accident of our being. For, I am the man that hate and shun it as much as possible may be ; because hitherto (thanks be unto God) I have no commerce or dealing with her : But it is in our power, if not to dissanull, at least to diminish the same, through patience : And though the body should be moved thereat, yet to keepe the minde and reason in good temper. And if it were not so, who then hath brought vertue, valour, force, magnanimitie, and resolution into credit ? Where shall they play their part, if there be no more paine defied ? *Avida est periculi virtus,*

SEN. *Quar.*  
*Von.* cap. iv.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

‘Vertue is desirous of danger.’ If a man must not lie on the hard ground, armed at all assaies, to endure the heat of the scorching Sunne, to feed hungerly upon a horse, or an asse, to see himselfe mangled and cut in peeces, to have a bullet pluckt out of his bones, to suffer incisions, his flesh to be sticht up, cauterized, and searched, all incident to a martiall man; how shall we purchase the advantage and preheminance, which we so greedily seek after, over the vulgar sort? It is far from avoiding the evill and paines of it, as wise men say, that of actions equally good, one should most be wished to be done, wherein is most paine and griefe.

*Non enim hilaritate nec lascivia risu aut joco comite levitatis, sed sæpe etiam tristes firmitate et constantia sunt beati.* CIC. De Fin. ii.

‘For men are not happy by mirthfulnessse, or wantonnesse, or laughing, or jesting, which is the companion of lightnesse; but often, even those that are sorrowfull, through their strong heart and constancie.’ And therefore was it impossible to perswade our fathers, that conquests atchieved by maine-force, in the hazard of warre, were not more available and advantageous, than those obtained in all securitie by practices and stratagems.

*Lætius est, quoties magno sibi constat honestum.*

LUCAN, ix. 404.

Honesty makes chieftest cheare,  
When it doth cost it selfe most deare.

Moreover, this ought to comfort us, that naturally, if paine be violent, it is also short; if long, it is easie: *Si gravis, brevis; si longus, levis.* CIC. De Fin. ii. Epic.

‘If it be grievous, it is short; if it be long, it is light.’ Thou shalt not feele it over long; if thou feele it over much, it will either end it selfe, or end thee: All comes to one: If thou beare not it, it will beare thee away. *Memineris maximos morte finire, parvos multa habere intervalla requietis; mediocrium nos esse dominos: ut si tolerabiles sint, feramus: sin minus, è vita, quum ea non placeat, tanquàm è theatro exeamus.* ‘Remember the greatest are ended with death, the lesser have many pauses of rest; we are masters of the meane ones: so as if they be tolerable, we may beare them; if not, we may make an Exit from our life which doth not please, as from a stage.’ That which makes us endure paine with such impatience, is,



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XL  
That the taste of goods or evils doth greatly depend on the opinion we have of them

that we are not accustomed to take our chiefe contentment in the soule, and that we doe not sufficiently rely on her; who is the only, and soveraigne mistris of our condition. The body hath (except the least or most) but one course, and one byase. The soule is variable in all manner of formes, and rangeth to her selfe, and to her estate, whatsoever it be, the senses of the body, and all other accidents. Therefore must she be studied, enquired, and sought-after: and her powerfull springs and wards should be rowzed up. There is neither reason, nor prescription, nor force can availle against her inclination and choise. Of so infinit byases, that she hath in her disposition, let us allow her one sutable and fit to our rest and preservation: Then shall we not only be sheltered from all offence, but if it please her, also gratified and flattered of all grievances and evils. She indifferently makes profit of all; even errours and dreames, doe profitably bestead her, as a loyall matter, to bring us unto safetie and contentment. It may easily be seen, that the point of our spirit, is that which sharpneth both paine and pleasure in us. Beasts wanting the same, leave their free and naturall senses unto their bodies: and by consequence, single well-nigh in every kind, as they shew by the semblable application of their movings. If in our members we did not trouble the jurisdiction, which in that belongs unto them; it may be thought, we should be the better for it, and that nature hath given them a just and moderate temperature toward pleasure and toward paine. And it cannot chuse but be good and just, being equall and common. But since we have freed and alienated our selves from her rules, to abandon our selves unto the vagabond libertie of our fantasies: let us at least help to bend them to the most agreeing side. Plato feareth our sharp engaging unto paine and voluptuousnesse, forsomuch as he over-strictly tieth and bindeth the soule unto the body: I am rather opposit unto him, because it is sundred and loosed from it. Even as an enemy becommeth more furious when we flie from him, so doth paine grow more proud if it see us tremble under it. It will stoope and yeeld upon better compositions to him that shall make head against it. A man must oppose and bandy against it. In recoyling and giving ground, we call

# THE FIRST BOOKE

and draw on, the ruine threatning us. Even as the body is more steady and strong to a charge, if it stand stiffely to it, so is the soule. But let us come to examples properly belonging unto weak-backt men, as I am, where we shall find, that it is with paine, as with stones, which take either a higher or deeper colour, according to the foyle that is laid under them, and holdeth no other place in us than we give it. *Tantum doluerunt, quantum doloribus se inseruerunt.* ‘So much they grieved, as they interested themselves in griefes.’ We feele a dash of a chirurgions razor more than ten blows with a sword in the heat of fight. The painfull throwes of childbearing, deemed both by Physitians, and by the word of God to be verie great, and which our women passe with so many ceremonies, there are whole Nations that make no reckoning of them. I omit to speake of the Lacedemonian women; but come we to the Swizzers of our Infanterie, what change doe you perceiue in them? But that trudging and trotting after their husbands, to day you see them carrie the child about their necke, which but yesterday they bare in their wombe. And those counterfeite roguing Gyptians, whereof so many are daily seene amongst us, doe they not wash their children so soone as they are borne? and in the next River that comes to hand? Besides so many harlots, which daily steale their children in the delivery as in the conception. The beauteous and noble Lady of Sabinus, a Roman Patritian, for the interest of others, did alone, without any bodies helpe or assistance, and without noise or groning endure the bearing and deliverie of two twins. A simple lad of Lacedemon, having stolne a Fox (for they more feared the shame of their foolishnesse in stealing, than we feare the paine or punishment of mis-deeds) and hiding the same under his cloake, endured rather to have his guts gnawne out by her, than to discover himselfe. Another who offering incense at a sacrifice, suffered his flesh to burne to the bone by a coale falne into his sleeve, rather than he would trouble that sacred mysterie. And a great number have beene seene, for the only essay of vertue, following their institution, that at the age of seven yeares, without so much as changing their countenance, have indured to be whipped to death. And Cicero hath seene whole troupes, to beat one

CHAPTER  
XL

That the  
taste of goods  
or evils doth  
greatly de-  
pend on the  
opinion we  
have of  
them  
AUGUST.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XL  
 That the taste of goods or evils doth greatly depend on the opinion we have of them  
 Cic. *Tusc. Qu.* v.

another so long with their fists, with their feet, and with their teeth, till they have fainted and fallen downe halfe dead, before ever they would confesse to be overcome. *Nunquam naturam mos vinceret, est enim ea semper invicta, sed nos umbris, delitiis, otio, languore, desidia, animum in-fecimus: opinionibus maloque more delinitum mollivimus.* ‘Custome should never overcome nature, for she is still ‘invincible: but we have infected our minde with shadowes, ‘daintinesse, idlenesse, faint-heartednesse, slothfulnesse, and ‘have effeminated it, inveagled with opinions and evill ‘customes.’ Every man knows the story of Scevola, who being entred the enemies campe, with a full resolution to kill their Chieftaine, and having missed of his purpose, to checke his effect with a stranger invention, and to cleare his country, confessed unto Prosenna, (who was the King he intended to kill) not only his dessigne, but added moreover, that in his campe there were a great many Romanes, who had undertaken and sworne the verie same enterprise, and were confederates with him. And to make shew of his dread-lesse magnanimitie, having caused a pan of burning coales to be brought, he saw and suffred his right arme (in penance that it had not effected his project) to be parched and wel-nigh rosted-off: untill such time as his enemy himselfe, feeling a kind of remorse-full horror, commanded the fire to be caried away. What shall we say of him, that would not vouchsafe to leave, or so much as to interrupt the reading of his booke, whilst he had an incision made into him? And of him who resolved to skoffe and laugh, even in spight and contempt of the tortures which were inflicted upon him, so that the raging crueltie of the hangmen, that held him, and all the inventions of torments that could be devised, being redoubled upon him, one in the necke of another, gave him over? But he was a Philosopher. What? of one of Cæsars gladiators, who with a cheerefull and smiling countenance endured his wounds to be slit and sounded? *Quis mediocris gladiator ingemuit? Quis vultum mutavit unquam? Quis non modò stetit, verùm etiam decubuit turpiter? Quis cùm decubisset, ferrum recipere jussus, collum contraxit?* ‘What meane Fencer hath once groned? ‘Which of them hath once changed his countenance?

ib. ii.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

‘ Which of them not only hath stood up, but even falne  
 ‘ with shame? Which of them when he was downe, and was  
 ‘ willed to take his death, did once shrinke in his necke?’ But  
 let us joyne some women unto them. Who hath not heard of  
 her at Paris, which only to get a fresher hew of a new skin,  
 endured to have her face flead all over? There are some,  
 who being sound, and in perfit health, have had some teeth  
 puld-out, thereby to frame a daintier and more pleasing  
 voyce, or to set them in better order. How many examples  
 of contempt of paine or smart have we of that kind and  
 sex? What can they not doe? What will they not doe?  
 What feare they to doe? So they may but hope for some  
 amendment of their beautie?

CHAPTER  
 XL

That the  
 taste of goods  
 or evils doth  
 greatly de-  
 pend on the  
 opinion we  
 have of  
 them

*Vellere quis cura est albos à stirpe capillos,  
 Et faciem dempta pelle referre novam.*

TIBUL. i. *El.*  
 viii. 43.

Who take great care to root out their gray haire,  
 And skin flead-off a new face to repaire.

I have seene some swallow gravell, ashes, coales, dust,  
 tallow, candles, and for the-nonce, labour and toyle them-  
 selves to spoile their stomacke, only to get a pale-bleake  
 colour. To become slender in wast, and to have a straight  
 spagnolized body, what pinching, what girding, what cingling  
 will they not indure; Yea sometimes with yron-plates, with  
 whalebones, and other such trash, that their very skin, and  
 quicke flesh is eaten in and consumed to the bones; Whereby  
 they sometimes worke their owne death. It is common to  
 divers nations of our times, to hurt and gash themselves in  
 good earnest, to give credit to their words. And our King  
 reporteth sundrie examples, of what himselfe saw in Polonia,  
 and towards himselfe. But besides what I know to have by  
 some beene imitated in France; when I came from the  
 famous Parliament of Blois; I had a little before seene a  
 wench in Picardie to witnes the vehemencie of her promises,  
 and also her constancie, with the bodkin she wore in her  
 haire, to give her selfe foure or five thrusts in her arme,  
 which made her skin to crack and gush out bloud. The  
 Turkes are wont to wound and scarre themselves for their  
 Ladies sakes, and that the marke may the better appeare,  
 and continue the longer, they will presently lay fire upon



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER the cuttes; and to stanch the bloud, and better to forme  
 XL the cicatrice, they wil keepe it on, an incredible while.  
 That the Honest men that have seene it, have written the same, and  
 taste of goods sworne it unto me. And for ten Aspers you shall daily  
 or evils doth finde some amongst them, that will give themselves a deepe  
 greatly de- pend on the gash with a Scimitarie, either in their armes or thighs. I  
 opinion we am very glad witnesses are so ready at hand, where we have  
 have of most need of them: For, Christendome affordeth many.  
 them And after the example of our holy guide, there have beene  
 divers, who for devotion would needs beare the crosse. We  
 learne by a worthy testimonie of religion, that Saint Lewes  
 the King wore a haire-shirt, untill such time as he was so  
 aged, that his confessor gave him a dispensation for it; and  
 that every friday he caused his priests to beat his shoulders  
 with five little yron-chaines, which to that purpose were  
 ever caried with his nightgeare. William our last Duke  
 of Guienne, father to that Eleonore, who transferred that  
 Dutchy unto the houses of France and England, the last  
 ten or twelve yeares of his life, for penance-sake wore con-  
 tinually a corselet, under a religious habit. Foulkes Earle  
 of Aniou went to Jerusalem, there with a rope about his  
 necke, to be whipped by two of his servants, before our  
 Saviours sepulchre. Doe we not upon every good-friday,  
 in sundrie places, see a great number of men and women,  
 scourge and beat themselves so long, till they bruse and  
 teare their flesh, even to the bones? I have often seene it  
 my selfe, and that without enchantment; And some say  
 (for they are masked) there were some amongst them, who  
 for monie would undertake thereby to warrant other mens  
 religion, by a contempt of smart-full paine, so much the  
 greater, by how much the stings of devotion are of more  
 force, than those of covetousnes. Q. Maximus buried his  
 son who had beene Consull: Marcus Cato his, being elected  
 Pretor; and L. Paulus both his, within few daies, with so  
 cheerefull and settled a countenance, and without any shew  
 of sorrow. I have sometimes by way of jesting told one,  
 that he had confronted divine justice: For, the violent  
 death of three tall children of his, comming unto his eares  
 all upon one day, and sent him, as it may be imagined, as  
 a great scourge: he was so farre from mourning, that he

# THE FIRST BOOKE

rather tooke it as a favour and singular gratification at Gods hand. I doe not follow these monstrous humors. Yet have I lost two or three my selfe, whilst they were young and at nurce, if not without apprehension of sorrow; yet without continuance of griefe. And ‘there is no accident woundeth men deeper, or goeth so nere the heart, as the ‘losse of children.’ I see divers other common occasions of affliction, which were I assailed by them, I should scarcely feele. And I have contemned and neglected some, when it hath pleased God to visit me with them, on which the world setteth so ugly and balefull a countenance, that I hardly dare boast of them without blushing. *Ex quo intelligitur, non in natura, sed in opinione esse agretudinem.* ‘Whereby ‘it is understood, that griefe consisteth not in nature, but ‘opinion.’ Opinion is a power-full, bould, and unmeasurable party. Who doth ever so greedily search after restfull ease and quietnes, as Alexander and Cæsar have done after difficulties and unquietnesse? Terez, the father of Sitalcez, was wont to say, that when he had no warres, hee thought there was no difference betweene him and his horse-keeper. Cato the Consull, to assure himselfe of certaine townes in Spaine, having only interdicted some of their inhabitants to weare armes, many of them killed themselves: *Ferox gens nullam vitam rati sine armis esse.* ‘A fierce ‘kinde of people, that thought there was no life without ‘armes.’ How many know wee who have abandoned and forsaken the pleasure of an ease-full and quiet life in their houses, and to live with their friends and acquaintance; to follow the toyling-horror of unfrequented deserts, and that yeelded and cast themselves unto the abjectnesse, contempt and vilifying of the world, wherewith they have so pleased themselves, as nothing more; Cardinall Boromeus, who died lately at Milane, in the midst of the pleasures and debawches to which his Nobilitie, and the great riches he possessed, enticed him, and the ayre of Italy afforded him, and his youth allured him, did ever keep himselfe in so an austere forme of life, that the same gowne which served him in Summer he wore in winter. He never lay but upon straw; the houres which he might conveniently spare from his charge, he bestowed in continual study, ever kneeling, and

CHAPTER  
XL  
That the  
taste of goods  
or evils doth  
greatly de-  
pend on the  
opinion we  
have of  
them

CIC. *Tusc. Qu.*  
iii.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XL  
That the taste of goods or evils doth greatly depend on the opinion we have of them

having a smal quantitie of bread and water by his bookes side, which was all the provision for his repast, and time he employed in study. I know some who wittingly have drawne both profit and preferment from cuckoldrie, the only name whereof is so yrkesome and bail-ful to so many men. If sight be not the most necessarie of our senses, at least is it the most pleasing: the most plausible and profitable of our members, seeme those that serve to beget us: notwithstanding divers have mortally hated them, only because they were over much amiable, and for their worths-sake have rejected them. So thought he of his eies, that voluntarily put them out. The most common and soundest part of men, holdeth multitude of children to be a signe of great happinesse and comfort; So do I, and many others, the want of them. And when Thales was demanded Wherfore he did not marrie, he answered, because he would leave no issue or line of himselfe behinde him. That our opinion endeareth and increaseth the price of things, it is scene in a great number of them, which we do not regard to esteeme them; but for our use. And we neither consider their qualities nor utilities, but only our cost to recover and attaine them; as if it were a part of their substance; and we call that worth in them, not what they bring us, but what we bring to them. According as it weigheth, and is of consequence, so it serveth. Wherupon I perceive, we are thriftie husbands of what we lay out. Our opinion never suffers it to run a false gallop. The price giveth a Diamond his title, difficultie to vertue, paine unto devotion, and sharpnesse unto Physicke. Such a one to come unto povertie, cast those fewe crownes he had into the same sea, wherin so many others, with such carke, danger, and care, on all parts seeke to fish for riches. Epicurus saith, 'that to be rich is no ease, but a charge of affaires.' Verily, it is not want, but rather plentie that causeth avarice. I will speake of mine owne experience, concerning this subject. I have lived in three kinds of condition, since I came out of my infancie. The first time, which continued well-nigh twentie yeares, I have past it over, as one who had no other means but casual, and depending from the direction and helpe of others; without any certaine maintenance, or regular prescription. My expences

# THE FIRST BOOKE

were so much the more carelessly layed out, and lavishly employed, by how much more they wholly depended on fortunes rashnesse and exhibition. I never lived so well at ease: my fortune was never to finde my friends purse shut: besides which, I was to frame my selfe to all necessities: the care I tooke to pay every man at his prefixed day, which a thousand times they have prolonged, seeing the care I tooke to satisfie them. So that I had gotten unto my selfe the credit of a thriftie kind of good husbandrie, though it were something shifting and deceitful. I do naturally feele a kind of pleasing contentment in paying of my debts, as if I rid my selfe of a burthenous weight, and free my selfe from the yoake of bondage and ingratitude. Besides, me thinks I feele a kinde of delight, that tickleth me to the quick, in performing a lawfully just action, and contenting of others. I except payments that require delayes, covenants, and after reckonings: for, if I finde any body that will undertake them, I blushingly and injuriously deferre them as long as I can, for feare of that altercation or wrangling, to which my humor and manner of speech is altogether incompatible. There is nothing I hate more than driving of bargaines: It is a meere commerce of dodging and impudencie. After an houres debating and paltring, both parties will goe from their words and oaths for the getting or saving of a shilling: yet did I borrow with great disadvantage. For, having no heart to borrow before others, or by word of mouth, I would adventure it upon a peece of paper, which with some hath no great power to move or force to perswade, and which greatly helps to refuse, I was wont to commit the successe of my wants more freely and more carelessly unto fortune, than I have done since unto my wit and providence. Most good husbands thinke it strange and horrible to live on such uncertainties, but they remember not, that most men in the world live so. How many good and well-borne men have heretofore, and are daily seene to neglect and leave at six and seven, their patrimonies and certaine goods, to follow and seeke after court-holy water, and wavering-favours of Princes and of fortune; Cæsar engaged and endebted himselfe above a million of gold, more than he was worth, to become Cæsar. And how many merchants and poore

## CHAPTER

### XL

That the taste of goods or evils doth greatly depend on the opinion we have of them



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER beginners, set up and begin their traffike by the sale of their  
 XL farmes or cottages which they venter to the Indias?

That the  
 taste of goods  
 or evils doth  
 greatly de-  
 pend on the  
 opinion we  
 have of  
 them

CATUL. *Epig.*  
 iv. 18.

*Tot per impotentia freta ;*

In so great scarcitie of devotion, we have thousands of  
 Colleges, which passe the time very conveniently, daily gaping  
 and expecting from the liberalitie of the heavens, what they  
 must dine withall to morrow. Secondly ; they consider not,  
 that this certaintie on which they ground themselves, is not  
 much lesse uncertaine and hazardous, than hazard it selfe. I  
 see miserie as neere beyond two thousand crownes rent, as if it  
 were hard at hand. For, besides that fortune hath many-many  
 meanes to open a hundred gaps for povertie to enter at, even  
 through the thickest of our riches, and that often there is  
 no meane betweene the highest and lowest fortune.

PROV. SENEC.  
 f.

*Fortuna vitrea est : tum, quum splendet, frangitur.*

Fortune is glasse-like, brittle as 'tis bright :  
 Light-gon, Light-broken, when it lends best light.

ERAS. *Chil.* ii.  
 cent. iv. eid.  
 63.

And to turne all our defences, and raisings of high walles  
 topsie-turvie : I find that want and necessitie is by diverse  
 or different causes, as ordinarily seene to accompanie and  
 follow those that are rich in goods, as those that have none  
 at all : and that peradventure it is somewhat lesse incom-  
 modious, when it is alone, than when it meeteth with riches :  
 They rather come from order, than from receipt : *Faber est*  
*sux quisque fortunæ.* 'Every man is the forger of his owne  
 'fortune.' And me thinkes that a rich man, who is needy,  
 full of businesse, carke and toyle, and troubled in minde, is  
 more miserable, than he that is simply poore. *In divitiis*  
*inopes, quod genus egestatis gravissimum est.* 'In their  
 'abundance indigent, which is the most grievous kinde of  
 'indigence.' The richest and greatest princes are ordinarily  
 urged by povertie and need unto extreme necessities. For,  
 can any be more extreme, than thereby to become Tyrants,  
 and unjust usurpers of their subjects goods. My second  
 manner of life hath beene to have monie ; which when I had  
 once fingred, according to my condition I sought to hoord  
 up some against a rainie day ; esteeming that it was no  
 having, unlesse a man had ever somewhat besides his ordinarie

SEN. *Epist.*  
 lxxiv. p.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

expences in possession : and that a man should not trust that good, which he must live in hope to receive ; and that, be his hope never so likely, hee may many wayes be prevented. For, I would say unto my selfe ; what if I should be surprised by this chance, or that accident ? What should I doe then ? And in pursuit of these vaine and vicious imaginations, I endeavoured by hooke or crooke, and by wile or wit to provide by this superfluous sparing for all inconveniences that might happen : And I could answer him, that would alleage the number of inconveniences to be over infinit ; which if they followed not all men, they accompanied some, and haply the greatest number. An apprehension which I did not passe without some painfull care. I kept the matter secret, and I (that dare say so much of my selfe) would never speake of my money but falsly ; as others doe, who being rich, would seeme to be poore, or being poore would appeare rich : and dispenche with their conscience, never to witnesse sincerely what they are worth. Oh ridiculous and shamefull prudence. Did I travell any where ? me thought I was never sufficiently provided ; and the more I had laden my selfe with coine, the more I had also burthened my selfe with feare : sometimes of my wayes-safetie, othertimes of their trust that had the charge of my sumpters and baggage, whereof as some others that I know, me thought I was never thoroughly assured, except it were still in my sight. Left I my keyes or my purse behind me ? how many suspitions and thornie imaginations, and which is worse, incommunicable, did uncessantly haunt me ? My minde was ever on my halfe-penny ; my thoughts ever that way. The summe being rightly cast, there is ever more paine in keeping, than in getting of monie. If I did not altogether so much as I say, I at the least endeavoured to doe it. Of commoditie I had little or nothing. To have more meanes of expences, is ever to have increase of sorrow. For (as said Bion) ‘The hairie man doth grieve as much as the bald, if he have his ‘haire pulled out.’ And after you are once accustomed, and have fixed your thoughts upon a heape of monie, it is no longer at your service ; you dare not diminish it ; it is a building, which if you touch or take any part from it, you will thinke it will all fall. Necessitie must first pinch you

## CHAPTER

### XL

That the taste of goods or evils doth greatly depend on the opinion we have of them

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER

XL

That the  
taste of goods  
or evils doth  
greatly de-  
pend on the  
opinion we  
have of  
them

by the throat, and touch you neere, before you will lay hands on it. And I should sooner pawne my clothes, or sell my horse, with lesse care and compulsion, than make a breach into that beloved purse, which I kept in store. But the danger was, that a man can hardly prefix any certaine limits unto his desire (they are hard to be found in things a man deemeth good) and continue at one stay in sparing: A man shall ever encrease this heape, and augment it from one number to another; yea so long, till he basely and niggardly deprive himselfe of the enjoying of his owne goods, and wholly fix it on the safe-keeping of them, and never use them. According to this kind of usage, those are the richest people of the world, that have the charge of keeping the gates and walles of a rich Cittie. Every monied man is covetous, according to mine opinion. Plato marshalleth this humane or corporall goods; health, beautie, strength, riches: 'And riches,' (saith he,) 'are not blind, but cleere-seeing, if they be illuminated by wisdom.' Dionysius the younger, plaid a notable part; who being advertised, that one of his Siracusans, had hidden a certaine treasure, under the ground, commanded him to bring it unto him, which he did, reserving secretly one part of it unto himselfe, with which hee removed his dwelling unto another Citie, where having lost the humor of hoarding up of treasure, began to live a spending and riotous kinde of life: which Dionysius hearing, commanded the remainder of his treasure, and which he had taken from him, to be restored unto him; saying, 'That sithence he had learned how to make use of 'it, hee did most willingly redeliver the same unto him.' I was some yeares of the same humour: I wot not what good Demon did most profitably remove me from it, like to the Siracusan, and made me to neglect my sparing. The pleasure I apprehended of a farre and chargeable journey, having overthrowne this foolish imagination in me; From which I am falne into a third kinde of life (I speake what I thinke of it) assuredly much more pleasing and formall: which is, that I measure my garment according to my cloth, and let my expences goe together with my comming in; sometimes the one, other-whilst the other exceeds: But they are never farre a sunder. I live from hand to mouth,

# THE FIRST BOOKE

from day to day, and have I but to supply my present and  
 ordinarie needs, I am satisfied : As for extraordinarie wants,  
 all the provisions of the world will not suffice them. And  
 it is folly to expect that fortune will ever sufficiently arme  
 us against her selfe. It is with our owne weapons that we  
 must combat her. Casuall armes will betray us, when we  
 shall have most need of them. If I lay up anything, it is  
 for the hope of some imployment at hand, and not to  
 purchase lands, whereof I have no need, but pleasure and  
 delight. *Non esse cupidum, pecunia est : non esse emacem,*  
*vectigal est.* 'It is currant coine, not to be covetous : it is

CHAPTER  
 XL  
 That the  
 taste of goods  
 or evils doth  
 greatly de-  
 pend on the  
 opinion we  
 have of  
 them

CIC. *Parad.*  
*ult.*

'a thriftie income, not to be still buying.' I am neither  
 possessed with feare, that my goods shall faile me, nor with  
 desire they should encrease and multiply. *Divitiarum lib.*  
*fructus est in copia : Copiam declarat satietas.* 'The fruit  
 of riches is in plentie : sacietie content with enough,  
 approves that plentie.' And I singularly gratifie my selfe  
 this correction came upon me in an age naturally enclined  
 to covetousnesse, and that I am free from that folly so  
 common and peculiar to old men, and the most ridiculous  
 of all humane follies. Feraulez who had passed through  
 both fortunes, and found, that encrease of goods, was no  
 accrease of appetite, to drinke, to eat, to sleepe, or to embrace  
 his wife ; and who on the other side felt heavily on his  
 shoulders, the importunitie of ordering and directing his  
 Oeconomicall affaires, as it doth on mine, determine with  
 himselfe to content a poore young man, his faithfull friend,  
 greedily gaping after riches, and frankly made him a present  
 donation of all his great and excessive riches ; as also of  
 those, he was likely everie day to get by the liberalitie and  
 bountie of his good master Cyrus, and by warre : alwayes  
 provided, hee should undertake to entertaine and finde him  
 honestly, and in good sort, as his guest and friend. In  
 which estate they lived afterward most happily, and mutually  
 content with the change of their condition.

Loe heare a part, I could willingly find in my heart to  
 imitate. And I much commend the fortune of an old prelate,  
 whom I see, to have so clearely given over his purse, his  
 receipts, and his expences, now to one of his chosen servants,  
 and now to another, that he hath lived many yeares as



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER ignorant of his houshold affaires, as any stranger. The confidence in others honesty, is no light testimonie of ones owne integritie: therefore doth God willingly favour it. And for his regard, I see no houshold order, neither more worthily directed, nor more constantly managed than his. Happy is that man, that hath so proportionably directed his estate, as his riches may discharge and supply the same, without care or encombrance to himselfe; and that neither their consultation or meetings may in any sort interrupt other affaires, or disturbe other occupations, which he followeth, more convenient, more quiet, and better agreeing with his heart. Therefore doth ease and indigencie depend from every mans owne opinion; and wealth and riches no more than glorie or health, have either more preheminance or pleasure, than he who possesseth them, lendeth them. Every man is either well or ill, according as he findes himselfe. Not he whom another thinkes content, but he is content indeed, that thinkes he is so himselfe: And only in that, opinion giveth it selfe essence and veritie. Fortune doth us neither good nor ill: She only offereth us the seed and matter of it, which our minde, more powerfull than she, turneth and applieth as best it pleaseth: as the efficient cause and mistris of condition, whether happy or unhappy. Externall accessions take both savor and colour from the internall constitution: As garments doe not warme us by their heat, but by ours, which they are fit to cover and nourish: he that with clothes should cover a cold body, should draw the very same service from them by cold. So is snow and yce kept in summer. Verily as unto an idle and lazie body, study is but a torment; abstinence from wine to a drunkard, is a vexation; frugalitie is a harts sorrow to the luxurious; and exercise molesteth an effeminate body: so is it of all things else. Things are not of themselves so irksome, nor so hard, but our basenes, and weaknesse maketh them such. To judge of high and great matters, a high and great minde is required; otherwise we attribute that vice unto them, which indeed is ours. A straight oare being under water seemeth to be crooked. It is no matter to see a thing, but the matter is how a man doth see the same. Well, of so many discourses, which diversly perswade men to

# THE FIRST BOOKE

contemne death, and patiently to endure paine, why shall we not finde some one to make for our purpose ; And of so severall and many kinds of imaginations, that have perswaded the same unto others; why doth not every man apply one unto himselfe, that is most agreeing with his humor ; If he cannot digest a strong and abstersive drug, for to remove his evill, let him at least take a lenitive pill to ease the same. *Opinio est quædam effæminata ac levis : nec in dolore magis, quam eadem in voluptate : quâ, quum liquescimus fluimusque mollitia, apud aculeum sine clamore ferre non possumus.* CHAPTER XL That the taste of goods or evils doth greatly depend on the opinion we have of them CIC. Tusc. Qu. ii.

*Totum in eo est, ut tibi imperes.* ‘There is a certaine ‘effeminate and light opinion, and that no more in sorrow, ‘than it is in pleasure, whereby when we melt and run over ‘in daintie tendernes, we cannot abide to be stung of a Bee, ‘but most rore and crie out. This is the totall summe of ‘all, that you be master of your selfe.’ Moreover, a man doth not escape from Philosophy, by making the sharpnes of paines, and humane weaknesse to prevaile so far beyond measur : for, she is compelled to cast her selfe over againe unto these invincible replications, If it be bad to live in necessitie, at least there is no necessitie, to live in necessitie.

No man is long time ill, but by his owne fault. He that hath not the heart to endure neither life nor death, and that will neither resist nor run away, what shall a man doe to him ?

## THE FORTY-FIRST CHAPTER

That a man should not communicate his glorie.



F all the follies of the world, the most universall, and of most men received, is the care of reputation, and study of glorie, to which we are so wedded, that we neglect, and cast-off riches, friends, repose, life and health (goods effectuell and substantiall) to follow that vaine image, and idlie-simple voice, which hath neither body, nor hold-fast.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XLI

That a man  
should not  
communicate  
his glorie

TASS. *Gier. c.*  
xiv.

*La fama, ch'inuaghisce a un dolce suono  
Gli superbi mortali, et par si bella,  
E un echo, un sogno, anzi d'un sogno un ombra,  
Ch'ad ogni vento si dilegua e sgombra.*

Fame that enveagl's high aspiring men  
With her harmonious sound, and seemes so faire,  
An Eccho is, a dreame, dreames shadow rather,  
Which flies and fleets as any winde doth gather.

CIC. *Pro Art.*  
*Po.*

And of mens unreasonable humors, it seemeth, that the best philosophers doe most slowly, and more unwillingly cleare themselves of this, than of another: it is the most peevish, the most forward, and the most opinative. *Quia etiam bene proficientes animos tentare non cessat.* 'Because it 'ceaseth not to tempt even those Mindes that profit best.' There are not many whereof reason doth so evidently condemne vanitie, but it is so deeply rooted in us, as I wot not whether any man could ever clearly discharge himselfe of it. When you have alleaged all the reasons you can, and beleaved all to disavow and reject her, she produceth contrarie to your discourses, so intestine inclination, that you have small hold against her. For (as Cicero saith,) 'Even those that oppugne her, will neverthesse have the 'bookes they write against her, to beare their names upon 'their fronts, endeavoring to make themselves glorious by 'despising of glorie.' All other things fall within the compasse of commerce: we lend our goods, we employ our lives, if our friends stand in need of us: But seldome shall we see a man communicate his honour, share his reputation, and impart his glorie unto others. Catulus Luctatius in the warres against the Cymbres, having done the utmost of his endeavours to stay his souldiers that fled before their enemies, put himselfe amongst the run-awaies, and dissembled to bee a coward, that so they might rather seeme to follow their Captaine, than flie from the enemy: This was a neglecting and leaving off his reputation, to conceale the shame and reproach of other. When Charles the fifth passed into Provence, the yeare a thousand five hundred thirtie seven, some are of opinion, that Anthony de Leva, seeing the Emperor his master resolutely obstinate to undertake that voyage, and deeming it wonderfully glorious, maintained

# THE FIRST BOOKE

neverthelesse the contrarie, and discourseled him from it, to the end all the honour and glorie of this counsell might be attributed unto his Master; and that it might be said, his good advice and fore-sight to have beene such, that contrarie to all mens opinions, he had atchieved so glorious an enterprise: Which was, to honour and magnifie him at his owne charges. The Thracian Ambassadors comforting Achileonida the Mother of Brasidas, for the death of her son, and highly extolling and commending him, said, he had not left his equall behind him. She refused this private commendation, and particular praise, assigning it to the publike state. ‘Doe not tell me that’ (quoth she,) ‘For I knowe the Cittie of Sparta hath many greater, and more valiant Citizens than he was.’ At the battell of Crecy, Edward the blacke Prince of Wales, being yet very young, had the leading of the vant-gard: The greatest and chiefe violence of the fight, was in his quarter: The Lords and Captains that accompanied him, perceiving the great danger, sent unto King Edward the Princes father, to come and help them: which when he heard, he enquired what plight his sonne was in, and how he did, and hearing that he was living, and on horse-backe; ‘I should’ (quoth he) ‘offer him great wrong to goe now, and deprive him of the honour of this combats victorie, which he already hath so long sustained; what danger soever there be in it, it shall wholly be his’: and would neither goe nor send unto him: knowing, that if he had gone, or sent, it would have beene said, that without his ayd all had beene lost, and that the advantage of this exploit would have beene ascribed unto him. *Semper enim quod postremum adjectum est, id rem totam videtur traxisse.* ‘For, evermore that which was last added, seemes to have drawne on the whole matter.’ In Rome many thought, and it was commonly spoken, that the chieftest glorious deeds of Scipio, were partly due unto Lælius, who notwithstanding did ever advance the greatnesse, further the glorie, and second the renowne of Scipio, without any respect of his owne. And Theopompus King of Sparta, to one who told him that the common-wealth should subsist and continue still, forsomuch as he could command so well: ‘No,’ said he, ‘it is rather, because the people

CHAPTER  
XLI  
That a man  
should not  
communicate  
his glorie



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER 'know so well how to obey.' As the women that succeeded  
XLI in the Peeredomes of France, had (notwithstanding their  
That a man sex) right to assist, and privilege to plead in cases appertain-  
should not ing to the jurisdictions of Peeres: So the Ecclesiasticall  
communicate Peeres, notwithstanding their profession and function, were  
his glorie bound to assist our Kings in their warres, not only with their  
friends, servants, and tenants, but in their owne person.  
The Bishop of Beauvais, being with Philip Augustus in the  
battell of Bovines, did very courageously take part with him  
in the effect; but thought hee should not be partaker of the  
fruit and glorie of that bloody and violent exercise. He over-  
came, and forced that day many of the enemies to yeeld whom  
he delivered unto the first gentleman hee met withall, to rifle,  
to take them prisoners, or at their pleasure to dispose of them.  
Which he also did with William Earle of Salisbury, whom  
he delivered unto the Lord Iohn of Nesle, with a semblable  
subtletie of conscience, unto this other. He desired to fell  
and strike downe a man, but not to wound or hurt him: and  
therefore never fought but with a great club. A man in my  
time being accused to the King, to have laid violent hands  
upon a Priest, denied it very stoutly, forsomuch as he  
had only thumped and trampled him with his feet.

## THE FORTY-SECOND CHAPTER

Of the inequalitye that is betweene us.



PLUTARKE saith in some place, 'That he  
' findes no such great difference betweene  
' beast and beast, as he findeth diversitie  
' betweene man and man.' He speaketh  
of the sufficiencie of the minde, and of  
internall qualities. Verily I finde Epami-  
nondas so farre (taking him as I suppose  
him) from some that I know (I meane  
capable of common sense) as I could finde in my heart to  
endeare upon Plutarke; and say there is more difference  
betweene such and such a man, than there is diversitie  
betweene such a man, and such a beast.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

*Hem vir viro quid præstat !*

O Sir, how much hath one,  
Another man out-gone !

TER. *Phor.* act CHAPTER  
v. sc. 3. XLII

Of the in-  
equalitie that  
is betweene  
us

And that there be so many degrees of spirits, as there are steps betweene heaven and earth, and as innumerable. But concerning the estimation of men, it is marvell, that except our selves, no one thing is esteemed but for it's proper qualities. We commend a horse, because he is strong and nimble,

—*volucrum*

*Sic laudamus equum, facili cui plurima palma  
Fervet, et exultat rauco victoria circo.*

IUVEN. *Sat.*  
viii. 57.

We praise the horse, that beares most bells with flying,  
And triumphs most in races, hoarse with crying,

and not for his furniture: a grey-hound for his swiftnesse, not for his collar: a hawke for her wing, not for her cranes or bells. Why do we not likewise esteeme a man for that which is his owne? He hath a goodly traine of men following him, a stately pallace to dwell in, so great credit amongst men; and so much rent comming in: Alas, all that is about him, and not in him. No man will buy a pig in a poke. If you cheapen a horse, you will take his saddle and clothes from him, you will see him bare and abroad: or if he be covered as in old times they wont to present them unto Princes to be sold, it is only his least necessarie parts, lest you should amuse your selfe to consider his colour, or breadth of his crupper; but chiefly to view his legs, his head, his eyes, and his foot, which are the most remarkable parts, and above all to be considered and required in him.

*Regibus hic mos est, ubi equos mercantur, apertos  
Inspiciunt, ne si facies, ut sæpe, decora  
Molli fulta pede est, emptorem inducat hiantem,  
Quod pulchræ chines, breve quod caput, ardua cervix.*

HOR. i. *Sat.*  
ii. 86.

This is Kings manner, when they horses buy,  
They see them bare, lest if, as oft we try,  
Faire face have soft hooves, gull'd the buyer be,  
They buttockes round, short head, high crest may see.

When you will esteeme a man, why should you survey him all wrapt, and enveloped? He then but sheweth us

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XLII  
Of the in-  
equalitye that  
is betweene  
us

those parts which are no whit his owne: and hideth those from us, by which alone his worth is to be judged. It is the goodnesse of the sword you seeke after, and not the worth of the scabbard; for which peradventure you would not give a farthing, if it want his lynyng. A man should be judged by himselfe, and not by his complements. And as an Ancient saith very pleasantly: Doe you know wherefore you esteeme him tall? You account the height of his pattens: The Base is no part of his stature: Measure him without his stilts. Let him lay aside his riches and externall honours, and shew himselfe in his shirt. Hath he a body proper to his functions, sound and cheerefull? What minde hath he? Is it faire, capable and unpolluted, and happily provided with all her necessarie parts? Is shee riche of her owne, or of others goods? Hath fortune nothing of hers to surway therein? If broad-waking she wil looke upon a naked sword: If shee care not which way her life goeth from her, whether by the mouth, or by the throat; whether it be settled, equable, and contented: It is that a man must see and consider, and thereby judge the extreme differences that are betweene us: Is he

HOR. ii. Sat.  
vii. 83.

—*sapiens, sibi que imperiosus,  
Quem neque pauperies, neque mors, neque vincula terrent,  
Responsare cupidinibus, contemnere honores  
Fortis, et in seipso totus teres atque rotundus,  
Externi ne quid valeat per leve morari,  
In quem manca ruit semper fortuna?*—

A wise man, of himselfe commander high,  
Whom want, nor death, nor bands can terrifie,  
Resol'd t' affront desires, honors to scorne,  
All in himselfe, close, round, and neatly-borne,  
As nothing outward on his smooth can stay,  
Gainst whom still fortune makes a lame assay.

Such a man is five hundred degrees beyond kingdomes and principalities: Himselfe is a kingdome unto himselfe.

PLAU. Trin.  
act ii. sc. 2.

*Sapiens pol ipse fingit fortunam sibi.*

Trust me, who beares a wise mans name,  
His fortune to himselfe may frame.

What is there else for him to wish for?

# THE FIRST BOOKE

—*nónne videmus*

*Nil aliud sibi naturam latrare, nisi ut quoi  
Corpore sejunctus dolor absit, mente fruatur,  
Iucundo sensu cura semotus metuque?*

See we not nature nothing else doth barke  
Unto her-selfe, but he, whose bodies barke  
Is free from paines-touch, should his minde enjoy,  
Remo'd from care and feare, with sense of joy?

LUCR. ii. 16. CHAPTER  
XLII

Of the in-  
equalitie that  
is betweene  
us

Compare the vulgar troupes of our men unto him, stupide,  
base, servile, wavering, and continually floting on the  
tempestuous Ocean of divers passions, which tosse and  
retosse the same, wholly depending of others: There is  
more difference, than is betweene heaven and earth, and yet  
such is the blindnesse of our custome, that we make little or  
no account of it. Whereas, if we consider a Cottager and a  
King, a noble and a handy-crafts man, a magistrate and a  
private man, a rich man and a poore; an extreme disparitie  
doth immediatly present it selfe unto our eies, which, as a  
man may say, differ in nothing, but in their clothes. In  
Thrace, the King was after a pleasant manner distinguished  
from his people, and which was much endeared: He had a  
religion apart: a God severall unto himselfe, whom his  
subjects might no waies adore: It was Mercurie: And he  
disdained their gods, which were Mars, Bacchus, and Diana;  
yet are they but pictures, which make no essential dissem-  
blance. For, as enterlude-plaiers, you shal now see them on  
the stage, play a King, an Emperor, or a Duke, but they  
are no sooner off the stage, but they are base rascals, vaga-  
bond abjects, and porterly hirelings, which is their naturall  
and originall condition: Even so the Emperor, whose  
glorious pomp doth so dazle you in publike;

*Scilicet et grandes viridi cum luce smaragdi  
Auro includuntur, teriturque Thalassina vestis  
Assidue, et Veneris sudorem exercita potat.*

LUCR. iv. 117.

Great emerald's with their grasse-greene-light in gold  
Are clos'd, nor long can marriage linnen hold,  
But worne with use and heat  
of Venerie drink's the sweat.

View him behinde the curtaine, and you see but an  
ordinarie man, and peradventure more vile, and more seely,



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XLII than the least of his subjects. *Ille beatus introrsum est ;*  
 Of the in- *istius bracteata felicitas est.* 'One is inwardly happy ;  
 equalitie that 'anothers felicitie is plated and guilt-over.' Cowardise,  
 is betweene irresolution, ambition, spight, anger, and envie, move and  
 us worke in him as in another :

SEN. *Epist.* cxv.

*Non enim gazæ, neque consularis  
 Summovet lictor, miseros tumultus  
 Mentis et curas laqueata circum  
 —Tecta voluntas :*

HOR. ii. *Od.*  
 xvi. 9.

Nor treasures, nor Maires officers remove  
 The miserable tumults of the minde,  
 Or cares that lie about, or flie above  
 Their high-roof't houses with huge beames combinde,

And feare, and care, and suspect, haunt and follow him, even  
 in the middest of his armed troupes.

LUCR. ii. 46.

*Revera que metus hominum, curæque sequaces,  
 Nec metuunt sonitus armorum, nec fera tela,  
 Audacterque inter reges, rerumque potentes  
 Versantur, neque fulgorem reverentur ab auro.*

Indeed mens still-attending cares and feare,  
 Nor armor's clashing, nor fierce weapons feare,  
 With Kings converse they boldly, and Kings peeres,  
 Fearing no lightning that from gold appears.

Doth the ague, the megrim, or the gout spare him more  
 than us? When age shall once seize on his shoulders, can  
 then the tall yeomen of his guard discharge him of it?  
 When the terror of ruthles-balefull death shall assaile him,  
 can he be comforted by the assistance of the gentlemen of  
 his chamber? If he chance to be jealous or capricious, will  
 our lowting-curtzies, or putting-off of hatts, bring him in  
 tune againe? His bedstead enchased all with gold and  
 pearles hath no vertue to allay the pinching pangues of  
 the cholicke.

ID. *ib.* 34.

*Nec calidæ citius decedunt corpore febres,  
 Textilibus si in picturis ostroque rubenti  
 Iacteris, quàm si plebeia in veste cubandum est.*

Feavers no sooner from thy body flie  
 If thou on arras or red scarlet lie  
 Tossing, than if thou rest  
 On coverlets home-drest.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

The flatterers of Alexander the great, made him beleewe, CHAPTER  
that he was the sonne of Iupiter ; but being one day sore- XLII  
hurt, and seeing the blood gush out of his wounds : ‘ And Of the in-  
‘ what thinke you of this ? ’ (said he unto them) ‘ Is not this equalitie that  
‘ blood of a lively red hew, and meerly humane ? ’ Me thinkes, is betweene  
it is not of that temper, which Homer faineth to trill from the us  
gods wounds. Hermodorus the Poet made certaine verses  
in honour of Antigonus, in which he called him the sonne  
of Phœbus ; to whom he replied ; ‘ My friend, He that  
‘ emptieth my close-stoole knoweth well, there is no such  
‘ matter.’ He is but a man at all assaies : And if of himselfe  
he be a man ill borne, the Empire of the whole world  
cannot restore him.

—*puellæ*

*Hunc raptant, quicquid calcaverit, hic rosa fiat.*

PERS. Sat. ii.  
37.

Wenches must ravish him, what ever he  
Shall tread upon, eftsoones a rose must be.

What of that ? If he be of a grose, stupide, and senseles  
minde : voluptuousnesse and good fortune it selfe, are not  
perceived without vigor, wit, and livelinesse.

*Hæc perinde sunt, ut illius animus qui ea possidet,  
Qui uti scit, ei bona, illi qui non utitur rectè, mala.*

TER. *Heaut.*  
act i. sc. ii. 21.

These things are such, as the possessors minde,  
Good, if well us'd ; if ill, them ill we finde.

Whatsoever the goods of fortune are, a man must have a  
proper sense to savour them : It is the enjoying, and not  
the possessing of them, that makes us happy.

*Non domus et fundus, non æris acervus et auri,  
Ægroto domini deduxit corpore febres,  
Non animo curas, valeat possessor oportet,  
Qui comportatis rebus bene cogitat uti.  
Qui cupit, aut metuit, juvat illum sic domus aut res,  
Ut lippum pictæ tabulæ, fomenta podagram.*

HOR. i. *Ep.* ii.  
47.

Not house and land, and heapes of coine and gold  
Rid agues, which their sicke Lords body hold,  
Or cares from minde : th' owner must be in health,  
That well doth thinke to use his hoarded wealth.  
Him that desires or feares, house, goods, delight,  
As foment doe the gout, pictures sore-sight.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XLII

Of the inequality that is betwene us

He is a foole, his taste is wallowish and distracted, he enjoyeth it more, than one that hath a great cold doth the sweetnesse of Greeke wine, or a horse the riches of a costly-faire furniture, wherewith he is trapped. Even as Plato saith, 'That health, beautie, strength, riches, and all things ' else he calleth good, are equally as ill to the unjust, as good ' to the just ; and the evill contrariwise.' And then, where the body and the soule are in ill plight, what need these externall commodities ? Seeing the least pricke of a needle, and passion of the mind is able to deprive us of the pleasure of the worlds Monarchy. The first fit of an ague, or the first gird that the gout gives him, what availes his goodly titles of Majesty ?

TIBUL. i. *El.*  
vii. 71.

*Totus et argento conflatus, totus et auro.*

All made of silver fine,  
All gold pure from the mine.

Doth he not forthwith lose the remembrance of his pallaces and states ? If he be angrie or vexed, can his principalitie keepe him from blushing, from growing pale, from gnashing his teeth like a Bedlam ? Now if it be a man of worth, and well borne, his royaltie, and his glorious titles will adde but little unto his good fortune.

HOR. i. *Ep.*  
xii. 5.

*Si ventri bene, si lateri est pedibusque tuis, nil  
Divitiæ poterunt regales addere majus.*

If it be well with belly, feet, and sides,  
A Kings estate no greater good provides.

He seeth they are but illusions, and vaine deceits. He may haply be of King Seleucus his advice : 'That he who ' fore-knew the weight of a scepter, should he finde it lying ' on the ground, he would not daigne to take it up.' This he said, by reason of the weightie, irksome and painefull charges, that are incident unto a good King. Truely, it is no small matter to governe others, since so many crosses and difficulties offer themselves, if we will governe our selves well. Touching commanding of others, which in shew seemeth to be so sweet, considering the imbecillitie of mans judgement, and the difficultie of choice in new and doubtful things. I am confidently of this opinion, that it is much more

# THE FIRST BOOKE

easie and plausible to follow, than to guide : and that it is a great setting of the minde, to be tied but to one beaten-path, and to answer but for himselfe.

*Vt satiùs multo jam sit, parere quietum,  
Quàm regere imperio res velle.*

Much better 'tis, in quiet to obey,  
Than to desire with Kings-power all to sway.

Seeing Cyrus said, 'That it belongs not to a man to command, that is not of more worth, than those whom he commandeth.' But King Hieron in Xenophon addeth moreover, 'That in truly-enjoying of carnall sensualities, they are of much worse condition, than private men ; forasmuch as ease and facilitie, depriveth them of that sowre-sweet tickling, which we finde in them.'

*Pinguis amor nimiumque potens, in tœdia nobis  
Vertitur, et stomacho dulcis ut esca nocet.*

Fat over-powerfull love doth loathsome grow,  
As fulsome sweet-meats stomackes overthrow.

CHAPTER  
XLII  
Of the in-  
equality that  
is betweene  
us

LUC. v. 1137.

OVID, *Am.* ii.  
*El.* xix. 25.

Thinke wee, that high-minded men take great pleasure in musicke ? The satietie thereof makes it rather tedious unto them. Feasts, banquets, revels, dancings, masks and turnes, rejoyce them that but seldome see them, and that have much desired to see them: the taste of which becometh cloyesome and displeasing to those that daily see, and ordinarily have them : Nor doe Ladies tickle those, that at pleasure and without suspect may be glutted with them. He that cannot stay till he be thirsty, can take no pleasure in drinking. Enterludes and commedies rejoyce and make us merry, but to players they are tedious and tastelesse. Which to prove, we see, it is a delight for Princes, and a recreation for them, sometimes to disguise themselves, and to take upon them a base and popular kinde of life.

*Plerumque gratæ principibus vices,  
Mundæque parvo sub lare pauperum  
Cœnæ sine aulæis et ostro,  
Solicitam explicuere frontem.*

HOR. iii. *Od.*  
xxix. 13.

Princes doe commonly like enterchange,  
And cleanly meales where poore-men poorely house,  
Without all tapistrie or carpets strange,  
Unwrinkled have their care-knit, thought-bent browes.



## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

### CHAPTER

#### XLII

Of the inequality that  
is betwene  
us

Nothing doth sooner breed a distaste or satietie, than plentie. What longing lust would not bee alaid, to see three hundred women at his dispose and pleasure, as hath the Grand Turke in his Seraille? And what a desire and shew of hawking had he reserved to himselfe from his ancestors, that never went abroad without seven thousand falkners at least? Besides which, I thinke, the luster of greatnesse, brings no small incommodities to the enjoying of sweeter pleasures: they lie too open, and are too much in sight. And I wot not why a man should longer desire them to conceale or hide their fault: For, what in us is indiscretion, the people judgeth to be tyrannie, contempt, and disdaine of the lawes in them: And sides the ready inclination unto vice, it seemeth they also adde unto it the pleasure of gourmandizing, and to prostrate publike observances under their feet. Verily Plato in his *Gorgias*, defineth him to be a tyrant, that in a Citie hath leave and power to doe what ever he list. And therefore often, the shew and publication of their vice hurteth more than the sinne it selfe. Every man feareth to be spied and controlled; which they are even in their countenances and thoughts: All the people esteeming to have right and interest to judge of them. And we see that blemishes grow either lesser or bigger, according to the eminence, and light of the place, where they are set, and that a mole or a wart in ones forehead is more apparently perceived, than a scarre in another place. And that is the reason why Poets faine Iupiters loves to have beene affected under other countenances, than his owne; And of so many amorous-shifts, and love practises, they impute to him, there is but one (as farre as I remember) where he is to be seene in his greatnesse and majestie. But returne we to Hieron: he also relateth, how many incommodities he findeth in his royaltie, being so barred, that he cannot at his libertie travell to goe whether he pleaseth, being as it were a prisoner within the limits of his country; and that in all his actions he is encircled and hemd-in with an importunate and tedious multitude. Truely, to see our Princes all alone, sitting at their meat, beleagred round with so many talkers, whisperers, and gazing beholders, unknowne what they are or whence they come, I have often rather pittied than envied them.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

King Alphonsus was wont to say, ‘that burthen-bearing asses  
 ‘were in that, in farre better condition than Kings; for,  
 ‘their masters suffer them to feed at their ease, whereas Kings  
 ‘cannot obtaine that privilege of their servants.’ And it  
 could never fall into my minde, that it might be any speciall  
 commoditie to the life of a man of understanding, to have a  
 score of find-faults, picke-thanks, and controlers about his  
 close-stoole, nor that the service of a man, that hath a  
 thousand pound rent a yeare, or that hath taken Casal,  
 or defended Sienna, is more commodious or acceptable to  
 him, than that of a sufficient, and well-experienced groom.  
 Princelike advantages, are in a manner but imaginarie pre-  
 heminences. Every degree of fortune, hath some image of  
 Principalitie. Cæsar termeth all the Lords, which in his  
 time had justice in France, to be Kinglets, or pettie Kings.  
 And truly, except the name of Sire, we goe very farre with  
 our Kings. Looke but in the Provinces remote and farre  
 from the court: As for example, in Britanie, the attending  
 traine, the flocking subjects, the number of officers, the  
 many affaires, the diligent service, the obsequious ceremonies  
 of a Lord, that liveth retired, and in his owne house,  
 brought up amongst his owne servants, tenants, and  
 followers: And note also the high pitch of his imaginations,  
 and humours, there is no greater royaltie can be seene:  
 He heareth no more talke of his master, than of the Persian  
 King, and haply but once a yeare: And knowes but some  
 farre-fetcht, and old kindred or pedigree, which his Secretarie  
 findes or keepe upon some ancient record or evidence.  
 Verily our lawes are very free, and the burthen of soveraigntie,  
 doth scarsly concerne a gentleman of France twice in his  
 whole life. Essentiall and effectuall subjection amongst us  
 doth not respect any, but such as allure themselves unto it,  
 and that affect to honour, and love to enrich themselves by  
 such service: For he that can shrowd and retire himselfe in  
 his owne home, and can manage and direct his house without  
 sutes in law, or quarrell with his neighbours, or domesticall  
 encombrances, is as free as the Duke of Venice. *Paucos*  
*servitus, plures servitutum tenent.* ‘Service holds few, but  
 ‘many hold service.’ But above all things Hieron seemeth  
 to complaine, that he perceiveth himselfe deprived of all

CHAPTER  
 XLII  
 Of the in-  
 equalitie that  
 is betweene  
 us

SEN. *Epist.* 22.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XLII  
Of the in-  
equalitie that  
is betweene  
us

mutuall friendship, reciprocall societie, and familiar conversation, wherein consisteth the most perfect and sweetest fruit of humane life. For, what undoubted testimonie of affection and good will, can I expect or exact from him, that will he, or nill he, oweth me all he hath, all he can ? Can I make account of his humble speech, of his low-lowting curtzie, or of his curteous offers, since it lieth not in his power to refuse them me ? The honour we receive of those which feare and stand in awe of us, is no true honour. Such respects are rather due to royaltie, to majesty, than to me.

SEN. *Thyest.*  
act ii. sc. I.

—*maximum hoc regni bonum est,  
Quod facta domini cogitur populus sui  
Quàm ferre, tam laudare.*

This is chiefe good of Princes domination,  
Subjects are forc't their sov'raignes actes and fashions  
To beare with patience, passe with commendations.

Doe I not see, that both the bad and the good King are served alike ? That hee who is hated, and he that is beloved are both courted alike ? And the one as much fawned upon as the other ? My predecessor was served with the same apparances, and waited upon with the like ceremonies, and so shall my successor be. If my subjects offend me not, it is no testimonie of any good affection. Wherefore shall I take it in that sense, sithence they cannot, if they would ? No man followeth me for any friendship that is betweene him and me : inasmuch as no firme friendship can be contracted, where is so small relation, so slender correspondencie, and such disparitie. My high degree hath excluded me from the commerce of men. There is too great an inequalitytie, and distant disproportion. They follow for countenance, and of custome, or rather my fortune than my selfe : hoping thereby to encrease theirs. Whatsoever they say, all they doe unto me, is but a glosse, and but dissimulation, their libertie being every where brideled, and checked by the great power I have over them. I see nothing about me, but inscrutable hearts, hollow mindes, fained lookes, dissembled speeches, and counterfeit actions. His Courtiers one day commended Iulian the Emperour for ministring of right, and doing of justice ; 'I should easily

# THE FIRST BOOKE

‘grow proud’ (saith he) ‘for these praises, if they came from  
 ‘such as durst either accuse or discommend my contrary  
 ‘actions, should I commit any.’ All the true commodities  
 that Princes have, are common unto them with men of  
 meane fortune. It is for Gods to mount winged horses, and  
 to feed on Ambrosia. They have no other sleepe, nor no  
 other appetite than ours. Their steele is of no better temper,  
 than that wherewith we arme our selves. Their crowne,  
 their diadem can neither hide them from the Sun, or  
 shelter them from the raine. Dioclesian that wore one, so  
 much revered, and so fortunate, did voluntarily resigne  
 the same, to withdraw himselfe unto the pleasure of a  
 private life; but a while after, the urgent necessitie of  
 publike affaires requiring his presence, and that he should  
 returne to re-assume his charge againe, he answered those  
 that solicited him unto it; ‘You would never undertake to  
 ‘perswade me to that, had you but seene the goodly rankes  
 ‘of trees, which my selfe have planted in mine Orchard, or  
 ‘the faire muske-melons, I have set in my garden.’ According  
 to Anacharsis his opinion, ‘The happiest estate of a well  
 ‘ordered common-wealth should be, where all other things  
 ‘being equally common, precedencie should be measured,  
 ‘and preferments suted according to vertue and desert, and  
 ‘the contrarie according to vice.’ At what time King Pirrhus  
 undertooke to passe into Italy, Cyneas his wise and trustie  
 counsellor, going about to make him perceive the vanitie of  
 his ambition, one day bespake him thus. ‘My good Sir,’  
 (said he) ‘To what end doe you prepare for so great an  
 ‘enterprise?’ He answered suddenly, ‘To make my selfe  
 ‘Lord of Italie.’ ‘That done, what will you doe then?’  
 (replied Cyneas). ‘I will then passe’ (said Pirrhus) ‘into Gaule,  
 ‘and then into Spaine’: ‘And what afterwards?’ ‘I will then  
 ‘invade Affrike, and subdue the same, and at last, when I  
 ‘shall have brought all the world under my subjection, I will  
 ‘then take my rest, and live contented at mine ease.’ ‘Now,  
 ‘for Gods sake Sir,’ (replied Cyneas) ‘Tell me, what hinders  
 ‘you, that you be not now, if so you please, in that estate?’  
 ‘Wherefore doe you not now place your selfe, where you  
 ‘meane to aspire, and save so much danger, so many hazards,  
 ‘and so great troubles as you enterpose betweene both?’

CHAPTER  
 XLII  
 Of the in-  
 equalitie that  
 is betweene  
 us



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER LUCR. v. 14, *Nimirum quia non bene norat quæ esset habendi*  
XLII 43. *Finis, et omnino quoad crescat vera voluptas.*

Of the in-  
equalitie that  
is betweene  
us

The cause forsooth, he knew not what should be the end  
Of having, nor how far true pleasure should extend.

I will conclude and shut up this treatise with an ancient  
verse, which I singularly applaud, and deeme fit to this  
purpose.

CIC. *Parad.* v.  
COR. NEP.

*Mores cuique sui fingunt fortunam.*

Ev'ry mans manners and his mind,  
His fortune to him frame and find.

## THE FORTY-THIRD CHAPTER

Of sumptuarie Lawes, or Lawes for moderating  
of expences.



THE manner wherewith our Lawes assay to moderate the foolish and vaine expences of table-cheare and apparell, seemeth contrarie to it's end. The best course were to beget in men a contempt of gold and silk-wearing, as of vaine and unprofitable things, whereas we encrease their credit and price: A most indirect course to withdraw men from them. As for example, to let none but Princes eat dainties, or weare velvets, and clothes of Tissew, and interdict the people to doe it, what is it but to give reputation unto those things, and to encrease their longing to use them? Let Kings boldly quit those badges of honour; They have many other besides: Such excesse is more excusable in other men, than in Princes. We may, by the examples of divers Nations, learne sundrie better fashions to distinguish our selves and our degrees (which truly I esteeme requisit in an estate,) without nourishing to that purpose, this so manifest corruption and apparant inconvenience. It is strange how custome in these indifferent things doth easily encroch and suddenly establish the footing of her authoritie. We had scarce worne cloth one whole yeare at the Court, what time we mourned for our King

# THE FIRST BOOKE

Henrie the second, but certainly in every mans opinion, all manner of silks were already become so vile and abject, that was any man seene to weare them, he was presently judged to be some countrie fellow, or mechanicall man. They were left only for Chyrurgians and Physitians. And albeit most men were apparreled alike, yet were there other sufficient apparant distinctions of mens qualities. How soone doe plaine chamoy-jerkins, and greasie canvase doublets creepe into fashion and credit amongst our souldiers, if they lie in the field? And the garishnesse, neatnesse, and riches of silken garments grow in contempt and scorne? Let Kings first begin to leave these superfluous expences, we shall all follow, and within a moneth, without edicts, ordinances, proclamations, and acts of Parliament, it will be observed as a law. The statutes should speake contrarie, as thus. That no man or woman, of what qualitie soever, shall, upon paine of great forfeitures, weare any maner of silke, of skarlet, or any gold-smiths worke, except only Enterlude-players, Harlots, and Curtizans. With such an invention did Zeleucus whilome correct the corrupted manners of the Locrines. His ordinances were such. Be it enacted, that no woman of free condition, shall have any more than one maid-servant to follow her when she goeth abroad, except when she shall be drunken; And further, that she may not goe out of the Citie by night, nor weare any jewels of gold, or precious stones about her, nor any gowne beset with gold-smiths worke, or imbroiderie, except she be a publike-professed whore: and moreover, that except panders and bawds, it shall not be lawfull for any man to weare any gold-rings on his fingers, nor any rich garments, as are such of cloth made in the Citie of Miletum. So did he by these reprochfull exceptions ingeniously drive his Citizens from vaine superfluities, and pernicious dainties. It was a most profitable course, by honour and ambition to allure men unto their dutie and obedience. Our Kings have the power to addresse all these externall reformatiōs. Their inclination serveth them as a law. *Quicquid Principes faciunt, præcipere videntur.* 'Whatsoever Princes doe, that, they seeme to 'command.' The rest of France takes the modell of the court, as a rule unto it selfe to follow. Let Courtiers first

CHAPTER  
XLIII  
Of sumptu-  
arie Lawes, or  
Lawes for mo-  
derating of  
expences

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

### CHAPTER

#### XLIII

Of sumptu-  
arie Lawes, or  
Lawes for mo-  
derating of  
expences

begin to leave off and loath these filthy and apish breeches, that so openly shew our secret parts: the bumbasting of long pease-cod-bellied doublets, which makes us seeme so far from what we are, and which are so combersome to arme: These long, effeminate, and dangling locks: That fond custome to kisse what we present to others, and *Beso las manos* in saluting of our friends: (a ceremonie heretofore only due unto Princes;) And for a gentleman to come to any place of respect, without his rapier by his side, all unbraced, all untrust, as if he came from his close-stoole: And that, against our forefathers manner, and the particular libertie of our French nobilitie, we should stand bare-headed, aloofe-off from them, wheresoever they be, and as about them, about many others: So many petty-kings, and petty-petty-kinglets have we now adayes: And so of others like new-fangled and vicious introductions: They shall soone be seene to vanish and be left. Although but superficial faults, yet are they of evill presages. And we are warned, that the foundation or maine summers of our houses faile and shrinke, when we see the quarters bend, or wals to breake. Plato in his Lawes, thinkes there is no worse plague, or more pernicious in his Citie, than to suffer youth, to have the reines of libertie in her owne hand, to change in their attires, in their gestures, dances, exercises, and songs, from one forme to another: And to remove their judgement, now to this, now to that place; following new-fangled devices, and regarding their inventors: By which, old customes are corrupted, and ancient institutions despised. In all things, except the wicked, mutation is to be feared; yea, even the alteration of seasons, of winds, of livings, and of humours. And no lawes are in perfect credit, but those to which God hath given some ancient continuance:

So that no man know their of-spring, nor that ever they were other than they are.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

## THE FORTY-FOURTH CHAPTER

### Of Sleeping.



**R**EASON doth appoint us ever to walke in one path, but not alwaies to keepe one place: And that a wise man should not permit humane passions to stray from the right carrier; he may (without prejudice unto his dutie) also leave it unto them either to hasten or to slow his pace, and not place himselfe as an immoveable and impassible Colossus. Were vertue herselfe corporeall and incarnate, I think her pulse would beat and worke stronger, marching to an assault, than going to dinner: For, it is necessarie that she heat and move herselfe. I have therefore mark't it as a rare thing, to see great personages sometimes, even in their weightiest enterprises, and most important affaires, hold themselves so resolutely-assured in their state, that they doe not so much as breake their sleepe for them. Alexander the great, on the day appointed for that furious-bloudy battel against Darius, slept so soundly and so long that morning, that Parmenion was faine to enter his chamber, and approching neere unto his bed, twice or thrice to call him by his name, to awaken him, the houre of the battle being at hand, and urging him. Otho the Emperour having determined to kill himselfe; the very same night, after he had given order for his domestical affaires, shared his monie among his servants, and whetted the edge of a sword, wherewith he intended to wound himselfe, expecting no other thing, but to know whether all his friends were gone to rest, fell into so sound a sleepe, that the groomes of his chamber heard him snort in another roome. This Emperours death hath many parts semblable unto that of great Cato, and namely this: For, Cato being prepared to defeat himselfe, whilst he expected to heare newes, whether the Senators, whom he caused to retire, were lanced out from the haven of Utica, fell so fast asleepe, that he was heard to snort into the next chamber: And he whom he had sent



## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XLIV  
Of Sleeping

toward the port, having awaked him, to tell him, the storme was so rough, that the Senators could not conveniently put out to sea, he sent another, and lying downe a new, fell asleep againe, untill the last messenger assured him, they were gone. We may also compare him unto Alexander, in that great and dangerous storme, which threatned him, by the sedition of Metellus the Tribune, who laboured to publish the decree of Pompeys re-appeall into the Citie, together with his army, at what time the commotion of Catiline was on foot: against which decree only Cato did insist, and to that purpose had Metellus and he had many injurious speeches, and menaced one another in the Senate-house: And it was the next day, they were like to come to the execution in the market-place, where Metellus, besides the favour of the common people, and of Cæsar, then conspiring and plotting for the advancement of Pompey, should come, accompanied with a multitude of strange and forraine slaves and fencers, to doe their utmost: And Cato strengthened with his only constancie, and with an unmated resolve: So that his kinsmen, his familiars, and many honest men tooke great care, and were in heavy anxietie and pensiveness for him: of which many never left him all night, but sate up together, without rest, eating, or drinking, by reason of the danger they saw prepared for him; yea, his wife and sisters did nought but weep and waile, and for his sake torment themselves in their house, whereas contrariwise he alone comforted every body, and blamed them, for their demissenesse: And after he had supped, (as he was wont) he went quietly to his bed, and slept very soundly untill the next morning, that one of his copartners in the Tribuneship, came to call him, to goe to the skirmish. The knowledge we have of this mans unmated-haughty heart, by the rest of his life; may make us judge with all securitie, that it only proceeded from a spirit, so far elevated above such accidents, that he dained not so much as to trouble his minde with them, no more than with ordinarie chances. In the sea-fight, which Augustus gained against Sextus Pompeius in Sicilie, even at the instant he should goe to fight, was surprised with so heavy a sleep, that his friends were compelled to awaken him, to give the signall of the battell;

# THE FIRST BOOKE

which afterward gave occasion unto Marcus Antonius, to charge him with this imputation, that he had not dared with open eyes to survey the marshalling of his army, and that his heart would not suffice him, to present himselfe unto his souldiers, untill such time that Agrippa brought him newes of the victorie he had obtained of his enemies. But concerning young Marius, who committed a greater errour (for on the day of his last battell against Sylla, after he had marshalled his army, and given the word or signall of the battell) he lay downe in the shadow under a tree, a while to rest himselfe, and fell so fast asleep, that he could hardly be awaked with the rout and flight of his men, having seene no part of the fight, they say, it was because he was so exceedingly aggravated with travell, and over-tired with wearinesse, and want of sleep, that nature was overcome, and could no longer endure. And touching this point, Phisitians may consider; whether sleep be so necessarie, that our life must needs depend of it: For we finde that Perseus King of Macedon, prisoner at Rome, being kept from sleep, was made to die; but Plinie aleageth, that some have lived a long time without any sleep at all. And Herodotus reporteth, ‘There are nations, where men sleep and wake by halfe yeares.’

And those that write the life of Epimenides the wise, affirme, ‘that he slept the continuall space of seven and fifty yeares.’

## THE FORTY-FIFTH CHAPTER

Of the battell of Dreux.



HERE hapned divers rare accidents, and remarkable chances in our battell of Dreux: but those who doe not greatly favour the reputation of the Duke of Guise, doe boldly aleage, that he cannot be excused, to have made a stand, and temporised with the forces he commanded, whilst the Lord Constable of France, Generall of the Armie, was engaged and suppressed with the enemies Artillerie, and that

CHAPTER  
XLIV  
Of Sleeping

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER XLV  
Of the battell  
of Dreux

it had beene better for him, to hazard himselfe, to charge the enimie flankwise, than by expecting any advantage, to have him come behind him, to suffer so reprochfull an overthrow, and so shamefull a losse. But omitting what the event thereof witnessed, he that shall without passion debate the matter, shall easily (in my conceit) confesse, that the ayme and drift, not onely of a Captaine, but of every particular Souldier, ought chiefly to respect a victory in great: And that no particular occurrences, of what consequence soever, or what interest may depend on them, should never divert him from that point. Philopœmen in an encounter with Machanidas, having sent before, a strong troupe of Archers, and good marke men, to begin the skirmish: and the enimie, after he had put them to rout and dis-ranked them, ammus-ing himselfe in mainly pursuing them, and following the victory alongst the maine battell, where Philopœmen was, although his souldiers were much moved and offended to see their fellowes put to the worst, he could not be induced to bouge from his place, nor make head against his enimie, to succour his men; but rather, having suffered them to be defeated, and cut in peeces before his face, began then to charge his enemies in the battalion of their Infanterie, when he perceived them forsaken of their horsemen: And albeit they were Lacedemonians, forasmuch as he charged them, at what time (supposing to have gained the day) they began to disorder themselves, he easily overcame them; which done, he pursued Machanidas. This case, is cousin-german unto that of the Duke of Guise. In that sharpe-bloody battell of Agesilaus against the Bœotians, which Xenophon (who was there present) saith, ‘To have beene the hottest and ‘rudest, that ever he had seene’: Agesilaus refused the advantage, which fortune presented him, to let the battalion of the Bœotians passe, and to charge them behind, what certaine victorie soever he saw likely to follow the same, esteeming that it were rather skill than valour, and to shew his prowess, and matchlesse-haughty courage, chose rather to charge them in the front of their forces: But what followed? He was well beaten, and himselfe sore-hurt, and in the end compelled to leave his enterprise, and embrace the resolution, which in the beginning he had refused, causing his

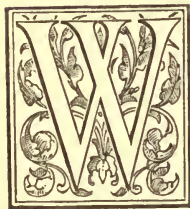
# THE FIRST BOOKE

men to open themselves, to give passage unto that torrent of the Bœotians ; who when they were past through, perceiving them to march in disaray, as they who perswaded themselves to be out of all danger, he pursued them, and charged them flank-wise. All which notwithstanding, he could never put to rout, or force them runaway, for they, orderly, and faire and softly made their retreat, ever shewing their face, untill such time as they got safely into their holds and trenches.

CHAPTER  
XLV  
Of the battell  
of Dreux

## THE FORTY-SIXTH CHAPTER

### Of Names.



**W**HAT diversitie soever there be in herbs, all are shuffled up together under the name of a sallade. Even so, upon the consideration of names, I will here huddle up a gallymafry of diverse articles. Every several nation hath some names, which, I wot not how, are sometimes taken in ill part, as with us Iacke, Hodge, Tom, Will, Bat, Benet, and so forth. Item, it seemeth that in the genealogies of Princes, there are certaine names fatally affected ; as Ptolemeus with the Ægyptians, Henries in England, Charles in France, Baldwins in Flanders, and Williams in our ancient Aquitanie, whence some say came the name of Guienne ; which is but a cold invention : As if in Plato himselfe there were not some as harsh and ill-sounding. Item, it is an idle matter, yet neverthelesse, by reason of the strangenesse, worthy the memorie, and recorded by an ocular witnesse, that Henrie Duke of Normandie, sonne to Henrie the second King of England, making a great feast in France, the assembly of the Nobilitie was so great, that for pastimes sake, being, by the resemblance of their names, divided into severall companies : in the first were found a hundred and ten Knights sitting at one table, and all called Williams ; besides private Gentlemen and servants. It is as pleasant to distribute the tables by the names of the assistants, as it



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XLVI Of Names

was unto Geta the Emperor, who would have all his messes or dishes served in at his table orderly according to the first letters of their names; As for example, those that began with P. as pig, pie, pike, puddings, pouts, porke, pancakes, etc. were all served in together; and so of all the rest. Item, it is a common saying, 'That it is good to have a good name': As much to say, good credit, or good reputation. Yet verely it is very commodious to have a well-sounding and smooth name, and which is easie to be pronounced, and facile to be remembred: For Kings, Princes, Lords, and Magistrates know and remember us the better by them, and will not so soone forget us. Marke but of those that serve and follow us, whether we doe not more ordinarily command, and sooner employ such, whose names come readier to our tongue, or memorie. I have seene our King Henrie the second, who could never hit on the right name of a Gentleman of Gascoigne; and did ever call a Lady waiting on the Queene, by the generall surname of her house, because that of her father was so harsh, and hard to be remembred. And Socrates saith, 'It ought to be a fathers speciall care, to give 'his children good and easie-sounding names.' Item, it is reported, that the foundation of our Lady the great at Poitiers had this beginning: 'A licentious young man 'having his dwelling-house where the Church now standeth, 'had one night gotten a wench to lie with him, who so 'soone as she came to bed, he demanded her name, who 'answered, Marie: The young man hearing that name, was 'suddenly so stricken with a motive of religion, and an awefull 'respect unto that sacred name, of the virgin Marie, the 'blessed mother of our Saviour and Redeemer, that he did 'not onely presently put her away from him, but reformed 'all the remainder of his succeeding life: And that in 'consideration of this miracle, there was first erected a 'Chappell in the place where this young mans house stood, 'consecrated unto that holy name, and afterward the faire 'great Church, which yet continueth.' This vocal and auricular correction, and so full of devotion, stricke right unto his soule. This other following, of the same kind, insinuated it selfe by the corporall sences. Pythagoras being in companie with two young men, whom he heard complot and

# THE FIRST BOOKE

CHAPTER  
XLVI  
Of Names

consult (being somewhat heated with feasting and drinking) to go and ravish a chaste-house, commanded immediatly the minstrels to change their tune; and so by a solemne, grave, severe, and spondaicall kinde of musicke, did sweetly inchaunt, allay, and in-trance their rash, violent, and lawlesse lust. Item, shall not succeeding posteritie say, that our moderne reformation hath beene exact and delicate, to have not only oppugned and resisted errors and vices, and filled the world with devotion, humilitie, obedience, peace, and every other kinde of vertue, but even to have combated their ancient names of baptisme, Charles, Lewis, Francis, to people the world with Methusalem, Ezechiel, Malachie, much better feeling of a lively faith? A Gentleman my neighbour, esteeming the commodities of ancient times in regard of our daies, forgot not to aledge the fiercenesse and magnificence of the names of the Nobilitie of those times, as Don Grumedan, Quedragan, and Agesilan: And that, but to heare them sounded, a man might easily perceive, they had beene other manner of men, than Peter, Guillot, or Michell. Item, I commend, and am much beholding to Iames Amiot, in the course of a French oration of his to have still kept the full ancient Latine names, without disguising or changing them, to give them a new French cadence. At the first they seemed somewhat harsh unto the Reader; but now, by reason of the credit, which his Plutarke hath deservedly gotten amongst us, custome hath removed all strangenesse from us. I have often wished that those who write histories in Latine, would leave us our names whole, and such as they are: For, altering Vaudemont, to Vallemontanus, and metamorphosing them, by suting them to the Græcian or Latin tongue, we know not what to make of them, and are often at a non-plus. To conclude my discourse; It is an ill custome, and of exceeding bad consequence in our cuntry of France, to call every man by the name of his Towne, Mannor, Hamlet, or Lordship, as the thing that doth most confound houses, and bring surnames out of knowledge. A cadet or yonger-brother of a good house, having had for his appanage a Lordship, by whose name he hath beene knowne and honoured, cannot well forsake and leave the same ten yeares after his death;

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XLVI Of Names

His Lord-ship commeth unto a stranger, who doth the like : Ghesse then where we are, and how we shall doe to come to the perfect knowledge of these men. Wee need not goe far for other examples, but looke into our Royall house, where so many partages, so many sur-names, and so many severall titles have so encumbered us, that the originall of the stocke is utterly lost. There is so much libertie in these mutations, that even in my time, I have seene no man nor woman advanced by fortune unto some extraordinarie preferment, that hath not immediatly had adjoynded unto him or her Genealogicall titles, new and unknowne to their fathers, and that hath not beene engrafted into some noble stocke or family. And as good lucke serveth, the basest upstart, and most obscure houses are most apt unto adulteration, and falsification. How many privat Gentlemen have we in France, which according to their accompt, and blazoning of their gentrie, are of the royall blood or race ? I beleeeve more than others. Was it not pretily said, and with a good grace, by one of my friends ? There was a great companie bandied together about a quarell which a Gentleman had with another, who in very truth had some prerogative of titles, honours, and alliances above the common sort of Nobilitie ; upon which word of his prerogative, every one seeking to equall himselfe unto him, alleaged, some one of-spring, some another, some the resemblance of his name, some of his armes, othersome an old far-fetcht pedigree, and the meanest of them to be the great grand-child of some King beyond the Seas. When they came all to dinner, this man whom hitherto they had all followed, in lieu of taking his wonted place, making low-lowting reverences, went to the lowest end of the board, entreating the companie to hold him excused, that through rash-unadvisednesse he had hitherto lived with them companion-like, but now being lately enformed of their right qualities, he began to know them according to their ancient degrees, and that it did not duly belong unto him to sit above so many Princes. And after he had acted his play, he began to raile upon them with a thousand injuries ; saying thus unto them : For the love of God content your selves, with what your forefathers have beene contented, and with the state whereto God hath called us :

# THE FIRST BOOKE

we have sufficient if we can maintaine it well, let us not disparage the fortune and condition of our predecessors; and reject we these fond imaginations, which cannot faile any man, whatsoever he be, that is so impudent as to alleage them. Crests, Armes, and Coats have no more certaintie than surnames. I beare Azure seme of trefoiles, a Lions Paw in fæce, Or, armed Gules. What privilege hath this Coat, that it should for ever continue particularly to my house? A sonne in law will transferre the same into another family: Some silly-upstart purchaser of Armes, will make it his chiefe Coat. There is nothing wherein meet so many alterations, and so much confusion.

But this consideration draweth me perforce unto another field. Let us somewhat narrowly search-into, and for Gods sake consider, on what foundation we ground this glorie and reputation, for which the world is turned topsie-turvie. On what doe we establish this transitorie renowne, which with so great mind-possessing toyle, and industrie we seeke and gape-after? In fine, it is Peter or William, that beareth the same (marke it well Reader) and to whom it belongeth. Is not hope a couragious facultie, which in a mortall subject, and in a moment, seeks to usurp infinite, and immensitie, and to replenish his Masters indigence with the possession of all things he can imagine or desire, before it would? Nature hath given us a pleasant joy to play withall in that. Is it Peter or William? And what is that but a word for al mouths? or three or foure dashes of a pen, first, so easie to be varied, as I would willingly aske those, whom the honor of so many victories concerneth, or whether Guesquin, or Glesquin, or Gueaquin? yet were there more apparence her, than in Lucian that S. did sue T. for,

—*non levia aut ludicra petuntur*  
*Præmia:*

No light prize, no reward in jest  
Is hunted after as the best.

CHAPTER  
XLVI  
Of Names

VIRG. *Æn.* xii.  
764.

The wager goeth deepe: The question is, which letter must be paid with so many sieges, battels, hurts, imprisonments, and services done unto the Crowne of France by her ever renowned Constable. Nicholas Denisot hath had no



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XLVI Of Names

care but of the letters of his name, and hath changed all the contexture of them, there out to frame the Earle of Alsinoss, whom he hath honored and presented with the glorie of his Poesie and Painting. And Suetonius the Historian hath loved but the sense of his owne, and having taken away Lenis, which was his fathers surname, hath left Tranquillus successor of his compositions reputation. Who would beleewe, Captaine Bayard hath no honor, but that which he hath borrowed from the acts of Peter Terrail? And that Antonio Escalin (even before his eies) suffered Captaine Poulin, and the Baron of La Garde, to steal so many Navigations, voyages, and attempts, both by sea and land from him? Secundarily, they are dashes, and trickes of the pen, common unto a thousand men. How many are there in all races or families both of one name and surname? And how many in divers families, races, ages, and countries? Historie hath knowne three Socrates, five Platoes, eight Aristotles, seven Xenophons, twenty Demetrius, twenty Theodores: besides which, imagine how many came not to her knowledge. Who letteth my horse boy to call himselfe Pompey the great? But after all, what meanes, what devices, are there that annex unto my horse-keeper deceased, or to that other who had his head cut off in Ægypt, or that joyne unto them this glorified and far-renowned word, and these pen-dashes so much honoured that they may thereby advantage themselves?

VIRG. *Æn.* iv.  
34.

*Id cinerem et manes credis curare sepultos?*

Thinke you, ghost's buried, ashes dead,  
Care much how we alive are sped?

What feeling motion of revenge have the two companions in chiefe valor amongst men; Epaminondas of that glorious verse, which so many ages since is so common in our mouthes for him?

CIC. *Tusc. Qu.*  
v.

*Consiliis nostris laus est attrita Laconum.*

By our complots the haught renowne,  
Of Spartan Gallants was brought downe.

And Affricanus of that other:

# THE FIRST BOOKE

*A sole exoriente, supra Mæotis paludes  
Nemo est, qui factis me æquiparare queat?*

From Sun rise to the Scythian-lake, of fame  
None in exploits can equalize my name.

CHAPTER  
XLVI  
Of Names

CIC. *Tusc. Qu.*  
v.

Those that survive are tickled with the pleasure of these words, and by them solicited with jealousy and desire; doe presently without consideration transmit by fantasie this their proper motion of revenge unto the deceased; and with a fond-deceiving hope perswade themselves, when their turne commeth to be capable of it. God he knowes it, neverthesse:

—*adhæc se*

*Romanus Grajusque et Barbarus Induperator  
Erexit, causas discriminis atque laboris  
Inde habuit, tanto major fumæ sitis est, quàm  
Virtutis.*

IUV. *Sat. x.*  
137.

Heerto himselfe the Romane Generall,  
The Græcian, the Barbarian, rous'd and rais'd;  
Heere hence drew cause of perils, travells all:  
So more, than to be good, thirst to be prais'd.

## THE FORTY-SEVENTH CHAPTER

Of the uncertaintie of our judgement.



Tis even as, that verse saith,

Ἐπέων δὲ πολὺς νομὸς ἔνθα καὶ ἔνθα.

Of words on either side,  
A large doale they divide.

There is law sufficient to speake every  
where, both *pro* and *contra*; As for  
example:

*Vinse Hannibal, et non seppe usar' poi  
Ben la vittoriosa sua ventura.*

PET. PAR. i.  
son. lxxxvi. 1.

Hanniball conquer'd, but he knew not after  
To use well his victorious good fortune.

He that shall take this part, and with our men go about,  
to make that over-sight prevaile, that we did not lately

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XLVII  
Of the uncertain-  
taintie of our  
judgement

pursue our fortune at Montcontour: Or he that shall accuse the King of Spaine, who could not use the advantage he had against us at Saint Quintin, may say this fault to have proceeded from a minde drunken with his good fortune, and from a courage ful-gorged with the beginning of good lucke; loseth the taste how to encrease it, being already hindred from digesting what he hath conceived of it: He hath his hands full, and cannot take hold any more: Unworthy that ever fortune should cast so great a good into his lap: For, what profit hath he of it, if notwithstanding, he give his enemy leasure and meanes to recover himselfe? What hope may one have, that he will once more adventure to charge these re-enforced and re-united forces, and new armed with despite and vengeance, that durst not, or knew not how to pursue them being dismaied and put to rout?

LUCAN. vii.  
734.

*Dum fortuna calet, dum conficit omnia terror.*

While fortune is at height in heat,  
And terror worketh all by great.

But to conclude, what can he expect better, than what he hath lately lost? It is not, as at Fence, where the number of venies given, gets the victorie: So long as the enemy is on foot, a man is newly to begin. It is no victorie, except it end the warre. In that conflict where Cæsar had the worse, neere the Citie of Oricum, he reprochfully said unto Pompeis Souldiers, That he had utterly bene overthrowne, had their Captaine knowne how to conquer: and paid him home after another fashion when it came to his turne. But why may not a man also hold the contrarie? That it is the effect of an insatiate and rash-headlong minde, not to know how to limit or period his covetousnesse: That it is an abusing of Gods favours, to goe about to make them lose the measure he hath prescribed them, and that a new to cast himselfe into danger after the victorie, is once more to remit the same unto the mercie of fortune: That one of the chiefest policies in militarie profession, is, not to drive his enemy unto despaire. Silla and Marius in the sociall warre, having discomfited the Marsians, seeing one squadron of them yet on foot, which through despaire, like furious beasts were desperately comming upon

# THE FIRST BOOKE

them, could not be induced to stay or make head against them. If the fervor of Monsieur de Foix had not drewne him over rashly and moodily to pursue the straglers of the victorie at Ravenna, he had not blemished the same with his untimely death; yet did the fresh-bleeding memorie of his example serve to preserve the Lord of Anguien from the like inconvenience, at Serisoles. It is dangerous to assaile a man, whom you have bereaved of all other meanes to escape or shift for himselfe, but by his weapons: for, necessitie is a violent school-mistris, and which teacheth strange lessons: *Gravissimi sunt morsus irritatae necessitatis*. ‘No biting so ‘grievous, as that of necessitie provoked and enraged.’

CHAPTER  
XLVII  
Of the uncertainty of our judgement

*Vincitur haud gratis jugulo qui provocat hostem.*

LUCAN. iv. 278.

For nought you over-come him not,  
Who bids his foe come cut his throat.

And that is the reason, why Pharax impeached the King of Lacedæmon, who came from gaining of a victorie against the Mantinæans, from going to charge a thousand Argians, that were escaped whole from the discomfiture; but rather to let them passe with all libertie, lest he should come to make triall of provoked and despited vertue, through and by ill fortune. Clodomire King of Aquitaine, after his victorie, pursuing Gondemar King of Burgundie, vanquished and running away, forced him to make a stand, and make head againe: but his unadvised wilfulnesse deprived him of the fruit of the victorie, for he dyed in the action. Likewise he that should chuse, whether it were best to keepe his souldiers richly and sumptuously armed, or only for necessitie, should seeme to yeeld in favour of the first, whereof was Sertorius, Philopœmen, Brutus, Cæsar, and others, urging that it is ever a spur to honour and glorie, for a souldier to see himselfe gorgeously attired, and richly armed, and an occasion to yeeld himselfe more obstinate to fight, having the care to save his armes, as his goods and inheritance. A reason (saith Xenophon) why the Asiatices carried with them, when they went to warres their wives and Concubines, with all their jewels and chiefest wealth. And might also encline to the other side, which is, that a man should rather remove from his souldier, all care to preserve



## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XLVII  
Of the uncertainty of our judgement

himselfe, than to encrease it unto him: for, by that meanes he shall doubly feare to hazard or engage himselfe, seeing these rich spoiles do rather encrease an earnest desire of victorie in the enemy: and it hath bene observed, that the said respect hath sometimes wonderfully encouraged the Romans against the Samnites. Antiochus shewing the Armie, he prepared against them, gorgeously accoutred with all pompe and statelinesse, unto Hanniball, and demanding of him, whether the Romans would be contented with it: 'Yea verily,' answered the other, 'they will be very well pleased with it: They must needs be so, were they never so covetous.' Licurgus forbad his Souldiers, not onely all manner of sumptuousnesse, in their equipage, but also to uncase or strip their enemies, when they overcame them, willing, as he said, that frugalitie and povertie should shine with the rest of the battell. Both at sieges, and else-where, where occasion brings us neere the enemy, we freely give our souldiers libertie, to brave, to disdain, and injurie him with all manner of reproaches: And not without apparance of reason; for, it is no small matter, to take from them all hope of grace and composition, in presenting unto them, that there is no way left to expect it, from him, whom they have so egregiously outraged, and that there is no remedy left but from victorie. Yet had Vitellius but bad successe in that; for, having to deale with Otho, weaker in his Souldiers valour, and of long disaccustomed from warre, and effeminated through the delights and pleasures of the Citie, himselfe in the end set them so on fire with his reproachfull and injurious words, upbrayding them with their pusilanimitie and faint-heartednesse, and with the regret of their Ladies, banquettings and sensualities, which they had left at Rome, that he put them into heart againe, which no perswasions or other means could doe before; and thereby drew them, whom nought could have driven, to fight, and fall upon him. And verily, when they are injuries that touch a man to the quicke, they shall easily urge him, who was very backward to fight for his Kings quarrel, to be very forward in his owne cause or interest. If a man but consider of what consequence the preservation, and importance, the safetie of a generall is

# THE FIRST BOOKE

in an Armie, and how the enemies chieftest ayme, is at the fairest marke, which is the head, from which all other depend, it seemeth that that counsell cannot be doubted of, which by sundrie great Chieftaines we have seene put in practice, which is, in the beginning of the fight, or in the fury of the battell, to disguise themselves. Notwithstanding the inconvenience a man may by this meanes incurre, is no lesse than that mischief, which a man seeketh to avoid: For the Captaine being unseene and unknowne of his Souldiers, the courage they take by his example, and the heart they keep by his presence, is therewithall empai red and diminished; and losing the knowne ensignes, and accustomed markes of their Leader, they either deeme him dead, or despairing of any good successe, to be fled. And touching experience, we sometimes see it to favour the one, and sometimes the other partie. The accident of Pirrhus in the battell he had against the Consull Levinus in Italie, serveth us for both uses: For, by concealing himselfe under the armes of Demogacles, and arming him with his owne, indeed he saved his life, but was in great danger to fall into the other mischief, and lose the day. Alexander, Cæsar, Lucullus, loved (at what time they were to enter fight) to arme and attire themselves with the richest armes, and garish clothes they had, and of particular bright-shining colours. Agis, Agesilaus, and that great Gilippus, contrarie, would ever goe to warres meanly accoutred, and without any imperiall ornament. Among other reproaches, that Pompey is charged withall in the battell of Pharsalia, this is one speciall, that he idley lingred with his Armie, expecting what his enemy would attempt; forasmuch as that (I will heare borrow the very words of Plutarke, which are of more consequence than mine) weakneth the violence, that running giveth the first blowes, and therewithall removeth the charging of the Combattans one against another, which more than any other thing is wont to fill them with fury and impetuosity, when with vehemence they come to enter-shocke one another, augmenting their courage by the crie and running; and in a manner alayeth and quai leth the heat of the Souldiers: Loe-here what he saith concerning this. But had Cæsar lost, who might not also have said, that contrari-

CHAPTER  
XLVII  
Of the uncertainty of our judgement

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XLVII  
Of the uncertainty of our judgement

wise the strongest and firmest situation, is that, wherein a man keeps his stand without budging, and that who is settled in his march, closing, and against any time of need, sparing his strength in himselfe, hath a great advantage against him, that is in motion and disordered, and that running hath already consumed part of his breath? Moreover, that an armie being a body composed of so many severall parts, it is impossible it should in such furie advance it selfe with so just a march, and proportioned a motion, and not breake and dis-ranke, or at least alter her ordinance, and that the nimblest be not grappling before his fellowes may helpe him. In that drearie battell of the two Persian brethren, Clearchus the Lacedemonian, who commanded the Græcians that followed Cyrus his faction, led them faire and gently without any hast-making to their charges; but when he came within fifty paces of his enemies, he bad them with all speed to run unto it; hoping by the shortnesse of the distance to manage their order, and direct their breath; in the meane time giving them the advantage of the impetuositie, both for their bodies, and for their shooting-armes. Others have ordered this doubt in their army after this manner: If your enemies headlong run upon you, stay for them and bouge not: If they without stirring stay for you, run with furie upon them.

In the passage which the Emperour Charles the fifth made into Provence, our King Francis the first, stood a good while upon this choice; whether it were best, by way of prevention, to go and meet with him in Italie, or to stay his coming into France: and albeit he considered what an advantage it is, for one to preserve his house from the troubles and mischiefes that warre brings with it, to the end that possessing her whole strength, it may continually in all times of need, store him with money, and supply him with all other helps; and considering how the necessitie of direfull warre, doth daily enforce a Generall to make spoile of goods, and waste the Countrie, which cannot well be done in our owne goods and countrie: and if the countriman doth not as patiently indure this ravage at his friends hands, as at his enemies, so as seditions may ensue amongst our owne factions, and troubles among our friends: That licence to rob and

## THE FIRST BOOKE

spoile, which in his Countrie may not be tolerated, is a great furtherance in a Souldier, and makes him the more willing, to endure the miseries and toylings that follow warre: And what a hard matter it is to keep the Souldier in office and heart, who hath no other hope of profit, but his bare pay, and is so neere his wife, his children, his friends, and his home: That he who layeth the cloth, is ever put to the greatest charges: That there is more pleasure in assailing than in defending: And that the apprehension of a battell lost in our owne home and entrailes, is so violent, that it may easily shake the whole frame, and distemper the whole body. Seeing there is no passion so contagious, as that of feare, nor so easie apprehended and taken a-trust, or doth more furiously possesse all parts of man: And that the Cities or Townes, which have either heard the bustling noise of the Tempest, or seene the sparkles of this all-consuming fire at their gates, or have perhaps received their Captaines wounded, their Citizens pursued, and their Souldiers spoiled, and all out of breath, if they be not more than obstinately constant, it is a thousand to one, if in that brunt of furie, they doe not headlong cast themselves into some desperate resolution: yet did he conclude and chose this resolve for the best. First to revoke his forces, he had beyond the Mountaines in Italie, and to stay his enemies approches. For, he might on the contrarie part imagine, that being in his owne Countrie, and amidst good friends, he had the better leasure to re-enforce his decayed forces, and more opportunity, to strengthen Townes, to munite Castles, to store Rivers with all necessities they wanted, and to keepe all passages at his devotion, which done, all the wayes should be open for him, and might by them have all manner of victuals, money, and other habilements of warre brought him, in safety, and without convoy: that he should have his subjects so much the more affectionate unto him, by how much nearer they should see the danger: That having so many Cities, Townes, Holds, Castles, and Barres for his securitie, he might at all times, according to opportunitie and advantage, appoint and give Law unto the fight: And if he were pleased to temporize, whilst he tooke his ease, kept his forces whole, and maintained himself in safety, he

CHAPTER  
XLVII  
Of the uncertainty of our judgement



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XLVII  
Of the uncertainty of our judgement

might see his enemy consume and waste himself, by the difficulties which daily must necessarily assault, environ and combat him, as he who should be engaged in an enemies-countrie and foe-land; Where he should have nothing, nor meet with any thing, either before, or behind him, or of any side, that did not offer him continuall warre: no way nor meanes to refresh, to ease or give his armie elbow-roome, if any sicknesse or contagion should come amongst his men; nor shelter to lodge his hurt and maymed Souldiers: where neither monie, munition, nor victuals might come unto him, but at the swords point; where he should never have leasure to take any rest, or breath; where he should have no knowledge of places, passages, woods, foords, rivers, or countrie, that might defend him from ambuscados, or surprises: And if he should unfortunately chance to lose a battell, no hope to save, or meanes to re-unite the reliques of his forces. And there want not examples to strengthen both sides. Scipio found it better for him to invade his enemies countrie of Affrica, than to defend his owne, and fight with him in Italie, where he was, wherein he had good successe. But contrariwise, Hanniball, in the same warre wrought his owne overthrow, by leaving the conquest of a forraine countrie, for to goe and defend his owne. The Athenians having left the enemy in their owne land, for to passe into Sicilie, had very ill successe, and were much contraried by fortune: whereas Agathocles King of Siracusa prospered and was favoured by her, what time he passed into Affrica, and left the warre on foot in his owne countrie. And we are accustomed to say with some shew of reason, that especially in matters of warre, the events depend (for the greatest part) on fortune; which seldome will yeeld, or never subject her selfe unto our discourse or wisdom, as say these ensuing verses.

MANIL. *Astr.*  
iv. 95.

*Et malè consultis pretium est, prudentia fallax,  
Nec fortuna probat causas sequiturque merentes:  
Sed vaga per cunctos nullo discrimine fertur:  
Scilicet est aliud quod nos cogatque regatque  
Majus, et in proprias ducat mortalia leges.*

'Tis best for ill advis'd, wisdom may faile,  
Fortune proves not the cause that should prevaile,

# THE FIRST BOOKE

But here and there without respect doth saile,  
A higher power forsooth us over-drawes,  
And mortall states guides with immortall lawes.

CHAPTER  
XLVII  
Of the uncertainty of our  
judgement

But if it be well taken, it seemeth that our counsels and deliberations, doe as much depend of her; and that fortune doth also engage our discourses and consultations in her trouble and uncertaintie. 'We reason rashly, and discourage at randon,' saith Timeus in Plato: 'For, even as we, so have our discourses great participation with the temeritie of hazard.'

## THE FORTY-EIGHTH CHAPTER

Of Steeds, called in French Destriers.



BEHOLD, I am now become a Gramarian, I, who never learn't tongue but by way of roat, and that yet know not what either Adjective, Conjunctive, or Ablative meaneth. As far as I remember, I have sometimes heard say, that the Romanes had certaine horses, which they called Funales, or Dextrarios, which on the right hand were led by, as spare horses, to take them fresh at any time of need: And thence it commeth, that we call horses of service Destriers, And our ancient Romanes doe ordinarily say, to Adexter, in stead of, to accompanie. They also called *Desultorios equos*, certaine horses that were so taught, that mainly-running with all the speed they had, joyning sides to one another, without either bridle or saddle, the Roman gentlemen armed at all assayes, in the midst of their running-race, would cast and recast themselves from one to another horse. The Numidian men at armes, were wont to have a second spare-horse led by hand, that in the greatest furie of the battell, they might shift and change horse: *Quibus, desultorum in modum, binos trahentibus equos, inter acerrimam sæpe pugnam in recentem equum ex fesso armatis transultare, mos erat. Tanta velocitas ipsis, tamque docile equorum genus.* 'Whose manner was, as if they had

LIV. *Bel. Pun.*  
dec. iii. 4

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER ' beene vaulters, leading two horses with them in armour to  
XLVIII ' leap from their tired horse to the fresh-one, even in the  
Of Steeds, ' hottest of the fight. So great agilitie was in themselves,  
called in ' and so apt to be taught was the race of their horses.'  
French  
Destriers There are many horses found, that are taught to helpe their  
master, to run upon any man shall offer to draw a naked  
sword upon them; furiously to leap upon any man, both  
with feet to strike, and with teeth to bite, that shall affront  
them; but that for the most part they rather hurt their  
friends than their enemies. Considering also, that if they  
once be grapled, you cannot easily take them off, and you  
must needs stand to the mercie of their combat. Artibius,  
Generall of the Persian armie had very ill lucke to be  
mounted upon a horse fashioned in this schoole, at what  
time he fought man to man against Onesilus King of  
Salamis; for, he was the cause of his death, by reason the  
shield-bearer or squire of Onesilus cut him with a faulchon  
betweene the two shoulders, even as he was leaping upon his  
master. And if that, which the Italians report be true, that  
in the battell of Fornovo, King Charles his horse with kick-  
ing, winching, and flying, rid both his master and himsele  
from the enemies that encompast him, to dismount or kill  
him, and without that, he had beene lost: He committed  
himsele to a great hazard, and scap't a narrow scowring.  
The Mammalukes boast, that they have the nimblest and  
readiest horses of any men at armes in the world. That  
both by nature they are instructed to discerne, and by  
custome taught to distinguish their enemy, on whom they  
must leap and wince with feet, and bite with teeth, accord-  
ing to the voice their master speaketh, or rider giveth them.  
And are likewise taught to take up from the ground, lances,  
darts, or any other weapons with their mouths, and as he  
commandeth to present them to their rider. It is said of  
Cæsar, and of Pompey the Great, that amongst their many  
other excellent qualities, they were also most cunning and  
perfect horsemen; and namely of Cæsar, that in his youth  
being mounted upon a horse, and without any bridle, he  
made him run a full carriere, make a sodaine stop, and with  
his hands behind his backe performe what ever can be  
expected of an excellent ready horse. And even as nature

# THE FIRST BOOKE

was pleased to make both him and Alexander two matchlesse miracles in militarie profession, so would you say, she hath also endeavoured, yea, enforced herselfe to arme them extraordinarily ; For, all men know, that Alexanders horse called Bucephalus, had a head shaped like unto that of a bull ; that he suffered no man to get-on and sit him, but his master ; that none could weald and manage him but he ; what honours were done him after his death, all know, for he had a Citie erected in his name. Cæsar likewise had another, who had his fore-feet like unto a mans, with hoofes cloven in forme of fingers, who could never be handled, drest, or mounted but by Cæsar, who when he died, dedicated his image to the Goddesse Venus. If I be once on horse-backe, I alight very unwillingly ; for, it is the seat I like best, whether I be sound or sicke. Plato commendeth it to be availefull for health : And Plinie affirmeth the same to be healthfull for the stomacke, and for the joynts. And sithence we be falne into this subject, let us a little follow it I pray you. We read of a law in Xenophon, by which all men that either had or were able to keepe a horse, were expresly forbidden to travell and goe a foot. Trogus and Iustinus report, that the Parthians were not only accustomed to warre on horse-backe, but also to dispatch all their businesse, and negotiate their affaires both publike and privat ; as to bargaine, to buy, to sell, to parly, to meet, to entertaine one another, and to converse and walke together ; and that the chieftest difference betweene free men and servants amongst them, is, that the first ever ride, and the other goe alwaies on foot. An institution first devised by King Cyrus. There are many examples in the Romane histories (and Suetonius doth more particularly note it in Cæsar) of Captaines that commanded their horsemen to alight, whensoever, by occasion, they should be urged unto it, thereby to remove all manner of hope from their Souldiers to save themselves by flight, and for the advantage they hoped for in this manner of fight : *Quo haud dubiè superat Romanus*. ‘Wherein undantedly the Romanes is superiour to all,’ saith Titus Livius : yet shall we see, that the first provision, and chiefe meanes they used to bridle rebellion amongst their new conquered nations, was to deprive them

CHAPTER  
XLVIII  
Of Steeds,  
called in  
French  
Destriers

LIV. dec. i. 3  
et 7.



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XLVIII  
Of Steeds,  
called in  
French  
Destriers

CÆS. Comment.  
vii.

of all armes and horses. Therefore finde we so often in Cæsar; *Arma proferri, jumenta produci, obsides dari jubet*: 'He commands all their armour should be brought forth, all 'their cattell should be driven out, and hostages should be 'delivered.' The great Turke doth not permit at this day any Christian or Jew, to have or keepe any horse for himsele, throughout all his large Empire. Our ancestors, and especially at what time we had warres with the English, in all solemne combats, or set battels, would (for the most part) alight from their horses, and fight on foot, because they would not adventure to hazard so precious a thing as their honour and life, but on the trust of their owne proper strength, and vigour of their undanted courage, and confidence of their limbs. Let Chrisanthes in Xenophon say what he pleaseth: whosoever fighteth on horse-backe, engageth his valour, and hazardeth his fortune on that of his horse; his hurts, his stumbling, his death, drawes your life and fortune into consequence, if he chance to startle or be afraid, then are you induced to doubt or feare: if to leape forward, then to become rash and fond-hardy: if he want a good mouth or a timely spurre, your honour is bound to answer for it. And therefore doe not I finde it strange, that those combats were more firme and furious, than those which now we see foughten on horse-backe.

VIRG. *Æn.* x.  
756.

—*cedebant pariter, pariterque ruebant*  
*Victores, victique, neque his fuga nota, neque illis.*

The victors and the vanquisht both together  
Gave backe, came on: the flight was knowne in neither.

Their battels are seene much better compact and contrived: They are now but bickerings and routs: *primus clamor atque impetus rem decernit*. 'The first shout and 'shocke makes an end of the matter.' And the thing we call to helpe us, and keepe us company in so great and hazardous an adventure, ought as much as possible may be, lie still in our disposition and absolute power. As I would counsell a gentleman to chuse the shortest weapons, and such as he may best assure himsele of. It is most apparant, that a man may better assure himsele of a sword he holdeth in his hand, than of a bullet shot out of a pistoll, to which belong

# THE FIRST BOOKE

so many severall parts, as powder, stone, locke, snap-hanse, CHAPTER  
barrell, stocke, scowring-peece, and many others, whereof if XLVIII  
the least faile, or chance to breake, and be distempered, it Of Steeds,  
is able to overthrow, to hazard, or miscarry your fortune. called in  
Seldome doth that blow come or light on the marke it is French  
aymed at, which the ayre doth carry. Destriers

*Et quò ferre velint permittere vulnera ventis,  
Ensis habet vires, et gens quæcunque virorum est,  
Bella gerit gladii.*

LUCAN. viii.  
384.

Giving windes leave to give wounds as they list,  
But swords have strength, and right men never mist  
With sword t' assault, and with sword to resist.

But concerning that weapon, I shall more amply speake of it, where I will make a comparison betweene ancient and moderne armes: And except the astonishment and frightening of the eare, which nowadaies is growne so familiar amongst men, that none doth greatly feare it; I thinke it to be a weapon of small effect, and hope to see the use of it abolished. That wherewith the Italians were wont to throw, with fire in it, was more frightfull and terrour-moving. They were accustomed to name a kinde of javelin, Phalarica, armed at one end with an yron pike of three foot long, that it might pierce an armed man through, which lying in the field they used to lanch or hurle with the hand, and sometimes to shoot out of certaine engines, for to defend besieged places: the staffe whereof being wreath'd about with hemp or flax, all pitched and oiled over, flying in the ayre, would soone be set afire, and lightning upon any body or target, deprived the partie hit therewith, of all use of weapons or limbes: Me thinkes neverthelesse, that comming to grapple, it might as well hinder the assailant, as trouble the assailed, and that the ground strewed with such burning truncheons, might in a pell-mell-confusion produce a common incommoditie.

*—magnum stridens contorta phalarica venit  
Fulminis acta modo.*

VIRG. *Æn.* ix.  
705.

With monstrous buzzing came a fire-dart thirled,  
As if a thunder-bolt had there beene whirled.

They had also other meanes, to the use of which custome

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XLVIII  
Of Steeds,  
called in  
French  
Destriers

LIV. dec. iv. 8.

*Ib.*

enured them, and that by reason of inexperience seeme incredible to us; wherewith they supplied the defect of our powder and bullets. They with such fury darted their Piles, and with such force hurled their javelins, that they often pierced two targets and two armed men through, as it were with a spit. They hit as sure and as farre with their slings, as with any other shot: *Saxis globosis funda, mare apertum incessentes: coronas modici circuli magno ex intervallo loci assueti trajicere: non capita modò hostium vulnerabant, sed quem locum destinassent.* 'While they were boyes, with 'round stones in a sling, making ducks and drakes upon the 'sea, they accustomed to cast through round marks of small 'compasse a great distance off: whereby they not only hit 'and hurt the heads of their enemies, but would strike any 'place they aymed at.' Their battering or murthering peeces represented, as well the effect, as the clattering and thundering noise of ours: *ad ictus mænium cum terribili sonitu editos, pavor et trepidatio cæpit.* 'At the batterie of 'the walles made with a terrible noise, feare and trembling 'began to attach them within.' The Gaules our ancient forefathers in Asia, hated mortally such treacherous and flying weapons, as they that were taught to fight hand to hand, and with more courage. *Non tam patentibus plagis moventur, ubi latior quàm altior plaga est, etiam gloriosius se pugnare putant; ñdem quum aculeus sagittæ, aut glandis abditæ introrsus tenui vulnere in speciem urit: tum in rabiem et pudorem tam parvæ perimentis pestis versi, prosternunt corpora humi.* 'They are not so much moved with wide 'gashes, where the wound is more broad than it is deepe, 'there they thinke, that they fight with more bravery; but 'when the sting of an arrow or a bullet, with a small wound 'to shew, gals them inwardly, then falling into rage and 'shame that so slight a hurt should kill them, they cast 'their bodies on the ground.'

A model or picture very neere unto an harquebusada. The ten thousand Græcians in their long-lingring, and farrefamous retreat, encountered with a certaine nation, that exceedingly much endomaged them with stiffe, strong and great blowes, and so long arrowes, that taking them up, they might throw them after the manner of a dart, and with

# THE FIRST BOOKE

them pierce a target and an armed man thorow and thorow. CHAPTER  
The engines which Dionysius invented in Siracusa, to shoot XLVIII  
and cast mightie big arrowes, or rather timber-peece, and Of Steeds,  
huge-great stones, so farre and with such force, did greatly called in  
represent, and come very neere our moderne inventions. We French  
may not also forget, the pleasant seat, which one named Destriers  
master Peter Pol, doctor in divinitie used to sit upon his  
mule, who as Monstrelet reporteth, was wont to ride up and  
downe the streets of Paris, ever sitting sideling, as women  
use. He also saith in another place, that the Gascoines had  
certaine horses, so fierce and terrible, taught to turne and  
stop suddenly in running, whereat the French, the Piccards,  
the Flemmings, and Brabantins (as they who were never  
accustomed to see the like) were greatly amazed, and  
thought it a wonder: I use his very words. Cæsar speaking  
of those of Swethen, saith, In any skirmish or fight on horse-  
backe, they often alight to combat on foot, having so trayned  
and taught their horses, that so long as the fight lasteth,  
they never bouge from their masters side, that if need re-  
quire, they may suddenly mount up againe: and according  
to their naturall custome, there is nothing accounted more  
base or vile, than to use saddles or bardels, and they greatly  
contemne and scorne such as use them: So that a few of  
them feare not to encounter with a troupe farre exceeding  
them in number. That which I have other times wondered  
at, to see a horse fashioned and taught, that a man having  
but a wand in his hand, and his bridle loose hanging over  
his eares, might at his pleasure manage, and make him turne,  
stop, run, cariere, trot, gallop, and what ever else may be  
expected of an excellent ready horse, was common amongst  
the Massilians, who never used either bridle or sadle.

*Et gens quæ nudo residens Massilia dorso,  
Ora levi flectit, frænorum nescia virga.*

LUCAN. iv.  
681.

Massilian horsemen on bare horse-backe-sit  
Manage with light rod, without reynes or bit.

*Et Numidæ infræni cingunt.*

VIRG. *Æn.* iv.  
41.

Numidians who their horses ride  
Without bit, round about us bide.

*Equi sine frænis, deformis ipse cursus, rigida cervice et*  
2 S 337



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XLVIII  
Of Steeds,  
called in  
French  
Destriers

*extento capite currentium*: 'The horses being without bridles, ' their course is ill favoured, they running with a stiffe necke, ' and outstretch't head' (like a roasted Pigge :) Alphonsus King of Spaine, that first established the order of Knights, called the order of the Bend or skarfe, amongst other rules devised this one, that none of them, upon paine to forfeit a marke of silver, for every time offending, should ever ride either mule or mullet; as I lately read in Guevaras epistles, of which whosoever called them his golden epistles, gave a judgement farre different from mine. The Courtier saith, 'That before his time, it was counted a great shame in a ' gentleman to be seene riding upon a mule': Whereas the Abyssines are of a contrarie opinion, who accordingly as they are advanced, to places of honour, or dignitie, about their Prince, called Prester-Iohn, so doe they more and more affect in signe of pompe and state, to ride upon large-great mules. Xenophon reporteth, that the Assirians were ever wont to keepe their horses fast-tied in fetters or gyves, and ever in the stable, they were so wilde and furious. And for that they required so much time to unshackle, and to harnish them, (lest protracting of so long time, might, if they should chance at unawares, and being unready, to be surprised by their enemies, endamage them) they never tooke up their quarter in any place, except it were well dyked and intrenched: His Cirus, whom he maketh so cunning in horsemanship, did alwaies keepe his horses at a certaine stint, and would never suffer them to have any meat before they had deserved the same by the sweat of some exercise. If the Scithians in time of warre chanced to be brought to any necessitie of victuals, the readiest remedy they had, was to let their horses bloud, and therewithall quenched their thirst, and nourished themselves.

MART. *Spect.*  
iii. 4.

*Venit et epoto Sarmata pastus equo.*

The Scithian also came, who strangely feedes  
On drinking out his horse (or that hee bleedeth).

Those of Crotta being hardly besieged by Metellus, were reduced to so hard a pinch, and strait necessitie of all manner of other beverage, that they were forced to drinke the stale or urine of their horses. To verifie how much

## THE FIRST BOOKE

better cheape the Turkes doe both levie, conduct, and maintaine their armies, than we Christians doe; They report, that besides their souldiers never drinke any thing but water, and feed on nothing but rice, and drie-salt flesh, which they reduce into a kinde of powder (whereof every private man doth commonly cary so much about him, as will serve for a moneths provision) and for a shift, will live a long time with the bloud of their horses; wherein they use to put a certain quantitie of salt, as the Tartars and Moskovites doe. These new discovered people of the Indies, when the Spaniards came first amongst them, esteemed that aswell men as horses, were either gods, or creatures far beyond, and excelling their nature in nobilitie. Some of which, after they were vanquished by them, comming to sue for peace and beg pardon at their hands, to whom they brought presents of gold, and such viands as their countrie yeilded; omitted not to bring the same, and as much unto their horses, and with as solemne Oration as they had made unto men, taking their neighings, as a language of truce and composition. In the nether Indies, the chiefe and royallest honour was anciently wont to be, to ride upon an Elephant; the second to goe in Coaches drawne with foure horses; the third, to ride upon a Camell; the last and basest, was to be carried or drawne by one horse alone. Some of our moderne Writers report, to have seene some Countries in that climate, where the people ride oxen, with packe-saddles, stirrops, and bridles, by which they were carried very easily. Quintus Fabius Maximus Rutilianus, warring against the Samnites, and seeing that his horsemen, in three or foure charges they gave, had missed to breake and run through his enemies battallion, at last resolved thus, that they should all unbridle their horses, and with maine force of sharpe spurres pricke and broach them; which done, the horses as enraged, tooke such a running, thorow, and athwart the enemies campe, armes and men, that nought was able to resist them; and with such a furie, that by opening, shouldring, and overthrowing, the battallion, they made way for his Infanterie, which there committed a most bloody slaughter, and obtained a notable victorie. The like was commanded and effected by Quintus Fulvius Flaccus against the Celtiberians: *Id cum*

CHAPTER  
XLVIII  
Of Steeds,  
called in  
French  
Destriers

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XLVIII  
Of Steeds,  
called in  
French  
Destriers

LIV. dec. iv.  
10.

*maiore vi equorum facietis, si effrænatos in hostes equos immittitis; quod sæpe Romanos equites cum laude fecisse memoriæ proditum est. Detractisque frænâ bis ultrò citroque cum magna strage hostium, infractis omnibus hastis, transcurrerunt.* ‘That shall you doe with more violence of horse, ‘if you force your horse unbridled on theemie; which it ‘is recorded, the Roman horsemen have often performed ‘with great prooffe and praise. So pulling off the bridles, ‘they twice ran through forward, and backe againe with great ‘slaughter of theemie, all their launces broken.’

The duke of Moscovie did anciently owe this reverence unto the Tartars, at what time soever they sent any Ambassadors to him, that he must goe meet them on foot, and present them with a goblet full of mares-milke (a drinke counted very delicious amongst them) which whilst they were drinking, if any drop chaunced to be spilt upon their horses haire, he was, by dutie, bound to lick the same up with his tongue. The armie which the Emperor Bajazeth had sent into Russia, was overwhelmed by so horrible a tempest of snow, that to find some shelter, and to save themselves from the extremitie of the cold, many advised to kill and unpanch their horses, and enter into their panches, to enjoy and find some ease by that vitall heat. Bajazeth after that bloody and tragical conflict wherein he was overthrowne by the Scithian Tamburlane, in seeking to escape, had no doubt saved himselfe, by the swiftnesse of an Arabian mare, on which he was mounted that day, if unluckily he had not beene forced to let her drinke her fill in passing over a river, which made her so faint and foundred, that he was easily overtaken and apprehended by those that pursued him. The common saying is, that to let a horse stale after a full carriere, doth take downe his speed, but I would never have thought that drinking had done it, but rather strengthened and heartned him.

Cræsus passing amongst the citie of Sardis, found certaine thickets, wherein were great store of snakes and serpents, on which his horses fed verie hungerly, which thing, as Herodotus saith, was an ill-boding-prodigy unto his affaires. We call him an entire horse, that hath his full mane, and whole eares, and which in shew, or at a muster, doth not

# THE FIRST BOOKE

exceed others. The Lacedemonians having defeated the Athenians in Sicilie, returning in great pompe and glory from the victory, into the City of Siracusa, among other Bravadoes of theirs, caused such horses as they had taken from their enemies to be shorne all over, and so led them in triumph. Alexander fought with a nation called Dahas, where they went to warre two and two, all armed upon one horse, but when they came to combat, one must alight, and so successively one fought on foot, and the other on horse backe, each in his turne one after another. I am perswaded that in respect of sufficiencie, of comlinessse, and of grace on horseback, no Nation goeth beyond us. A good horseman, (speaking according to our phrase) seemeth rather to respect an undismayed courage, than an affected cleane seat. The man most skilfull, best and surest-sitting, comeliest-graced, and nimblest-handed, to sit, to ride, and mannage a horse cunningly, that ever I knew, and that best pleased my humor, was Monsieur de Carnavalet, who was Master of the horse unto our King Henry the second. I have seene a man take his full carriere, standing boul't-up-right on both his feet in the saddle, leap downe to the ground from it, and turning backe, take off the saddle, and presently set it on againe as fast as ever it was, and then leap into it againe, and al this did he whilst his horse was running as fast as might be with his bridle on his necke. I have also seene him ride over a bonet or cap, and being gone a good distance from it, with his bow shooting backward, to sticke many arrowes in the same; then sitting still in the saddle, to take up any thing from the ground, to set one foot to the ground, and keepe the other in the stirrop, and continually running doe a thousand such tumbling and apish tricks, wherewith he got his living. There have in my time two men beene seene in Constantinople, both at once upon one horse, and who in his speediest running, would by turnes, first one, and then another, leape downe to the ground, and then into the saddle againe, the one still taking the others place. And another, who only with teeth, and without the helpe of any hand, would bridle, curry, rub, dresse, saddle, girt, and harnish his horse. Another, that betweene two horses,

CHAPTER  
XLVIII  
Of Steeds,  
called in  
French  
Destriers



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XLVIII  
Of Steeds,  
called in  
French  
Destriers

and both saddled, standing upright, with one foot in the one, and the second in the other, did beare another man on his armes, standing upright, run a full speedy course, and the uppermost to shoot and hit any marke with his arrowes. Divers have beene seene, who standing on their heads, and with their legs out-stretched aloft, having many sharp-pointed cimitaries fastned round about the saddle, to gallop a full speed. While I was a young lad, I saw the Prince of Sulmona at Naples, manage a young, a rough and fierce horse, and shew all manner of horsemanship; To hold testons, or reals under his knees and toes, so fast, as if they had beene nayled there, and all to shew his sure, steady, and unmoveable sitting.

## THE FORTY-NINTH CHAPTER

Of ancient customes.



WOULD willingly excuse our people for having no other patterne or rule of perfection, but his owne customes, his owne fashions: For, it is a common vice, not only in the vulgar sort, but as it were in all men, to bend their ayme, and frame their thoughts unto the fashions, wherein they were borne. I am pleased when he shall see Fabricius or Lælius, who because they are neither attired, nor fashioned according to our manner, that he condemne their countenance to be strange, and their cariage barbarous. But I bewaile his particular indiscretion, in that he suffereth himselfe to be so blinded, and deceived by the authoritie of present custome, and that if custome pleaseth, he is ready to change opinion, and varie advice, every moneth, nay every day, and judgeth so diversly of himselfe. When he wore short-wasted doublets, and but little lower then his breast, he would maintaine by militant reasons, that the waste was in his right place: but when not long after he came to weare them so longwasted, yea almost

# THE FIRST BOOKE

so low as his privities, than began he to condemne the former fashion, as fond, intolerable and deformed; and to commend the latter, as comely, handsome, and commendable. A new fashion of apparell creepeth no sooner into use, but presently he blameth, and dispraiseth the old, and that with so earnest a resolution, and universall a consent, that you would say, it is some kind of madnesse, or selfe fond humor, that giddieth his understanding.

And forasmuch as our changing or altering of fashions, is so sudden and new-fangled, that the inventions, and new devices of all the tailors in the world, cannot so fast invent novelties, it must necessarily follow, that neglected and stale rejected fashions doe often come into credit and use againe: And the latest and newest, within a while after come to be outcast and despised, and that one selfe-same judgement within the space of fiftene or twentie yeares admitteth, not only two or three different, but also cleane contrarie opinions, with so light and incredible inconstancie, that any man would wonder at it. There is no man so suttile-crafty amongst us, that suffreth not himselfe to be enveigled and over-reached by this contradiction, and that is not insensibly dazeled, both with his inward and externall eies. I will heere huddle-up some few ancient fashions that I remember: Some of them like unto ours, other-some farre differing from them: To the end, that having ever this continuall variation of humane things in our minde, we may the better enlighten and confirme our transported judgement. That manner of fight which we use now adaies with rapier and cloke, was also used among the Romans, as saith Cæsar. *Sinistris sagos involvunt, gladiosque* CÆS. Bel. Civ. *distingunt*: 'They wrap their left armes in their clokes, i. 'and draw their swords.' We may to this day observe this vice to be amongst us, and which we have taken from them, that is, to stay such passengers as we meet by the way, and force them to tell us, who they are, whence they come, whither they goe, and to count it as an injurie, and cause of quarrell, if they refuse to answer our demand. In Baths, which our forefathers used daily before meales, as ordinarily as we use water to wash our hands, when first they came into them, they washed but their armes and legges, but

CHAPTER  
XLIX  
Of ancient  
customes

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XLIX  
Of ancient  
customes

afterward (which custome lasted many after-ages ; and to this day continueth amongst divers nations of the world) their whole body over, with compounded and perfumed waters, in such sort as they held it as a great testimonie of simplicitie, to wash themselves in pure and uncompounded water : Such as were most delicate, and effeminate, were wont to perfume their whole bodies over and over, three or foure times every day ; And often (as our French women have lately taken up) to picke and snip out the haire of their forehead, so they of all their body.

MART. ii.  
*Epig.* lxii. i.

*Quod pectus, quod crura tibi, quod brachia vellis.*

That you from breast, legges, armes, the haire  
Neatly pull off (to make them faire).

Although they had choice of ointments fit for that purpose.

IB. vi. *Epig.*  
xciii. 9.

*Psilotro nitet, aut arida latet abdita creta.*

She shines with ointments that make haire to fall,  
Or with dry chalke she over-covers all.

They loved to lie soft, and on fine downe-beds, alleaging lying on hard mattresses as a signe of patience. They fed lying on their beds, neere after the manner of the Turkes nowadaies.

VIRG. *Æn.* ii.  
2.

*Inde thoro pater Æneas sic orsus ab alto.*

Father Æneas thus gan say,  
From stately couch where then he lay.

And it is reported of Cato Iunior, that after the battell of Pharsalia, and that he began to mourne and bewaile the miserable state of the common-wealth, and ill condition of publike affaires, he ever eat sitting on the ground, folowing an austere, and observing a strict kinde of life. The *Beso las manos* was used as a signe of honour and humilitie, only toward great persons. If friends met, after friendly salutations, they used to kisse one another, as the Venetians doe at this day.

OVID. *Pont.* iv.  
*El.* ix. 13.

*Gratatusque darem cum dulcibus oscula verbis.*

Give her I would with greetings graced,  
Kisses with sweet words enterlaced.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

And in saluting or suing to any great man, they touched his knees. Pasicles the Philosopher, brother unto Crates, coming to salute one, wheras he should have carried his hand to his knee, carried the same unto his genitories: The partie saluted, having rudely push't him away; 'What?' quoth he, 'is not that part yours as well as the other?' Their manner of feeding was as ours, their fruit last. They were wont to wipe their tailes (this vaine superstition of words must be left unto women) with a sponge, and that's the reason why *Spongia* in Latine is counted an obscene word: which sponge was ever tied to the end of a staffe, as witnesseth the storie of him, that was carried to be devoured of the wild beasts before the people, who desiring leave to goe to a privie before his death, and having no other meanes to kill himselfe, thrust downe the sponge and staffe, hee found in the privie, into his throte, wherewith he choked himselfe. Having ended the delights of nature, they were wont to wipe their privities with perfumed wooll.

CHAPTER  
XLIX  
Of ancient  
customes

*At tibinil faciam, sed lotâ mentula landâ.*

MART. xi.  
*Epig.* li. ii.

To thee no such thing will I bring,  
But with wash't wooll another thing.

In every street of Rome were placed tubs, and such vessels for passengers to make water in.

*Pusi sæpe lacum propter, se ac dolia curta  
Somno dejecti credunt extollere vestem.*

LUCR. iv. 1018.

Children asleepe oft thinke they take up all  
Neere to some pissing tub, some lake, some wall.

They used to breake their fast, and nonchion betweene meales, and all summer time, had men that sold snowe up and downe the streets, wherewith they refreshed their wines; of whom some were so daintie, that all winter long they used to put snow into their wine, not deeming it cold enough. Principall, and noble men had their cup-bearers, tasters, carvers and buffons to make them merrie. In Winter their viandes were brought and set on the boord upon arches, as we use chafing dishes; and had portable kitchens (of which I have seene some) wherein might be drawne, wheresoever one list, a whole service and messe of meat.



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER XLIX

Of ancient  
customes

MART. vii.  
*Epig.* xlvii. 5.

*Has vobis epulas habete lauti,  
Nos offendimur ambulante cæna.*

Take you daintie-mouth'd such stirring feasts ;  
With walking meales we are offended guests.

And in summer they often caused cold water (being carried through pipes) to drill upon them as they sate in their dining-chambers, or lowe parlors, where in cesterns, they kept store of fish alive, which the by-standers might at their pleasure, chuse and take with their hands, and have it drest every man according to his fantasie. Fish hath ever had this privilege, as at this day it hath; that chiefe Gentlemen, are pleased, and have skill to dress-it best: And to say truth, the taste of fish is much more delicat and exquisit, than that of flesh, at least in mine. But in all manner of magnificence, delitiousnes, riotous gluttonie, inventions of voluptuousnes, wantonnes, and sumptuositie, we truly endeavour, as much as may be, to equall and come neere them: For, our will and taste is as much corrupted as theirs, but our skill, and sufficiencie is farre short of them: Our wit is no more capable, and our strength no more able to approach and match them in these vitious and blame-worthy parts, than in vertuous and commendable actions: For, both proceede from a vigor of spirit, and farre-reaching wit; which, without comparison, was much greater in them, than now in us. And mindes, by how much more strong, and excellent they are, so much lesse facultie and meanes have they, to doe, either excellently well, or notoriously ill. The chiefest aime amongst them, was a meane or mediocrity. The Foremost or Last, in writing or speaking, had no signification of preheminance or greatnes, as may evidently appeare by their writings. They would as familiarly and as soone say, Oppius and Cæsar, as Cæsar and Oppius; and as indifferently, I and thou, as thou and I. And that's the reason why I have heretofore noted in the life of Flaminius, in our French Plutarke, a place, where it seemeth that the Author, speaking of the jealousie of glorie, that was betweene the Ætolians and the Romans, for the gaine of a battell, which they had obtained in common, maketh for the purpose, that in Greeke songs the Ætolians were named before the Romans, except there bee some Amphibology in the French words: for, in

# THE FIRST BOOKE

that tounge I reade it. When Ladies came unto stoves or hot-houses, they made it not daintie to admit men into their companie, and to be washed, rubbed, chafed and annointed by the hands of their groomes and pages.

CHAPTER  
XLIX  
Of ancient  
customes

*Inguina succinctus nigrà tibi servus alutà*

—*Stat, quoties calidis nuda foveris æquis.*

MART. vii.  
Epig. xxxiv. 1.

Your man, whose loynes blacke-lether gird's, stand's-by,  
Whilst in warme water you starke-naked lie.

They also used to sprinkle themselves all over with certaine powders, thereby to alay and repress all manner of filth or sweat. The ancient Gaules (saith Sidonius Apollinaris) wore their haire long before, and all the hinder part of their head shaven, a fashion that our wanton youths and effeminate gallants, have lately renued, and in this new-fangled and fond-doting age, brought up againe, with wearing of long-dangling locks before. The ancient Romans, paid the water-men their fare or due so soone as they came into the boat, whereas we pay it when they set us on shore.

—*dum as exigitur, dum mula ligatur,*

*Tota abit hora.*

HOR. i. Sat. v.  
13.

While they call for their fare, tie drawe-mule to,  
There runs away, a full houre, if not two.

Women were wont to lie on the utmost side of the bed, and therefore was Cæsar called *Sponda Regis Nicomedis*: 'King Nicomedes his beds side': They tooke breath while they were drinking, and used to baptise, or put water in their wines.

—*quis puer ocius*  
*Restinguet ardentis fulerni*  
*Pocula prætereunte limphâ?*

HOR. ii. Od.  
xi. 18.

What boy of mine or thine  
Shall coole our cup of wine  
With running water fine?

Those cousening and minde-deceiving countenances of lakeis were also amongst them.

*O Iane, à tergo quem nulla ciconia pinsit*  
*Nec manus auriculas imitata est mobilis albas,*  
*Nec linguæ quantum sitiet canis Apula tantum.*

PERS. Sat. i.  
58.

O Ianus, whom behinde no Storks-bill doth deride,  
Nor nimble hand resembling mak's eares white and wide  
Nor so much tongue lil'd out as dogges with thirst ore-  
dride.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
XLIX  
Of ancient  
customes

The Argian and Romane Ladies, mourned in white, as our dames wont to doe; and if I might be credited, and beare-sway amongst them, they should continue it still.

But because there are many bookes, that treat of this argument, I will say no more of it.

## THE FIFTIETH CHAPTER

Of Democritus and Heraclitus.



JUDGEMENT is an instrument for all subjects, and medleth every where, And therefore in the Essayes I make of it, there is no maner of occasion, I seeke not to employ therein. If it be a subject I understand not my selfe, therein I make triall of it, sounding afarre off the depth of the ford, and finding the same over deepe for my reach, I keepe my selfe on the shoare. And to acknowledge not to be able to wade through, is a part of it's effect, yea of such, whereof he vanteth most. If I light upon a vaine and idle subject, I assay to trie, and endeavour to see, whether I may find a good ground to worke upon, and matter to frame a body, and wherewith to build and under-lay it. Sometimes I addresse my judgement and contrive it to a noble and out-worne subject, wherein is nothing found subsisting of it selfe, the high way to it, being so bare-trodden, that it cannot march, but in other steps. There he pleaseth himselfe in chusing the course he thinkes best, and a thousand paths sometimes he saith, this or that was best chosen. I take my first Argument of fortune: All are alike unto me: And I never purpose to handle them thoroughly: For, there is nothing wherein I can perceive the full perfection: Which they doe not that promise to shew it us. Of a hundred parts and visages that every thing hath, I take one, which sometimes I slightly runne over, and other times but cursorily glance at. And yet other whilst I pinch it to the quicke. And give it a Stockado, not the widest, but the deepest I can. And for the most part I

# THE FIRST BOOKE

love to seize upon them by some unwonted lustre. I would adventure to treat and discourse of some matter to the depth; knew I my selfe lesse, or were I deceived in mine owne impuissance; Scattering here one and there another word: Scantlings taken from their maine ground-work, disorderly dispersed, without any well-grounded designe and promise. I am not bound to make it good, nor without varying to keepe my selfe close-tied unto it; whensoever it shall please me to yeeld my selfe to doubt, to uncertaintie, and to my Mistris forme, which is ignorance. Each motion sheweth and discovereth what we are. The very same minde of Cæsar, we see in directing, marshalling, and setting the battel of Pharsalia, is likewise seene to order, dispose, and contrive, idle, trifling and amorous devices. We judge of a horse, not only by seeing him ridden, and cunningly managed, but also by seeing him trot, or pace; yea, if we but looke upon him as he stands in the stable. Amongst the functions of the soule, some are but meane and base. He that seeth her no further, can never know her thorowly. And he that seeth her march her naturall and simple pace, doth peradventure observe her best. The winds of passions take her most in her highest pitch, seeing she entirely coucheth herselfe upon every matter, and wholly therein exerciseth herselfe: and handleth but one at once; not according to it, but according to herselfe. Things severall in themselves have peradventure, weight, measure, and condition: But inwardly, in us, she cuts it out for them, as she understandeth the same herselfe. Death is fearefull and ugly unto Cicero; wished for and desired of Cato: and indifferent unto Socrates. Health, well-fare, conscience, authoritie, riches, glorie, beautie, and their contraries are dispoyled at the entrance, and receive a new vesture at the soules hand. Yea, and what coulour she pleaseth; browne, bright, greene, sad, or any hew else: sharpe or sweete, deepe or superficiall, and what each of them pleaseth. For none of them did ever verifie their stiles, their rules, or formes in common; each one severally is a Queene in her owne estate. Therefore let us take no more excuses from externall qualities of things. To us it belongeth to give our selves account of it. Our good, and our evill hath no dependancy, but from our selves.

CHAPTER

L

Of Democritus and  
Heraclitus



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER us offer our vows and offerings unto it ; and not to fortune.  
 L She hath no power over our manners. Why shall I not  
 Of Demo- judge of Alexander, as I am sitting and drinking at Table,  
 critus and and talking in good company? Or if hee were playing at  
 Heraclitus Chesse, what string of his wit doth not touch or harpe on  
 this fond-childish, and time-consuming play? I lothe and  
 shun it, only because there is not sport enough in it, and  
 that in his recreation, he is over serious with us, being  
 ashamed I must apply that attention therunto, as might be  
 imployed on some good subject. He was no more busied in  
 levying his forces and preparing for his glorious passage into  
 India ; nor this other in disintangling and discovering of a  
 passage, whence dependeth the well-fare and safety of man-  
 kind. See how much our mind troubleth this ridiculous  
 ammuizing, if all her sinnewes bandy not. How amply she  
 giveth every one Law in that, to know and directly to judge  
 of himselfe. I doe not more universally view and feele my  
 selfe in any other posture. What passion doth not exercise  
 us thereunto? Choller, spight, hatred, impatience, and  
 vehement ambition to overcome, in a matter wherein it were  
 haply more excusable to be ambitious for to be vanquished.  
 For, a rare pre-excellencie, and beyond the common reach,  
 in so frivolous a thing, is much mis-seeming a man of  
 honour. What I say of this example, may be spoken of all  
 others. Every parcell, every occupation of a man, accuseth,  
 and sheweth him equal unto another. Democritus and  
 Heraclitus were two Philosophers, the first of which, finding  
 and deeming humane condition to be vaine and ridiculous,  
 did never walke abroad, but with a laughing, scorneful and  
 mocking countenance : Whereas Heraclitus taking pitie and  
 compassion of the very same condition of ours, was con-  
 tinuallly seene with a sad, mournfull, and heavie cheere, and  
 with teares trickling downe his blubbered eyes.

JUVEN. Sat. x.  
 28.

—Alter  
*Ridebat quoties à limine moverat unum*  
*Protulerátque pedem, flebat contrarius alter.*

One from his doore, his foot no sooner past,  
 But straight he laught ; the other wept as fast.

I like the first humor best, not because it is more pleasing  
 350

# THE FIRST BOOKE

to laugh, than to weepe; but for it is more disdainfull, and doth more condemne us than the other. And me thinkes we can never bee sufficiently despised, according to our merit. Bewailing and commiseration, are commixed with some estimation of the thing moaned and wailed. Things scorned and contemned, are thought to be of no worth. I cannot be perswaded, there can be so much ill lucke in us, as there is apparant vanitie, nor so much malice, as sottishnesse. We are not so full of evill, as of voydnesse and inanie. We are not so miserable, as base and abject. Even so Diogenes, who did nothing but trifle, toy, and dally with himselfe, in rumbling and rowling of his tub, and flurting at Alexander, accompting us but flies, and bladders puffed with winde, was a more sharp, a more bitter, and a more stinging judge, and by consequence, more just and fitting my humor, than Timon, surnamed the hater of all mankind. For looke what a man hateth, the same thing he takes to hart. Timon wisht all evill might light on us; He was passionate in desiring our ruine. He shunned and loathed our conversation, as dangerous and wicked, and of a depraved nature: Whereas the other so little regarded us, that wee could neither trouble nor alter him by our contagion; forsooke our company, not for feare, but for disdain of our commerce: He never thought us capable or sufficient to doe either good or evill. Of the same stampe was the answer of Statilius to whom Brutus spake to win him to take part, and adhere to the conspiracie against Cæsar: He allowed the enterprize to be very just, but disallowed of the men that should performe the same, as unworthy that any man should put himself in any adventure for them: Conformable to the discipline of Hegesias, who said, 'That a wise man ought never to doe any thing, but for himselfe'; forasmuch as he alone is worthy to have any action performed for him: and to that of Theodorus, 'who thought it an injustice, that a wise man should in any case hazard himselfe for the good and benefit of his countrie, or to indanger his wisdom for fooles.' Our owne condition is as ridiculous, as risible; as much to be laught at, as able to laugh.

CHAPTER

L

Of Democritus and Heraclitus

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## THE FIFTY-FIRST CHAPTER

### Of the vanitie of Words.



RETHORICIAN of ancient times, said, that his trade was, to make small things appeare and seeme great. It is a shoemaker, that can make great shooes for a little foot. Had hee lived in Sparta, he had doubtlesse beene well whipped, for professing a false, a couzening and deceitfull art. And I thinke, Archidamus King of that Citie did not without astonishment listen unto the answer of Thucydides, of whom he demanded, whether he, or Pericles, was the strongest and nimblest wrestler; whose answer was this, ‘Your question Sir, is very hard to be decided; for if in wrestling with him, I give him a fall, with his faire words he perswadeth those that saw him on the ground, that he never fell, and so gets the victorie.’ Those that maske and paint women, commit not so foule a fault; for it is no great losse, though a man see them not, as they were naturally borne and unpainted: Whereas these professe to deceive and beguile, not our eies, but our judgement; and to bastardize and corrupt the essence of things. Those common-wealths, that have maintained themselves in a regular, formal, and well governed estate, as that of Creete and Lacedemon, did never make any great esteeme of Orators. Ariston did wisely define Rhetorike ‘to be a Science, to perswade the vulgar people’: Socrates and Plato, ‘to be an Art to deceive and flatter.’ And those which denie it in the generall description, doe every where in their precepts verifie the same. The Mahometans, by reason of it’s inutilitie, forbid the teaching of it to their children. And the Athenians, perceiving how pernicious the profession and use thereof was, and of what credit in their Citie, ordained, that their principall part, which is to move affections, should be dismissed and taken away, together with all exordiums and perorations. It is an instrument devised, to busie, to manage, and to agitate a vulgar and

# THE FIRST BOOKE

disordered multitude; and is an implement employed, but about distempered and sicke mindes, as Physicke is about crazed bodies. And those where either the vulgar, the ignorant, or the generalitie have had all power, as that of Rhodes, those of Athens, and that of Rome, and where things have ever beene in continuall disturbance and uproare, thither have Orators and the professors of that Art flocked. And verily, if it be well looked into, you shall finde very few men in those common-wealths, that without helpe of eloquence have attained to any worthy estimation and credit: Pompey, Cæsar, Crassus, Lucullus, Lentulus, Metellus, have thence taken their greatest stay and furtherance, whereby they have ascended unto that height and greatnesse of authoritie, whereunto they at last attained, and against the opinion of better times have more prevailed with words than with armes. For, L. Volumnius speaking publikely in favour of the election, which some had made of Quintus Fabius, and Publius Decius, to be Consuls; saith thus; 'They are men borne unto warre, of high spirits, of great performance, and able to effect any thing, but rude, simple, and unarted in the combat of talking; minds truly consulare. They only are good Pretors, to do justice in the Citie' (saith he) 'that are subtile, cautelous, well-spoken, wily and lip-wise.' Eloquence hath chiefly flourished in Rome when the common-wealths affaires have beene in worst estate, and that the devouring Tempest of civill broyles, and intestine warres did most agitate and turmoyle them. Even as a rancke, free and untamed soyle, beareth the rankest and strongest weeds, whereby it seemeth that those common-weales, which depend of an absolute Monarch, have lesse need of it than others: For, that foolishnesse and facilitie, which is found in the common multitude, and which doth subject the same, to be managed, perswaded, and led by the eares, by the sweet alluring and sense-entrancing sound of this harmonie, without duely weighing, knowing, or considering the trueth of things by the force of reason: This facilitie and easie yeelding, I say, is not so easily found in one only ruler, and it is more easie to warrant him from the impression of this poyson, by good institution and sound counsell. There was never seene any notable or farre-

CHAPTER  
LI  
Of the vanitie  
of Words



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER renowned Orator to come out of Macedon or Persia. What  
 LI I have spoken of it, hath beene upon the subject of an  
 Of the vanitie Italian, whom I have lately entertained into my service.  
 of Words Who during the life of the whilom cardinal Caraffa served  
 him in the place of steward of his house. Enquiring of his  
 charge, and particular qualitie, he told me, a long, formall,  
 and eloquent discourse of the science or skill of epicurisme  
 and gluttonie, with such an Oratorie-gravitie, and Magis-  
 trale countenance, as if he had discoursed of some high  
 mysterious point of divinitie, wherein he hath very methodi-  
 cally decifred and distinguished sundrie differences of appe-  
 tites: First of that which a man hath fasting, then of that  
 men have after the first, the second, and third service. The  
 severall means how sometimes to please it simply, and other  
 times to sharpen and provoke the same; the policie and rare  
 invention of his sawces: First, in general terms, then par-  
 ticularizing the qualities and severall operations of the  
 ingredients, and their effects: The differences of salades  
 according to their distinct seasons, which must be served in  
 warme, and which cold: The manner how to dresse, how to  
 adorne, and embellish them, to make them more pleasing to  
 the sight. After that, he entred into a large and farre-  
 fetcht narration, touching the true order, and due method  
 of service, full of goodly and important considerations.

JUVEN. *Sat. v.*  
 127.

—*Nec minimo sanè discrimine refert,  
 Quo gestu lepores, et quo gallina secetur.*

What grace we use, it makes small difference, when  
 We carve a Hare, or else breake up a Hen.

And all that, filled up and stuffed with rich magnificent  
 words, well couched phrases, oratorie figures, and patheti-  
 call metaphors; yea such as learned men use and imploy in  
 speaking of the Government of an Empire, which made me  
 remember my man.

TER. *Adel. act.*  
 iii. sc. iv. 62.

*Hoc salsum est, hoc adustum est, hoc lautum est parum,  
 Illud rectè, iterum sic memento, sedulò,  
 Moneo quæ possum pro mea sapientia.  
 Postremò tanquam in speculum, in patinas, Demer,  
 Inspicere jubeo, et moneo quid facto usus sit.*

# THE FIRST BOOKE

This dish is salt, this burnt, this not so fine,  
That is well done, doe so againe ; Thus I  
As my best wisdom serves, all things assigne.  
Lastly Sir, I command, they neatly prie,  
On dishes, as a glasse,  
And shew what needfull was.

CHAPTER  
LI  
Of the vanitie  
of Words

Yet did those strict Græcians commend the order and disposition, which Paulus Æmilius observed in the banquet he made them at his returne from Macedon: But here I speake not of the effects, but of the words. I know not whether they worke that in others, which they doe in mee. But when I heare our Architects mouth-out those big, and ratling words of Pilasters, Architraves, Cornixes, Frontispices, Corinthian, and Dorike works, and such like fustian-terms of theirs, I cannot let my wandering imagination from a sodaine apprehension of Apollidonius his pallace, and I find by effect, that they are the seely, and decayed peeces of my Kitchin-doore. Doe but heare one pronounce Metonymia, Metaphore, Allegory, Etimologie, and other such trash-names of Grammer, would you not thinke, they meant some forme of a rare and strange language; They are titles and words that concerne your chamber-maids tittle-tattle. It is a fopperie and cheating tricke, cousin-Germane unto this, to call the offices of our estate by the proud titles of the ancient Romans, though they have no resemblance at all of charge, and lesse of authoritie and power. And this likewise, which in mine opinion will one day remaine as a reproch unto our age, unworthily, and undeservedly to bestow on whom we list, the most glorious Surnames and loftiest titles, wherewith antiquitie in many long-continued ages honoured but one or two persons. Plato hath by such an universall consent borne-away the surname of Divine, that no man did ever attempt to envie him for it. And the Italians, which vaunt (and indeed with some reason) to have generally more lively, and farre reaching wits, and their discourse more sound and sinnowy, than other nations of their times, have lately therewith embellished Peter Aretine; in whom except it be an high-raised, proudly-pufft, mind-moving, and heart-danting manner of speech, yet in good sooth more than ordinarie, wittie and ingenious; But so

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER new fangled, so extravagant, so fantastically, so deep-laboured;  
LI and to conclud, besides the eloquence, which be it as it may  
Of the vanitie be, I cannot perceiue any thing in it, beyond or exceeding  
of Words that of many other writers of his age, much lesse that it  
in any sort approacheth that ancient diuinitie. And  
the surname Great, we attribute and fasten the  
same on Princes, that have nothing in them  
exceeding popular greatnesse.

## THE FIFTY-SECOND CHAPTER

Of the parcimonie of our Forefathers.



ATTILIUS REGULUS, Generall of the  
Romans armie in Affrike, in the midst of  
his glorie and victorie against the Cartha-  
ginians, writ unto the common-wealth,  
that a hyne or plough-boy, whom he had  
left alone to oversee and husband his  
land (which in all was but seven acres of  
ground) was run away from his charge,  
and had stolne from him all his implements and tools,  
belonging to his husbandrie, craving leave to be discharged,  
and that he might come home to looke to his businesse, for  
feare his wife and children should thereby be endamaged:  
the Senate tooke order for him, and appointed another man  
to looke to his land and businesse, and made that good  
unto him, which the other had stolne from him, and  
appointed his wife and children to be maintained at the  
common-wealths charge. Cato the elder returning Consul  
from Spaine, sold his horse of service, to save the monie he  
should have spent for his transport by sea into Italy: And  
being chiefe governor in Sardinia, went all his visitations a  
foot, having no other traine, but one officer of the common-  
welth, who carried his gowne, and a vessell to do sacrifice in,  
and for the most part carried his male himselfe. He boasted  
that he never woare gowne, that cost him more than ten  
crowns, nor sent more than one shilling sterling to the  
market for one whole daies provision, and had no Countrie

# THE FIRST BOOKE

house rough-cast or painted over. Scipio Æmilianus, after he had triumphed twice, and twice been Consull, went on a solemne Legation, accompanied and attended on only with seven servants. It is reported that Homer had never any more than one servant, Plato three, and Zeno chiefe of the Stoikes sect, none at all. Tiberius Gracchus, being then one of the principal men amongst the Romanes, and sent in commission about weightie matters of the common-wealth, was allotted but six-pence halfe-penie a day for his charges.

LII  
Of the parcimonie of our Forefathers

## THE FIFTY-THIRD CHAPTER

Of a saying of Cæsar.



IF we shall sometimes amuse our selves and consider our estate, and the time we spend in controling others, and to know the things that are without us; would we but emploie the same in sounding our selves throughly, we should easily perceive how all this our contexture is built of weake and decaying peeces. Is it not an especiall testimonie of imperfection, that we cannot settle our contentment on any one thing, and that even of our owne desire and imagination, it is beyond our power to chuse what we stand in need of? Whereof the disputation that hath ever beene amongst Philosophers beareth sufficient witnes, to finde out the chiefe felicitie or *summum bonum* of man, and which yet doth, and shall eternally last without resolution or agreement.

—*dum abest quod avemus, id exuperare videtur  
Cætera, post aliud cùm contigit illud avemus,  
Et sitis æqua tenet.*

LUCR. iii. 25.

While that is absent which we wish, the rest  
That seemes to passe, when ought else is address,  
That we desire, with equall thirst opprest.

Whatsoever it be that falleth into our knowledge and jovissance, we finde, it doth not satisfie us, and we still follow



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER LIII  
Of a saying  
of Cæsar

and gape after future, uncertaine, and unknowne things, because the present and knowne please us not, and doe not satisfie us. Not (as I thinke) because they have not sufficiently wherewith to satiate and please us, but the reason is, that we apprehend and seize on them with an unruly, disordered, and diseased taste and hold-fast.

LUCR. ix.

*Nam cùm vidit hic ad usum quæ flagitat usus,  
Omnia jam fermè mortalibus esse parata,  
Divitiis homines et honore et laude potentes  
Affluere, atque bonâ natorum excellere famâ,  
Nec minus esse domi, cuiquam tamen anxia corda,  
Atque animum infestis cogi servire querelis:  
Intellexit ibi vitium vas facere ipsum,  
Omniaque illius vitio corrumpier intus  
Quæ collata foris et commoda quæ que venirent.*

For when the wiseman saw, that all almost,  
That use requires, for men prepared was,  
That men enriches, honors, praises boast,  
In good report of children others passe,  
Yet none at home did beare lesse pensive heart,  
But that the minde was forst to serve complaint,  
He knew, that fault the vessell did empart,  
That all was marr'd within by vessels taint,  
What ever good was wrought by any art.

Our appetite is irresolute, and uncertaine; it can neither hold nor enjoy any thing handsomly and after a good fashion. Man supposing it is the vice and fault of things he possesseth, feedeth and filleth himselfe with other things, which he neither knoweth, nor hath understanding of, whereto he applyeth both his desires and hopes, and taketh them as an honour and reverence to himselfe; as saith Cæsar, *Communî fit vitio naturæ, ut invisîs, latitantibus atque incognitis rebus magis confidamus, vehementiusque exterreamur.* 'It

'hapneth by the common fault of nature, that both wee  
'are more confident, and more terrified by things  
'unseene, things hidden, and unknowne.'

CÆS. *Bel. Civ.*  
ii.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

## THE FIFTY-FOURTH CHAPTER

Of vaine Subtilties, or subtile Devices.



HERE are certaine frivolous and vaine inventions, or as some call them, subtilties of wit, by meanes of which, some men doe often endeavour to get credit and reputation : as divers Poets, that frame whole volumes with verses beginning with one letter : we see Egges, Wings, Hatchets, Crosses, Globes, Columnes, and divers other such like figures anciently fashioned by the Græcians, with the measure and proportion of their verses, spreading, lengthning, and shortning them, in such sort as they justly represent such and such a figure. Such was the science and profession of him, who long time busied himselfe, to number how many severall waies the letters of the Alphabet might be ranged, and found out that incredible number mentioned by Plutarke. I allow of his opinion, who having one brought before him, that was taught with such industrie, and so curiously to cast a graine of Millet with his hand, that without ever missing, he would every time make it goe through a needles-eye ; and being entreated to bestow some thing upon him, (as a reward for so rare a skill,) verie pleasantly and worthily, commanded that this cunning workman should have two or three peckes of Millet delivered him, to the end his rare art and wittie labour might not remaine without daily exercise. It is a wonderfull testimonie of our judgements imbecilitie, that it should commend and allow of things, either for their rarenesse or noveltie, or for their difficultie, though neither goodnesse or profit be joyned unto them. We come but now from my house, where we have a while recreated our selves, with devising who could find out most things, that held by both extreme ends ; As for example, Sir, is in our tongue a title only given to the most eminent person of our state, which is the King, and yet is commonly given to some of the vulgar sort, as unto Merchants and Pedlers, and nothing concerneth those

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER of the middle sort, and that are betweene both. Women of  
LIV chiefest calling and qualitie are called Dames, the meane sort  
Of vaine Sub- Damoisels, and those of the basest ranke, are also entitled  
tilties, or sub- Dames. The clothes of estate, which we see set over tables  
till Devices and chaires, are only allowed in Princes houses, yet we see  
them used in Tavernes. Democritus was wont to say, 'That  
' Gods and beasts, had quicker senses and sharper wits than  
' men, who are of the middle ranke.' The Romanes used to  
weare one selfe same garment on mourning and on festivall  
daies. It is most certaine, that both an extreme feare, and  
an exceeding heat of courage, doe equally trouble and dis-  
temper the belly. The nick-name of Tremblant, wherewith  
Zanchio the twelfth King of Navarre was surnamed, teacheth,  
that boldnesse, aswel as feare, engender a startling and  
shaking of the limbs. Those which armed either him, or  
any other of like nature, whose skin would quiver, assaied  
to re-assure him, by diminishing the danger wherein he was  
like to fall; you have no perfect knowledge of me (said he,)  
for if my flesh knew how far my courage will ere-long carrie  
it, it would presently fall into a flat swoone. That chilnesse,  
or as I may terme it, faintnesse, which we feele after the  
exercises of Venus, the same doth also proceed of an over  
vehement appetite and disordered heat. Excessive heat  
and extreme cold doe both boile and rost. Aristotle saith,  
' That leaden vessels doe as well melt and consume away by  
' an excessive cold and rigor of winter, as by a vehement  
' heat.' Both desire and satietie fill the seats with sorrow,  
both above and under voluptuousnesse. Folly and wisdome  
meet in one point of feeling and resolution, about the  
suffering of humane accidents. The wiser sort doth gour-  
mondise and command evill, and others know it not. The  
latter, (as a man would say) short of accidents, the other,  
beyond. Who after they have well weighed and considered  
their qualities, and duly measured, and rightly judged what  
they are, over-leap them by the power of a vigorous courage.  
They disdain and tread them under foot, as having a  
strong and solide mind, against which, if fortunes parts  
chance to light, they must of necessitie be blunted and  
abated, meeting with so resisting a body, as they cannot  
pierce, or make any impression therein. The ordinarie and

# THE FIRST BOOKE

meane condition of men abideth betweene these two extremities; which are those that perceive and have a feeling of mischiefes, but cannot endure them. Both infancie and decrepitude meet with weaknesse of the braine. Covetise and profusion in a like desire to acquire and hoard up. It may with likelyhood be spoken, that there is a kind of Abecedarie ignorance, preceding science: another doctorall, following science: an ignorance, which science doth beget: even as it spoileth the first. Of simple, lesse-curious, and least-instructed spirits are made good Christians, who simply beleve through reverence and obedience, and are kept in awe of the lawes. In the meane vigor of spirits, and slender capacitie is engendred the error of opinions: They follow the apparance of the first sense; and have some title to interpret it foolishnesse and sottishnesse, that we are confirmed in ancient waies, respecting us, that are nothing therein instructed by study. The best, most-setled, and clearest-seeing spirits, make another sort of well-beleivers, who by long and religious investigation, penetrate a more profound, and find out a more abstruse light in scriptures, and discover the mysterious and divine secrets of our ecclesiasticall policie. And therefore see we some of them, that have reached unto this last ranke, by the second, with wonderfull fruit and confirmation; as unto the furthest bounds of Christian intelligence: and enjoy their victorie with comfort, thanks-giving, reformation of manners, and great modesty. In which ranke, my purpose is not to place these others, who to purge themselves from the suspicion of their forepassed errors, and the better to assure us of them, become extreme, indiscreet, and unjust in the conduct of our cause, and tax and taint the same with infinit reproches of violence. The simple peasants are honest men: so are Philosophers, (or as our time nameth them, strong and cleare natures) enriched with a large instruction of profitable sciences. The mongrell sort of husband-men, who have disdained the first forme of ignorance of letters, and could never reach unto the other (as they that sit betweene two stooles, of which besides so many others I am one) are dangerous, peevish, foolish, and importunate, and they which trouble the world most. Therefore doe I (as much as lieth in me)

CHAPTER  
LIV  
Of vaine Sub-  
tilties, or sub-  
till Devices



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
LIV  
Of vaine Sub-  
tilties, or sub-  
till Devices

withdraw my selfe into the first and naturall seat, whence I never assaied to depart. Popular and meerely naturall Poesie hath certaine graces, and in-bred livelinesse, whereby it concurreth and compareth it selfe unto the principall beautie of perfect and artificiall Poesie, as may plainly be seene in the Villannelles, homely gigs, and countrie songs of Gasconie, which are brought unto us from Nations that have no knowledge at all, either of any learning, or so much as of writing. Meane and indifferent Poesie, and that consisteth betweene both, is scorned, and contemned, and passeth without honour or esteeme. But forasmuch as since the passage hath beene opened unto the spirit, I have found (as it commonly hapneth) that we had apprehended that which is neither so nor so for a difficult exercise, and of a rare subject; And that since our invention hath beene set on fire, it discovereth an infinit number of like examples; I will onely adde this one: That if these Essayes were worthy to be judged of, it might in mine opinion happen, that they would not greatly please the common and vulgar spirits, and as little the singular and excellent. The first will understand but little of them, the latter over much; they might perhaps live and rub out in the middle region.

## THE FIFTY-FIFTH CHAPTER

### Of Smels and Odors.



It is reported of some, namely of Alexander, that their sweat, through some rare and extraordinary complexion, yeilded a sweet smelling savour; whereof Plutarke and others seeke to finde out the cause. But the common sort of bodies are cleane contrarie, and the best qualitie they have, is to be cleare of any smell at all. The sweetness of the purest breaths hath nothing more perfect in them, than to bee without savour, that may offend us: as are those of healthy sound children. And therefore saith Plautus:

# THE FIRST BOOKE

*Mulier tum benè, olet, ubi nihil olet.*  
Then smel's a woman purely well,  
When she of nothing else doth smell.

PLAU. *Mostel.* CHAPTER  
act. i. sc. 3. LV  
Of Smels and  
Odors

The most exquisit and sweetest savour of a woman, it is to smell of nothing; and sweet, well-smelling, strange savours, may rightly be held suspicious in such as use them; and a man may lawfully thinke, that who useth them, doth it to cover some naturall defect: whence proceed these ancient Poeticall sayings. 'To smell sweet, is to stinke.'

*Rides nos Coracine nil olentes,  
Malo quam benè olere, nil olere,*

MART. vi. *Epig.*  
lv. 4.

You laugh at us that we of nothing savour,  
Rather smell so, than sweeter (by your favour).

And else where.

*Posthume non benè olet, qui benè semper olet.*  
Good sir, he smels not ever sweet,  
Who smels still sweeter than is meet.

IB. ii. *Epig.*  
xii. 4.

Yet love I greatly to be entertained with sweet smels, and hate exceedingly all manner of sowre and ill savours, which I shall sooner smell, than any other.

—*Namque sagacius unus odoror,  
Polypus, an gravis hirsutis cubet hircus in alis,  
Quàm canis ucer ubi lateat sus.*

HOR. *Epod.*  
xii. 4.

Sooner smell I, whether a cancred nose,  
Or ranke gote-smell in hairie arme-pits lie,  
Than sharpest hounds, where rowting bores repose.

The simplest and meerey-naturall smels are most pleasing unto me; which care ought chiefly to concerne women. In the verie heart of Barbarie, the Scithian women, after they had washed themselves, did sprinkle, dawbe, and powder all their bodies and faces over, with a certaine odoriferous drug, that groweth in their Countrie: which dust and dawbing being taken away, when they come neere men, or their husbands, they remaine verie cleane, and with a verie sweet-savouring perfume. What odor soever it be, it is strange to see, what hold it will take on me, and how apt my skin is to receive it. He that complaineth against nature, that she hath not created man with a fit instrument, to carrie sweet

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
LV  
f Smels and  
Odors

smels fast-tied to his nose, is much to blame: for, they carrie themselves. As for me in particular, my mostachoes, which are verie thicke, serve me for that purpose. Let me but approach my gloves or my hand-kercher to them, their smell will sticke upon them a whole day. They manifest the place I come from. The close-smacking, sweetnesse-moving, love-alluring, and greedy-smirking kisses of youth, were heretofore wont to sticke on them many houres after; yet am I little subject to those popular diseases, that are taken by conversation, and bred by the contagion of the ayre: And I have escaped those of my time, of which there hath beene many and severall kinds, both in the Townes about me, and in our Armie. We read of Socrates, that during the time of many plagues and relapses of the pestilence, which so often infested the Citie of Athens, he never forsooke or went out of the Towne: yet was he the only man, that was never infected, or that felt any sicknesse. Physitians might (in mine opinion) draw more use and good from odours, than they doe. For, my selfe have often perceived, that according unto their strength and qualitie, they change and alter, and move my spirits, and worke strange effects in me: which makes me approve the common saying, that the invention of incense and perfumes in Churches, so ancient and so far-dispersed throughout all nations and religions, had an especiall regard to rejoyce, to comfort, to quicken, to rowze, and to purifie our senses, that so we might be the apter and readier unto contemplation. And the better to judge of it, I would I had my part of the skill, which some Cookes have, who can so curiously season and temper strange odors with the savour and relish of their meats. As it was especially observed in the service of the King of Tunes, who in our dayes landed at Naples, to meet and enter-parly with the Emperour Charles the fifth. His viands were so exquisitely farced, and so sumptuously seasoned with sweet odoriferous drugs, and aromaticall spices, that it was found upon his booke of accompt, the dressing of one peacocke, and two fesants amounted to one hundred duckets; which was their ordinarie manner of cooking his meats. And when they were carved up, not only the dining chambers, but all the roomes of his pallace, and the streets round about it

# THE FIRST BOOKE

were replenished with an exceeding odoriferous and aromaticall vapour, which continued a long time after. The principall care I take, wheresoever I am lodged, is to avoid, and be far from all manner of filthy, foggy, ill-savouring, and unwholsome aires. These goodly Cities of strangely-seated Venice, and huge-built Paris, by reason of the muddy, sharp, and offending savors, which they yeeld; the one by her fennie and marish situation, the other by her durtie uncleanness, and continuall mire, do greatly alter and diminish the favour which I beare them.

CHAPTER  
LV  
Of Smels and  
Odors

## THE FIFTY-SIXTH CHAPTER

### Of Praiers and Orisons.



I PROPOSE certaine formelesse and irresolute fantasies, as do those schollers, who in schooles publish doubtfull and sophisticall questions to be disputed and canvased: not to establish the truth, but to find it out: which I submit to their judgements, to whom the ordering and directing, not only of my actions and compositions, but also of my thoughts, belongeth. The condemnation, as well as the approbation of them, will be equally acceptable and profitable unto me, deeming it absurd and impious, if any thing be, either ignorantly, or unadvisedly set downe in this rapsody, contrarie unto the sacred resolutions, and repugnant to the holy prescriptions of the Catholike, Apostolike, and Romane Church, wherein I was borne, and out of which I purpose not to die. And therefore alwaies referring my selfe unto their censures that have all power over me, doe I meddle so rashly, to write of all manner of purposes and discourses, as I doe here. I wot not whether I be deceived, but sithence, by an especiall and singular favour of Gods divine bountie, a certaine forme of Praier, hath by the very mouth of God, word by word been prescribed and directed unto us, I have ever thought the use of its,ould be more ordinarie with us, than it is. And might I be believed,



## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
LVI  
Of Praiers  
and Orisons

both rising and going to bed, sitting downe and rising from boord, and going about any particular action or businesse, I would have all good Christians, to say the *Pater noster*, and if no other praier, at least not to omit that. The Church may extend, amplifie, and diversifie praiers according to the need of our instruction: For, I know it is alwaies the same substance, and the same thing. But that one should ever have this privilege, that all manner of people, should at all times, and upon every occasion have it in their mouth: For, it is most certaine, that only it containeth whatsoever we want, and is most fit, and effectuall in all events. It is the onely praier I use in every place, at all times, and upon every accident; and in stead of changing, I use often repetition of it: whence it commeth to passe, that I remember none so well as that one. I was even now considering, whence this generall errour commeth, that in all our desseignes and enterprises, of what nature soever, we immediatly have recourse unto God, and in every necessitie, we call upon his holy name: And at what time soever we stand in need of any help, and that our weaknesse wanteth assistance, we only invoke him, without considering whether the occasion be just or unjust; and what estate or action we be in, or goe about, be it never so vicious or unlawfull, we call upon his name and power. Indeed, he is our only protector, and of power to affoord us all manner of help and comfort; but although he vouchsafe to honour us with this joy-bringing fatherly adoption, yet is he as just as he is good; and as good and just, as he is mightie: But oftner useth his justice than his might, and favoureth us according to the reason of the same, and not according to our requests. Plato in his lawes maketh three forts of injurious beliefe in the Gods: First, that there is none at all; Secondly, that they meddle not with our affaires; Thirdly, that they never refuse any thing unto our vowes, offerings, and sacrifices. The first errour, according to his opinion, did never continue immutable in man, even from his first infancie unto his latter age. The two succeeding may admit some constancie. His justice and power are inseparable. It is but in vaine to implore his power in a bad cause. Man must have an unpolluted soule when he

# THE FIRST BOOKE

praieth (at least in that moment he addresseth himselfe to pray) and absolutely free from all vicious passions; otherwise we our selves present him the rods to scourge us withall. In lieu of redressing our fault, we redouble the same, by presenting him with an affection fraught with irreverence, sinne, and hatred, to whom only we should sue for grace and forgivenessse. Loe here, why I doe not willingly commend those Pharisaicall humours, whom I so often behold, and more than ordinarie, to pray unto God, except their actions immediately preceding or succeeding their praiers witnesse some shew of reformation or hope of amendment.

CHAPTER  
LVI  
Of Praiers  
and Orisons

—*Si nocturnus adulter  
Tempora sanctonico velas adoperta cucullo.*

IUVEN. Sat.  
viii. 144.

If in a cape-cloake-hood befrenchifide  
Thou a night-whore-munger thy head dost hide.

And the state of a man that commixeth devotion unto an execrable life, seemeth in some sort to be more condemnable, than that of one, that is conformable unto himselfe, and every way dissolute. Therefore doth our Church continually refuse, the favour of her enterance and societie, unto customes and manners, wilfully-obstinate on some egregious villanie. We only pray by custome and use, and for fashion sake, or to say better, we but reade and pronounce our prayers: To conclude, it is nothing but a shew of formalitic, and a formall shew. And it greeveth me to see many men, who at grace before and after meat, will with great shew of devotion, crosse themselves three or foure times, (and it vexeth me so much the more, when I call to mind, that it is a signe I greatly reverence, and have in continual use, yea, if I be but gaping) and there whilst, shall you see them bestow all other houres of the day in all maner of hatred, malice, covetousnesse, and injustice. Many houres spend they about vice, but one to God, and that as it were by way of recompence and composition. It is wonderous to see, so far different and divers actions, continue with so even a tenor, that no interruption or alteration at all can be perceived, either about their confines, or passage from one unto another. What prodigious conscience can be at any harts-ease, fostering, and feeding with so mutuall, quiet, and agreeing society

## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
LVI  
Of Praiers  
and Orisons

in one selfe same mansion, both crime and judge? A man whose Paillardize and luxurie, doth uncessantly sway and rule the head, and who judgeth the same abhominable and most hatefull in the sight of God; what saith he unto his all-seeing Majesty, when he openeth his lips, either of mouth or hart, to speake to him of it? He reclaimeth himselfe, but falleth sodainly againe. 'If the object of his divine justice, and his presence should strike,' (as he saith) 'and chastise his soule, how short-soever the penitence were feare it self would so often cast his thought on it, that he would presently perceiue himselfe master of those vices, which are habituated, inbred, settled, and enffeshed in him.' But what of those, which ground a whole life upon the fruit and benefit of that sinne, they know to be mortall? How many trades, professions, occupations, and vocations, have we daily and continually used, frequented, and allowed amongst us, whose essence is vicious and most pernicious? And he that would needs confesse himselfe unto me, and of his owne accord told me, that for feare of losing his credit, and to keepe the honour of his offices; he had for a whole age, made shew and profession, and acted the effects of a religion, which in his owne selfe-accusing conscience, he judged damnable, and cleane contrarie unto that he had in his hart: How could he admit and foster so contradictorie and impious a discourse in his hart? With what language entertaine they divine justice concerning this subject? Their repentance, consisting in visible amends, and manageable reparation; they lose both towards God and us, the meanes to alleage the same. Are they so malapart and fond-hardy as to crave pardon without satisfaction, and sans repentance? I thinke it goeth with the first, as with these last: But obstinacie is not herein so easie to be vanquished. This so suddaine contrarietie, and violent volubilitie of opinion, which they faine unto us, seemeth to me a miracle. They present us with the state of an indigestible agonie. How fantastickall seemed their imagination unto me, who these latter yeares had taken up a fashion, to checke and reprove all men, that professed the Catholike Religion, in whom shined any extraordinarie brightnesse of spirit, saying, that it was but fained: and to doe him honour, held, that what-

# THE FIRST BOOKE

soever he said in apparance, he could not inwardly chuse but have his beliefe reformed according to their byase. It is a peevish infirmitie, for a man to thinke himselfe so firmly grounded, as to perswade himselfe, that the contrarie may not be believed: And more peevish also, to be perswaded by such a spirit, that preferreth I wot not what disparitie of fortune, before the hopes and threats of eternall life. They may beleieve me: If any thing could have attempted my youth, the ambition of the hazard, and difficultie, which followed this late-moderne enterprize, should have had good part therein. It is not without great reason, in my poore judgement, that the Church forbiddeth the confused, rash and indiscreet use of the sacred and divine songs, which the holy spirit hath indited unto David. God ought not to be commixed in our actions, but with awfull reverence, and an attention full of honour and respect. The word or voice is too divine, having no other use but to exercise our lungs, and to please our eares. It is from the conscience and not from the tongue that it must proceed. It is not consonant unto reason, that a prentise or shop-keeping boy, amidst his idle, vaine, and frivolous conceits, should be suffered to entertaine himselfe, and play therewith. Nor is it seemely, or tolerable, to see the sacred booke of our beliefes-Mysteries, tossed up and downe and plaid withall, in a shop, or a hall, or a kitchin. They have heretofore bene accompted mysteries, but through the abuse of times, they are now held as sports and recreations. So serious, and venerable a study should not, by way of pastime, and tumultuarie be handled. It ought to be a fixed, a purposed, and settled action, to which this preface of our office *sursum corda* should ever be adjoyned; and the very exterior parts of the body, should with such a countenance, be referred unto it, that to all mens eyes it may witnesse a particular attention and duteous respect. It is not a study fitting all men, but only such as have vowed themselves unto it, and whom God hath, of his infinit mercie, called thereto. The wicked, the ungodly, and the ignorant are thereby empaired. It is no historie to be fabulously reported, but a historie to be dutifully revered, awfully feared, and religiously adored. Are they not pleasantly conceited, who because they have reduced the same

CHAPTER  
LVI  
Of Praiers  
and Orisons



## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
LVI  
Of Praiers  
and Orisons

into the vulgar tongues, and that all men may understand it, perswade themselves, that the people shall the better conceive and digest the same? Consisteth it but in the words, that they understand not all they find written? Shall I say more? By approaching thus little unto it, they goe backe from it. Meere ignorance, and wholly relying on others, was verily more profitable and wiser, than is this verball, and vaine knowledge, the nurse of presumption, and sourse of temeritie. Moreover, I am of opinion, that the uncontrouled libertie, that all men have to wrest, dissipate, and wyre-draw a word so religious, and important, to so many severall idiomes, hath much more danger than profit following it. The Jewes, the Mahometans, and well-nigh all other nations, are wedded unto, and reverence the language, wherein their mysteries and religion had originally beene conceived; and any change or translation hath not without apparence of reason beene directly forbidden. Know we whether there be Judges enow in Basque and in Brittanie to establish this translation made in their tongue? The universall Church hath no more difficult and solemne judgement to make. Both in speaking and preaching the interpretation is wandring, free, and mutable, and of one parcell; so is it not alike. One of our Græcian Historians doth justly accuse his age, forasmuch as the secrets of Christian religion were dispersed in all publike places, and even amongst the basest artificers; and that every man might, at his pleasure, dispute of it, and at randon speake his mind of the same. And it should be a great shame for us, who by the unspeakable grace of God injoy the pure and sacred mysteries of piety, to suffer the same to be profaned in the mouthes of ignorant and popular people, seeing the very Gentiles interdicted Socrates and Plato, and the wisest, to meddle, enquire or speake of things committed unto the Priestes of Delphos. Saying moreover, ‘That the factions of Princes, touching the subject of Divinitie, are armed, not with zeale, but with anger. That zeale dependeth of divine reason and justice, holding an orderly and moderate course, but that it changeth into hatred and envie, and in stead of corne and grape, it produceth nettles and darnell, if it be directed by humane passion.’ And justly saith

# THE FIRST BOOKE

this other, who counselling the Emperour Theodosius, affirmed 'that disputations did not so much appease and 'lull asleepe the schismes of the Church, as stir up and 'cause heresies.' And therefore it behooved, to avoid all contentions, controversies, and logicall arguings, and wholly and sincerely refer himselfe unto the prescriptions and orders of faith, established by our forefathers. And Andronicus the Emperour, finding by chance in his pallace, certaine principall men very earnestly disputing against Lapodius, about one of our points of great importance, taunted and rated them very bitterly, and threatned if they gave not over, he would cause them to be cast into the river. Children and women doe now adaies governe and sway the oldest and most experienced men concerning Ecclesiasticall Lawes: whereas the first that Plato made, forbiddeth them to enquire after the reason of civill Lawes, and which ought to stand in place of divine ordinances. Allowing aged men to communicate the same amongst themselves, and with the Magistrate, adding more-over, alwaies provided it be not in the presence of young men, and before profane persons. A notable Bishop hath left written, that in the other end of the world, there is an Iland called of our predecessours Dioscorida, very commodious, and fertile of all sorts of fruits and trees, and of a pure and wholesome ayre; whose people are Christians, and have Churches and Altars; adorned with nothing else but crosses, without other images; great observers of fastings and holy daies; exact payers of their priests tithes; and so chaste, that none of them may lawfully all his life long know any more than one wife. And in all other matters so well pleased with their fortune, that being seated in the midst of the sea, they have and know no use of ships: and so simple, that of their religion, which they so diligently and awfully observe, they know not, nor understand so much as one only word. A thing incredible, to him that knew not how the Pagans, who are so devout and zealous idolaters, know nothing of their Gods, but only their bare names and statues. The ancient beginning of Menalippe, a tragedie of Euripides, importeth thus.

CHAPTER  
LVI  
Of Praiers  
and Orisons

*O Iupiter, car de toy rien sinon,  
Je ne cognois seulement que le nom.*

EURIP.

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

## CHAPTER

### LVI

#### Of Praiers and Orisons

O Iupiter, for unto me,  
Only the name is knowne of thee.

I have also in my time heard certaine writings complained of, forsomuch as they are meerly humane and Philosophicall, without meddling with divinitie. He that should say to the contrarie (which a man might doe with reason) that heavenly doctrine, as a Queene and governesse doth better keepe her ranke apart; that she ought to be chiefe ruler and principall head evere where, and not suffragant and subsidiarie. And that peradventure examples in Grammar, Rethorike, and Logike, might more fitly and sortably be taken from elsewhere, than from so sacred and holy a subject, as also the arguments of theatres, plots of plaies, and grounds of publike spectacles. That mysteriously divine reasons are more venerably and reverently considered alone, and in their native stile, than joyned and compared to humane discourse. That this fault is oftner scene, which is, that Divines write too humanely, than this other, that humanists write not Theologically enough. 'Philosophy,' saith S. Chrysostome, 'is long since banished from sacred schools, as an unprofitable servant, and deemed unworthy to behold, but in passing by the entrie, or the vestrie of the sacred treasures of heavenly doctrine.' That the formes of humane speech, are more base, and ought by no meanes to make any use of the dignitie, majesty and preheminance of divine speech. As for my part, I give it leave to say, *Verbis indisciplinatis*, 'with undisciplined words,' Fortune, destinie, chance, accident, fate, good lucke, ill lucke, the Gods, and other phrases, as best it pleaseth. I propose humane fantasies and mine owne, simply as humane conceits, and severally considered; not as setled, concluded, and directed by celestiall ordinance, incapable of any doubt or alteration. A matter of opinion, and not of faith. What I discourse according to my selfe, not what I beleieve according unto God, with a laicall fashion, and not a clerical manner; yet ever most religious. As children propose their essayes, instructable, not instructing. And might not a man also say without apparance, that the institution, which willet, no man shall dare to write of Religion, but sparingly, and reservedly, except such as make expresse profession of it,

# THE FIRST BOOKE

would not want some shew of profit and justice ; and happily to me to be silent. It hath beene told me, that even those which are not of our consent, doe flatly inhibite amongst themselves the use of the sacred name of God in all their vulgar and familiar discourses. They would have no man use it as an interjection, or exclamation, nor to be alleaged as a witnesse, or comparison ; wherein I find they have reason. And howsoever it be, that we call God to our commerce and societie, it should be zealously, seriously, and religiously. There is (as far as I remember) such a like discourse in Xenophon, wherein he declareth, ‘That we should more rarely pray unto God : forasmuch as it is not easie, we should so often settle our minds in so regular, so reformed, and so devout a seat, where indeed it ought to be, to pray aright and effectually’ : otherwise our praiers are, not only vaine and unprofitable, but vicious. ‘Forgive us’ (say we) ‘our offences, as we forgive them that trespass against us.’ What else inferre we by that petition, but that we offer him our soule void of all revenge and free from all rancour ? We neverthelesse invoke God and call on his aid, even in the complot of our grievousest faults, and desire his assistance in all manner of injustice and iniquitie.

CHAPTER  
LVI  
Of Praiers  
and Orisons

*Quæ nisi seductis nequeas committere divis.*

PERS. Sat. ii.  
4.

Which you to Saints not drawne aside,  
Would thinke unfit to be applide.

The covetous man sueth and praieith unto him for the vaine increase and superfluous preservation of his wrong-gotten treasure. The ambitious, he importuneth God for the conduct of his fortune, and that he may have the victorie of all his desseignes. The theefe, the pirate, the murtherer, yea and the traitor, all call upon him, all implore his aid, and all sollicite him, to give them courage in their attempts, constancie in their resolutions, to remove all lets and difficulties, that in any sort may withstand their wicked executions, and impious actions ; or give him thanks, if they have had good successe ; the one if he have met with a good bootie, the other if he returne home rich, the third if no man have seen him kill his enemy, and the last, though he have caused any execrable mischief. The Souldier, if he



# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER but goe to besiege a cottage, to scale a Castle, to rob  
 LVI a Church, to pettard a gate, to force a religious house, or  
 Of Praiers any villanous act, before he attempt it, praieth to God for  
 and Orisons his assistance, though his intents and hopes be full-fraught  
 with crueltie, murther, covetise, luxurie, sacrilege, and all  
 iniquitie.

PERS. Sat. ii.  
 21.

*Hoc ipsum quo tu Iovis aurem impellere tentas,  
 Dic agedum, Staio, proh Iupiter, ô bone, clamet,  
 Iupiter, at sese non clamet Iupiter ipse.*

Go-to then, say the same to some bad fellow,  
 Which thou prepar'st for Gods eares : let him bellow,  
 O God, good God ; so God,  
 On himselfe would not plod.

Margaret Queene of Navarre, maketh mention of a young Prince (whom although she name not expresly, yet his greatnesse hath made him sufficiently knowne) who going about an amorous assignation, and to lie with an Advocates wife of Paris, his way lying alongst a Church, he did never passe by so holy a place, whether it were in going or comming from his lecherie, and cukolding-labour, but would make his praiers unto God, to be his help and furtherance. I would faine have any impartiall man tell me, to what purpose this Prince invoked and called on God for his divine favour, having his mind only bent to sinne, and his thoughts set on luxurie : Yet doth she alleage him for a speciall testimonie of singular devotion. But it is not only by this example, a man might verifie, that women are not very fit to manage or treat matters of Religion and Divinitie. A true and hartie praier, and an unfained religious reconciliation from us unto God, cannot likely fall into a wicked and impure soule, especially when Sathan swaieth the same. He that calleth upon God for his assistance, whilst he is engulphed and wallowing in filthy sinne, doth as the cut-purse, that should call for justice unto his ayd, or those that produce God in wnesse of a lie.

LUCAN. v. 94.

*—tacito mala vota susurro  
 Concipimus.*

With silent whispering we,  
 For ill things suppliants be.

# THE FIRST BOOKE

There are few men, that would dare to publish the secret requests they make to God. CHAPTER LVI

*Haud cuivis promptum est, murmur que humilesque  
susurros*

*Tollere de Templis, et aperto vivere voto.*

From Church low-whispering murmurs to expell,  
'Tis not for all, or with knowne vowes live well.

Of Praiers  
and Orisons

PERS. Sat. ii.  
6.

And that's the reason, why the Pythagorians would have them publike, that all might heare them, that no man should abusively call on God, and require any undecent or unjust thing of him, as that man ;

—*clarè cùm dixit, Apollo,*

*Labra movet metuens audiri: pulchra Laverna*

*Da mihi fallere, da justum sanctumque videri.*

*Noctem peccatis, et fraudibus objice nubem.*

When he alowd hath said, Apollo heare,  
Loth to be heard, Goddesse of theeves, said he,  
Grant me to cousen, and yet just appeare,  
My faults in night, my fraud's in clouds let be.

HOR. i. *Epist.*  
xvi. 59.

The Gods did grievously punish the impious vowes of Oedipus, by granting them unto him. His praier was, that his children might betweene themselves decide in armes the succession of his estate ; he was so miserable, as to be taken at his word. A man should not request that all things follow our will, but that it may follow wisdom. Verily, it seemeth, that we make no other use of our praiers, than of a companie of gibrish phrases : And as those who employ holy and sacred words about witchcraft and magicall effects ; and that we imagine their effect dependeth of the contexture, or sound, or succession of words, or from our countenance. For, our soule, being full-fraught with concupiscence, and all manner of ungodly thoughts, nothing touched with repentance, nor moved with new reconciliation towards God, we headlong present unto him those heedlesse words, which memorie affoordeth our tongue, by which we hope to obtaine an expiation and remission of our offences. There is nothing so easie, so sweet, so comfortable and favourable, as the law of God ; she (of his infinit mercie) calleth us unto him, how faultie and detestable soever we be ; she gently stretcheth forth her armes unto us, and mildly receiveth

# MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

CHAPTER  
LVI  
Of Praiers  
and Orisons

us into her lap, how guiltie, polluted, and sinfull soever we are, and may be in after-times. But in recompence of so boundlesse and unspeakable a favour, she must be thankfully accepted, and cheerfully regarded: and so gracious a pardon must be received with a gratitude of the soule, and at least, in that instant, that we addresse our selves unto her presence; to have our soule grieved for her faults, penitent of her sinnes, hating those passions and affections, that have caused or provoked us to transgresse his lawes, to offend his Majestie, and to breake his commandements. Plato saith, 'That neither the Gods, nor honest men will ' ever accept the offering of a wicked man.'

HOR. iii. Od.  
xxiii. 17.

*Immunis aram si tetigit manus,  
Non sumptuosa blandior hostia  
Mollivit aversos Penates,  
Farre pio et saliente mica.*

If guiltlesse hand the Altar tuch,  
No offering, cost it ne're so much,  
Shall better please our God offended,  
Than corne with crackling-corne-salt blended.

## THE FIFTY-SEVENTH CHAPTER

### Of Age.



CANNOT receive that manner, whereby we establish the continuance of our life. I see that some of the wiser sort doe greatly shorten the same, in respect of the common opinion. What said Cato Iunior, to those who sought to hinder him from killing himselfe? 'Doe I now live the age, wherein ' I may justly be reproved to leave my life ' too soone?' Yet was he but eight and fortie yeares old. He thought that age very ripe, yea, and well advanced, considering how few men come unto it. And such as entertaine themselves with, I wot not what kind of course, which they call naturall, promiseth some few yeares beyond, might do it, had they a privilege that could exempt them from so great a number of accidents, unto which each one

# THE FIRST BOOKE

CHAPTER  
LVII  
Of Age

of us stands subject by a naturall subjection, and which may interrupt the said course, they propose unto themselves. What fondnesse is it, for a man to thinke he shall die, for, and through, a failing and defect of strength, which extreme age draweth with it, and to propose that terme unto our life, seeing it is the rarest kind of all deaths, and least in use? We only call it naturall, as if it were against nature to see a man breake his necke with a fall; to be drowned by shipwracke; to be surprised with a pestilence, or pleurisie, and as if our ordinarie condition did not present these inconveniences unto us all. Let us not flatter our selves with these fond-goodly words; a man may peradventure rather call that naturall, which is generall, common and universall. To die of age, is a rare, singular, and extraordinarie death, and so much lesse naturall than others: It is the last and extremest kind of dying: The further it is from us, so much the lesse is it to be hoped for: Indeed it is the limit, beyond which we shal not passe, and which the law of nature hath prescribed unto us, as that which should not be outgone by any; but it is a rare privilege peculiar unto her selfe, to make us continue unto it. It is an exemption, which through some particular favour she bestoweth on some one man, in the space of two or three ages, discharging him from the crosses, troubles, and difficulties, she hath enterposed betweene both, in this long cariere and pilgrimage. Therefore my opinion is, to consider, that the age unto which we are come, is an age whereto few arive: since men come not unto it by any ordinarie course, it is a signe we are verie forward. And since we have past the accustomed bounds, which is the true measure of our life, we must not hope, that we shall goe much further. Having escaped so many occasions of death, wherein we see the world to fall, we must acknowledge that such an extraordinarie fortune, as that is, which maintaineth us, and is beyond the common use, is not likely to continue long. It is a fault of the verie lawes, to have this false imagination: They allow not a man to be capable and of discretion, to manage and dispose of his owne goods, untill he be five and twentie yeares old, yet shall he hardly preserve the state of his life so long. Augustus abridged five yeares of the ancient Romane Lawes,



## MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYES

### CHAPTER LVII Of Age

and declared, that for any man that should take upon him the charge of judgement, it sufficed to be thirtie yeares old. Servius Tullius dispensed with the Knights, who were seven and fortie yeares of age, from all voluntarie services of warre. Augustus brought them to fortie and five. To send men to their place of sojourning before they be five and fiftie or three score yeares of age, me seemeth, carrieth no great apparance with it. My advice would be, that our vacation, and employment should be extended, as far as might be for the publike commoditie; but I blame some, and condemne most, that we begin not soone enough to employ our selves. The same Augustus had been universall and supreme judge of the world, when he was but nineteene yeares old, and would have another to be thirtie, before he shall bee made a competent Judge of a cottage or farme. As for my part, I thinke our minds are as full growne and perfectly joyned at twentie yeares, as they should be, and promise as much as they can. A mind which at that age hath not given some evident token or earnest of her sufficiencie, shall hardly give it afterward; put her to what triall you list. Natural qualities and vertues, if they have any vigorous or beauteous thing in them, will produce and shew the same within that time, or never. They say in Daulphiné,

French prov.

*Si l'espine nou picque quand nai,  
A peine que picque jamai.*

A thorne, unlesse at first it pricke,  
Will hardly ever pearce to th' quicke.

Of all humane honourable and glorious actions, that ever came unto my knowledge, of what nature soever they be, I am perswaded, I should have a harder taske, to number those, which both in ancient times, and in ours, have beene produced and atchieved before the age of thirtie yeares, than such as were performed after: yea, often in the life of the same men. May not I boldly speak it of those of Hanniball, and Scipio his great adversarie? They lived the better part of their life with the glorie which they had gotten in their youth: And though afterward they were great men, in respect of all others, yet were they but meane in regard of themselves. As for my particular, I am verily

# THE FIRST BOOKE

perswaded, that since that age, both my spirit and my body, have more decreased than encreased, more recoyled than advanced. It may be, that knowledge and experience shall encrease in them, together with life, that bestow their time well : but vivacitie, promptitude, constancie, and other parts much more our owne, more important and more essentiall, they droope, they languish, and they faint.

CHAPTER  
LVII  
Of Age

—*ubi jam validis quassatum est viribus ævi  
Corpus, et obtusis ceciderunt viribus artus,  
Claudicat ingenium, delirat linguaquæ mensque.*

I.UCR. iii. 457.

When once the body by shrewd strength of yeares  
Is shak't, and limmes drawne downe from strength that  
weares,  
Wit halts, both tongue and mind  
Doe daily doat, we find.

It is the body, which sometimes yeeldeth first unto age ; and other times the mind : and I have seene many, that have had their braines weakned before their stomacke or legges. And forasmuch, as it is a disease, little or nothing sensible unto him that endureth it, and maketh no great shew, it is so much the more dangerous. Here I exclaime against our Lawes, not because they leave us so long, and late in working and employment, but that they set us a worke no sooner, and it is so late before we be employed. Me thinkes that considering the weaknesse of our life, and seeing the infinit number of ordinarie rockes, and naturall dangers it is subject unto, we should not so soone as we come into the world, alot so great a share thereof unto unprofitable wantonnesse in youth, il-breeding idlenesse, and slow-learning prentissage.

THE END OF THE FIRST BOOKE



EDINBURGH  
T. & A. CONSTABLE  
Printers to Her Majesty

1892









Urban  
Spokane WA  
Bang St.

PQ                    Montaigne, Michel Eyquem de  
1642                   The essays of Montaigne  
E5F6  
1892  
t.1

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE  
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

---

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

---



